



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

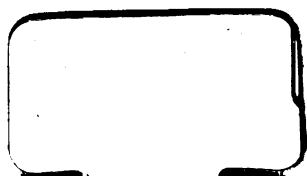
### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



1944

1945



Oxford University  
**ENGLISH FACULTY LIBRARY**  
Manor Road, Oxford OX1 3UQ  
Telephone: (0865) 271050

---

**Opening Hours:**

Full term: Monday to Friday: 9.30 a.m. to 7 p.m.

Saturday 9.30 a.m. to 12.30 p.m.

Vacation: Monday to Friday 9.30 a.m. to 5 p.m.

Saturday closed.

The Library is closed for approx. one week at Christmas and at Easter, and during August.

---

*This book should be returned on or before the latest date below:*

28 JUN 1996

CANCELLED  
28 JUN 1996

CANCELLED  
16 DEC 1999

CANCELLED  
13 DEC 1999

CANCELLED  
2003

3 CANCELLED  
2003

---

*Readers are asked to protect Library books from rain, etc. Any volumes which are lost, defaced with notes, or otherwise damaged, may have to be replaced by the Reader responsible.*



Old English Miscellany.



300006092K

DUBLIN: WILLIAM MCGEE, 18, NASSAU STREET.  
EDINBURGH: T. G. STEVENSON, 22, SOUTH FREDERICK STREET.  
GLASGOW: HUGH HOPKINS, ROYAL BANK PLACE.  
BERLIN: ASHER & CO., UNTER DEN LINDEN, 11.  
NEW YORK: C. SCRIBNER & CO.; LEYPOLDT & HOLT.  
PHILADELPHIA: J. B. LIPPINCOTT & CO.

. An  
**Old English Miscellany**

containing

**A Bestiary, Kentish Sermons, Proverbs of Alfred,  
Religious Poems of the thirteenth century,**

FROM

MANUSCRIPTS IN THE BRITISH MUSEUM, BODLEIAN LIBRARY,  
JESUS COLLEGE LIBRARY, ETC.

EDITED

**With Introduction and Index of Words**

BY THE

**REV. RICHARD MORRIS, LL.D.,**

EDITOR OF HAMPOLE'S PRICKES OF CONSCIENCE; STORY OF GENESIS AND EXODUS; AENEID  
OF INWYT; OLD ENGLISH HOMILIES, ETC. ETC.; MEMBER OF COUNCIL OF THE PHILOLOGICAL  
AND EARLY ENGLISH TEXT SOCIETIES.

LONDON:

PUBLISHED FOR THE EARLY ENGLISH TEXT SOCIETY,  
BY N. TRÜBNER & CO., 60, PATERNOSTER ROW.

MDCCLXXII.





# CONTENTS.

---

|   | PAGE |
|---|------|
| PREFACE ... ..  | vii  |
| OUTLINE OF GRAMMATICAL FORMS IN THE OLD KENTISH SERMONS | xiii |
| A BESTIARY ... ..                                       | 1    |
| OLD KENTISH SERMONS ... ..                              | 26   |
| MISCELLANIES FROM THE JESUS, COTTON, AND OTHER MSS. :   |      |
| I. THE PASSION OF OUR LORD ... ..                       | 37   |
| II. A MORAL ODE ... ..                                  | 58   |
| III. SINNERS BEWARE ... ..                              | 72   |
| IV. THE WOMAN OF SAMARIA ... ..                         | 84   |
| V. FORTUNE ... ..                                       | 86   |
| VI. THE FIVE JOYS OF THE VIRGIN ... ..                  | 87   |
| VII. HWON HOLY CHIRECHE IS VNDER UOTE ... ..            | 89   |
| VIII. ANTHEM OF ST THOMAS THE MARTYR ... ..             | 90   |
| IX. ON SERVING CHRIST ... ..                            | 90   |
| X. A LUUE RON ... ..                                    | 93   |
| XI. THE ANNUNCIATION OF THE VIRGIN MARY ... ..          | 100  |
| XII. FRAGMENT OF A SONG ... ..                          | 100  |
| XIII. SIGNS OF DEATH ... ..                             | 101  |
| XIV. THREE SORROWFUL TIDINGS ... ..                     | 101  |
| XV. THE PROVERBS OF ALFRED.—TEXT I. ... ..              | 102  |
| "       "       "       "       "       TEXT II. ... .. | 103  |
| XVI. AN ORISON OF OUR LORD ... ..                       | 139  |
| XVII. THE DUTY OF CHRISTIANS ... ..                     | 141  |
| XVIII. THE SHIRES AND HUNDREDS OF ENGLAND ... ..        | 145  |

|   | PAGE |
|---|------|
| XIX. THE XI PAINS OF HELL ... ..                      | 147  |
| XX. LONG LIFE.—TEXT I. ... ..                         | 156  |
| ” ” ” TEXT II. ... ..                                 | 157  |
| XXI. AN ORISON OF OUR LADY.—TEXT I. ... ..            | 158  |
| ” ” ” ” ” TEXT II. ... ..                             | 159  |
| XXII. DOOMSDAY.—TEXT I. ... ..                        | 162  |
| ” ” TEXT II. ... ..                                   | 163  |
| XXIII. DEATH.—TEXT I. ... ..                          | 168  |
| ” ” TEXT II. ... ..                                   | 169  |
| XXIV. TEN ABUSES.—TEXT I. ... ..                      | 184  |
| ” ” ” TEXT II. ... ..                                 | 185  |
| XXV. A LUTEL SOTH SERMUN.—TEXT I. ... ..              | 186  |
| ” ” ” ” TEXT II. ... ..                               | 187  |
| XXVI. WILL AND WIT ... ..                             | 192  |
| XXVII. A PRAYER TO OUR LADY ... ..                    | 192  |
| XXVIII. A SONG TO THE VIRGIN ... ..                   | 194  |
| XXIX. A PRAYER TO THE VIRGIN ... ..                   | 195  |
| XXX. A SONG ON THE PASSION ... ..                     | 197  |
| XXXI. THE TEN COMMANDMENTS ... ..                     | 200  |
| APPENDIX I.: LIBER FISIIOLOGUS ... ..                 | 201  |
| APPENDIX II.: THE XI PAINS OF HELL ... ..             | 210  |
| APPENDIX III.: THE VISIONS OF SEYNT POUL, ETC. ... .. | 223  |
| GLOSSARIAL INDEX ... ..                               | 233  |

## P R E F A C E.

---

THE title-page indicates the miscellaneous and composite character of the present volume. All the pieces here grouped together possess, however, one characteristic feature, that they are of a religious or didactic nature.

A *BESTIARY* (p. 1—25) comes from Arundel MS. 292, in the British Museum, of about the middle of the thirteenth century. It is translated from the Latin *Physiologus* of Theobaldus.<sup>1</sup> Appendix I. contains the original text from which our Early English version was made.

This *BESTIARY* has been thrice printed; twice by Mr Thos. Wright, (1) in *Altdeutsche Blätter*, vol. ii, Leipzig, 1837, (2) in *Reliquiæ Antiquæ*, and by Mätzner in his *Early English Specimens* (Alt-englische Sprachproben).

The dialectic peculiarities of this treatise have already been discussed in my preface to *The Story of Genesis and Exodus*, to which I must refer the reader for further information.

Scraps from the *Bestiary* with its curious moralizations are frequently to be met with in our old English authors, and even in Elizabethan writers.

It will not be deemed, we hope, out of place to notice here, that Chaucer quotes a line of our *Bestiary*, probably from the Latin

<sup>1</sup> See Preface to *Popular Treatises on Science*, edited for the Historical Society of Science, by Thos. Wright, M.A., F.S.A., London, 1841.

version (*mirie ge singeð ðis mere*, p. 18), in his *Nonne Prestes Tale*,

————— and Chaunteclere so free  
Sang merier than the mermayde in the see;  
For Physiologus seith sikerly,  
How that thay singen wel and merily.

Without reference to a *Bestiary*, what meaning has the following passage in Lyly, where he compares flatterers to "Panthers which haue a *sweete smel*, but a deuouring minde"? (*Euphues*, ed. Arber, p. 149). A reference to p. 24 of the present volume makes the matter very clear and intelligible.<sup>1</sup>

In another passage in Lyly (p. 341) we are told that the *Wood Culver* "plucketh of hir fethers in winter to keepe others from colde"; and our *Bestiary* tells us, among other things (p. 25), that this fond dove acts as a mother to other birds.<sup>2</sup>

OLD KENTISH SERMONS (p. 26—36) are only a fragment, alas! They were brought to my notice through the kindness of Mons. Paul Meyer, who found them along with their originals the French Sermons of Maurice de Sully<sup>3</sup> in a MS. in the Bodleian Library, Laud. 471.

The Sermons, though only consisting of eleven pages, are of great importance for an accurate knowledge of our old English dialects. In estimating the changes which have taken place in our language at different periods, they show how necessary it is to take into consideration not only the *date* of composition, but also the *locality* of our early documents. It has already been pointed out<sup>4</sup> that the Kentish of the middle of the fourteenth century has preserved more archaic forms than the English of Orm or of Laȝamon. As might be expected, these Sermons of the thirteenth century contain forms older than those found in the Sermons of the twelfth century, edited by me in *Old English Homilies*, 1st Series (except pp. 217—245).

<sup>1</sup> See description of the Panther in *Poems from the Exeter MS.*, ed. Thorpe.

<sup>2</sup> *Duue ne harmeð none fugele ne mid bile ne mid fote. and fedeð briddes þeð hie ne ben noht hire* (*O. E. Homilies*, 2nd Series, p. 49).

<sup>3</sup> See *Archives des Missions Scientifiques et Littéraires*, 2nd Series, vol. v, p. 162.

<sup>4</sup> Preface to *Ayenbite of Inwyȝt*.

*Englische  
Anglic, I,  
410.*

The *vocabulary*, however, is sometimes remarkably modern, and such phrases as *This is ei GLORIUS MIRACLE*; *this is ei SIGNEFIANCE of the MIRACLE*, have a very quaint appearance on account of their composite character; but at the same time they clearly indicate the influence that Norman French exercised upon the *vocabulary* of the Southern dialect toward the end of the thirteenth century. They also show that Chaucer was not the sinner he has been represented to be, and that he did not inundate the language with French words that had not been in common use previous to his time.

At p. xiv the reader will find a summary of the grammatical peculiarities of these "SERMONS."

From the Jesus College MS., Oxford, we have printed the pieces that constitute the bulk of the present volume (p. 37—191). Among these we may notice more particularly, (1) Another version of "A MORAL ODE," copies of which, with translation, the reader will find in *O. E. Homilies*, 1st Series (pp. 158—183; 288—295). An additional text with East-Midland peculiarities will be given at the end of my Second Series of *O. E. Homilies*, from a MS. in Trinity College Library.

(2) The PROVERBS OF ALFRED<sup>1</sup> contain some plain and sensible maxims for the guidance of our ancestors' every-day life.<sup>2</sup> The source of many of our common proverbs will be recognized among these early illustrations of Proverbial Philosophy. The second text is printed from Wright<sup>3</sup> and Kemble;<sup>4</sup> copies (see p. 103) which they seem to have transcribed independently<sup>5</sup> from a MS. formerly in Trinity College Library, Cambridge. To speak plainly, this valuable manuscript has been stolen from the Library by some one who has abused the generosity of the authorities of Trinity Col- } *the ms. now found autumn 1896.*

<sup>1</sup> See Kemble's *Dialogue of Salomon and Saturnus* (Ælfric Society).

<sup>2</sup> See instructions for keeping one's own secrets, p. 116; for choosing a wife, p. 118; on the choice of a friend, pp. 123, 124, 131, 132, 136-8; how to deal with a fool, pp. 127, 128; how to train up a child, pp. 128, 129.

<sup>3</sup> *Reliquiæ Antiquæ*, i. 170.

<sup>4</sup> *The Dialogue of Salomon and Saturnus*, p. 226—248.

<sup>5</sup> It is somewhat strange that Kemble and Wright should have both, in very many cases, mistaken a short stumpy *g* for an *s*. In one instance where Kemble reads *gise*, Wright has *guge* for *gunge*, and that this is the correct reading is proved by text I., which has *yong* (see p. 111, proverb 7, l. 2). } *Archiv 88, 271*

lege, who are ever willing and ready to afford every facility to those desirous of consulting their valuable stores of antiquity.

In presenting the two texts in a parallel form, some disarrangement of the Proverbs in text II. was unavoidable, but the order in which they occur in the MS. is indicated by the numbering of the PROVERBS.

(3) THE XI PAINS OF HELL (p. 147) may be compared with two more metrical versions to be found in the Appendix. The reader curious in these matters will like to be reminded of a prose version in *Old English Homilies*, 1st Series (pt. I), and of the poem *De Pœnis* in the Preface to Hampole's *Pricke of Conscience*.

(4) The RELIGIOUS SONGS (p. 156—191) contain later versions of some of the pieces in Cotton MS. Calig. A ix, printed by Mr Thos. Wright with his edition of the OWL AND NIGHTINGALE for the Percy Society.

The Jesus MS., as well as the Cotton MS., contains a copy of the *Owl and Nightingale*, and it is my intention to reprint for the Society both texts in parallel columns with a Glossary. In the preface to this edition I hope to discuss at large the grammatical peculiarities of the various poems in the Jesus manuscripts. The Cotton MS. is of the first half of the thirteenth century, while the Jesus MS. belongs to the latter part of the same period. From internal evidence it can be shown that the Jesus MS. is not copied from the London manuscript.<sup>1</sup>

The name of the author of the interesting poems contained in these manuscripts is wholly unknown. As Nicolas Guldforde is mentioned in the *Owl and Nightingale*, some have ascribed the poem to him, and this would, if correct, certainly give him a claim to the other short compositions in the Cotton and Jesus manuscripts. On p. 155 of the present volume mention is made of one *Hugh* 'curteys and hendy,' who is, probably, only the scribe and not the author.

The exact date of the poems is a matter of some interest, and I think some little light is thrown upon it by the poems themselves.

<sup>1</sup> Stratmann's edition of *The Owl and Nightingale*, p. 58.

<sup>2</sup> According to Madden, *Lagamon*, xxxv, this part of the Cotton MS. was written "probably at the close of Henry III's reign".

In the *Owl and Nightingale* (ed. Stratmann), p. 34, l. 1091, King *Henry* is mentioned; and in the Jesus poems *Henry* is spoken of (1) as "*Henry our King*," A LUUE RON, p. 95, l. 82; (2) as *Henry King of England*, p. 96, l. 101. The date of the two MSS., and the evidence furnished by the language of the contents, go to prove that the Henry here spoken of is Henry III. There is, however, more weighty evidence than this, which is found in the little piece on p. 89, entitled, "WHEN HOLY CHURCH IS UNDER FOOT," a lament on the decadence of the Church. Here the writer complains that *Simony* has taken the place of *Simon*;

And þe seolus pope · þat heo biwyte scholde.  
 Habbe he þe yeftes · of seoluer and of golda.  
 Markes and pundes · myd rihte oþer myd wronge.  
 Heo let heom alle i-wurþe · þat beoþ so swyþe stronge.  
 Away þat heo bi vre days · so is vnder vote.

Notice here that the Papal exactions are spoken of as a *present* grievance. Now, is there any particular period in the reign of Henry III. when the Pope exacted gifts from the Church, thereby giving great dissatisfaction to the nation at large, and calling forth a public expression of indignation for the wrongs committed by the Bishop of Rome?

As an answer to this question, clearly showing that the poems in the Cotton and Jesus MSS. were composed before 1250, and probably soon after the year 1244, we give the following extracts from the ANNALS OF ENGLAND (vol. i. p. 313—315):

"A.D. 1244. The Pope (Innocent IV.) sends one of his clerks, Master Martin, into England, who *extorts rich gifts from the clergy*, and seizes on vacant benefices, which he bestows on his friends and relatives. . . . The King is obliged to remonstrate with the Pope on the exactions of his agents. In 1245, Master Martin, warned by the King, flees in haste from England.

"A formal complaint of the Papal exactions is made to the Council at Lyons, by William de Powick and other procurators of the King."

In 1246, 1247, Parliament complained to, and remonstrated with, the Pope on his exactions.

The fragment on the TEN COMMANDMENTS, p. 200, has been added because of its resemblance to the language of the *Story of Genesis and Exodus*.

The Glossary has been compiled, under my correction, by Mr E. Brock, and I take the present opportunity of acknowledging his assistance in the preparation of the present volume. His work is all the more valuable on account of his untiring patience and scrupulous accuracy in all matters that he takes in hand.

RICHARD MORRIS.

*King's College, London,  
September, 1871.*



## OUTLINE OF GRAMMATICAL FORMS IN THE OLD KENTISH SERMONS<sup>1</sup> (p. 26—36).

§ 1. In these Sermons, as in the *Ayenbite*, we find,

- (1) E for u or i (*Ayenbite*, p. vi); thus, the curious form *veréé* is miswritten for *vere* = *fur-e*, the dative case of *ver* = *fur* = *fir*, fire, p. 28; *pelrimage* = pilgrimage, *senne* = *sunne* = *sinne*, sin, p. 28; *fol-vellet* = *vol-vullep* = *ful-flleth*; *vulvelden* = fulfilled; *bredgume* = *brudgume* = *bridgume*, bridegroom, p. 29; *hwylem* = *hwilum*, whilome, p. 30; *prede* = *prude*, pride; *here* = *hure*, hire, p. 33.

- (2) IE, YE for eo or e (see *Ayenbite*, pp. viii, ix).

*bien* = *beon* = *ben*, be; *liese* = *leose* = *lese*, lose, p. 26; *forbiet* = *forbeot* = *forbet*, forbiddeth, p. 28; *si* = *sio* = *seo*, the (fem.)<sup>2</sup>; *niede*, *nyede* = *neode* = *nede*, need, p. 32.

- (3) EA, IA, YA for e (*Ayenbite*, p. ix, x). Sometimes A for ia or ea.

*seawinge* = *sseawinge* = *schewinge*, showing, p. 26; *to-janes* = *to-yeanes* = *to-yenes*, against, towards, p. 26; *ialde* = *ealde*, old; *diath*, *diadlich* = *death*, *deadlich* = *deth*, *dedlich*, death, deadly, p. 27; *belawe* = *beliaue* = *beleawe* = *beleve*, believe, pp. 28, 30, 34; *aueriche* = *eaveriche* = *everiche*, every, p. 28; *griat*, great, pp. 33, 34; *deai*, day, *feawe*, few, p. 34; *diap̃e* = *deape* = *depe*, death; *yare* = *eare* = *ere*, ear, p. 36.

§ 2. The following are orthographical variations from the *Ayenbite*.

- (1) S for SS, as *sal* for *ssel* = *schal*, shall.

<sup>1</sup> For peculiarities of the Kentish dialect in the 14th century, see the Grammatical Introduction to the *Ayenbite of Inmyt*.

<sup>2</sup> See *O. E. Homilies, 1st Series*, p. 235.

- (2) S for Z, as in *Shoreham's Poems*.  
 (3) F more frequently than V, as *fer* for *ver*. *Shoreham's Poems* have the same peculiarity.  
 (4) *ch* for *h*, *gh* or *ȝ* (see *O. E. Homilies*, pp. 217—245).  
*bricht*, p. 27; *ibrocht*, p. 29; *purch*, p. 30; *unricht*, *almichti*, p. 34, &c.  
 (5) H often dropped before *l*, *w*, &c.  
 as *louerd* = *hlouerd*, lord.

### § 3. NOUNS.

- (1) The declensions of nouns are much the same as those of the *Ayenbite* (Intro. p. lxxii).  
 (2) The dative singular of words ending in a consonant is formed by a final *e*, as *huse*, p. 27; *kinge*, p. 27; *store*, p. 28; *Gode*, p. 28. The nominative case of these words has no final *e*.  
 (3) The dative plural is in most instances identical with the accusative<sup>1</sup> plural, except, perhaps, in *be ȝa daghen*,<sup>2</sup> p. 35, which corresponds to the oldest English *be ȝam dagum*.  
 (4) The *Ayenbite* abounds in plurals in *-en*, but the *Sermons* only furnish instances of the following—*deden*, *haleghen*, *faten*, *sennen*, *saulen*, *sorghen*.

§ 4. ADJECTIVES. The definite and plural forms terminate in *-e*. We have no example in these few pages of

- (1) Accusative *-ne* (so frequent in the *Ayenbite*), except *ȝa-ne* (acc. of def. article).  
 (2) Dative *-en* (common in the *Ayenbite*), except *opren*, p. 27.

§ 5. PRONOUNS. The personal pronouns are as follows:—

| Singular.              |           | Plural.          |                     |
|------------------------|-----------|------------------|---------------------|
| 1st Pers.              | 2nd Pers. | 1st Pers.        | 2nd Pers.           |
| Nom. Hic [= ic or ich] | ȝu        | we               | ȝe                  |
| Gen. min, mi           | ȝin, ȝi   | ure <sup>3</sup> | yure <sup>5</sup>   |
| Dat. me                | ȝe        | us <sup>4</sup>  | ȝu, ȝw <sup>6</sup> |
| Acc. me                | ȝe        | us               | ȝu, ȝw              |

<sup>1</sup> The government of prepositions is uncertain.

<sup>2</sup> *daghen* can scarcely be *accusative plural* here, because the Kentish dialect keeps to the old plural ending *-as* (*-es*), while all other plural endings (*-an*, *-a*, *-u*, *-o*) become *-en* or *-es*.

<sup>3</sup> *oure* (*Ayenbite*).

<sup>4</sup> *ous* (*Ayen*).

<sup>5</sup> *yours* (*Ayen*).

<sup>6</sup> *you* (*Ayen*).

§ 6. The Demonstratives (1) *he*, (2) *se*, (3) *pes*, are thus declined :

| (1) He | Masc.     | Fem.              | Neut. | Plural.                 |
|--------|-----------|-------------------|-------|-------------------------|
| Nom.   | Ha, A, He | hye, hi           | hit   | Hi, hye                 |
| Gen.   | His       | hire <sup>1</sup> | his   | Hire, here <sup>2</sup> |
| Dat.   | Him       | hire, here        | him   | Hem <sup>3</sup>        |
| Acc.   | Hine, hin | hi                | hit   | Hi, hii, his            |

*His* (or *is*) = *them*, is common in the *Ayenbite*, but not the agglutinative form, *hes* = *he* + *his*, of very common occurrence in the East Midland dialect (see Preface to *Genesis and Exodus*).

In the following passage *has* (= *ha* + *his*) is like the *hes* of the *Story of Genesis & Exodus*—‘*se christen man yef HAS dep: of-særnet þo blisce of heuene*’ = the Christian man, if *he* do *them* [offerings] deserveth the bliss of heaven (p. 28).

| (2) Se the | Singular.       |            |            | Plural.    |
|------------|-----------------|------------|------------|------------|
|            | Masc.           | Fem.       | Neut.      |            |
| Nom.       | se, þe          | si, þe     | þet        | þe, þa, þo |
| Gen.       | þes             |            |            |            |
| Dat.       | þan, þe, þa, þo | þe, þa, þo | þe, þa, þo | þe, þa, þo |
| Acc.       | þane            | þe, þo     | þet        | þe, þo, þa |

(a) *þa*, as a dative, occurs in *O. E. Homilies, 1st Series* (see Preface).

(b) *Se*, *si* occur but very rarely in late 12th-century MSS.

(c) The following extracts will give the reader some notion of the way in which the older forms are mixed up with the more modern ones :—

Nu lordinges þis is þe miracle<sup>4</sup> þet þet godspel of te dai us telp. ac great is þe tokningge.<sup>4</sup> Se leprus signefiþ þo senuulle men. si lepre þo sennen. þet scab bitokned þo litle sennen, si lepre betokned þo grete sennen þet biedh diadliche, p. 31.

þo seide þe lord to his sergant, p. 33.

of þo holi gost, p. 28 ; in þa time, p. 29.

(3) We have not sufficient data for giving all the forms of the demonstrative *THIS*. We find as Nominatives *þes* (masc.) ; *þise* and *þis* [= *þise*] fem. ; *þis* (neuter). The plural nom. is *þos* (= *þas*).

<sup>1</sup> *hire* (Ayen.).

<sup>2</sup> *hire, hare* (Ayen.).

<sup>3</sup> *ham* (Ayen.).

<sup>4</sup> *miracle* and *tokningge* are feminine nouns.

§ 7. For *those*, as well as for the pl. of the definite article, *þo* is often used.

(1) The forms of the Indefinite Article that occur in the *Sermons* are Nom. *o*, *a* (*an* before a vowel), Masc., Fem., Neut.; Acc., &c., *ane*, *one*.

§ 8. The ordinary relative employed in the *Sermons* and in the *Ayenbite* is *þet*; but we also find the older form *se* along with *þet*<sup>1</sup> = he that (see pp. 29, 31).

§ 9. VERBS. (1) Infinitives in *i*,<sup>2</sup> as in *Ayenbite*, are exceedingly common, especially of verbs of Norman-French origin, as *anuri*, *somoni*, *suffri*, *perissi*, &c.

(2) Passive participles drop the final *n*, as in the *Ayenbite*, and it also falls away in the pret. plural.

(3) The following are all the strong preterites that occur in the *Sermons* :—

*kam*, p. 26 (pl. *comen*, p. 27; p.p. *icume*, p. 34); *seghen*, (pl.), p. 27; *spac*, p. 29; *yaf*, p. 32; *aros*, *aroos*, p. 32; *tok*, p. 32; *naam*, p. 34 (pl. *nomen*, p. 26).

(4) For the ordinary verbal forms see Preface to *Ayenbite*.

§ 10. ADVERBS. In the Southern dialect we find an adverb in common use, wholly unknown to the Northern dialect, namely, *fort* = *forte* = *for-te*, i. e. *for-to* = until.<sup>3</sup>

The old Kentish of the 13th and 14th century has developed two compounds, formed after the same mode, which seem quite peculiar to it, viz.: *euerte* = *ever-te* = *ever-to* = ever as yet; *neuerte* = *never-te* = *neuer-to* = never as yet.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> We very rarely find *se* in late 12th-century MSS. In the old Kentish of the 13th century *se* and *si* were probably used for *he* and *she*; *zy* = *she*, occurs in the *Ayenbite* (p. 102).

<sup>2</sup> *i* = *ie* = *ien* = *ian*.

<sup>3</sup> Just as *to* became *te*, so *swa* or *so* became *se*; whence in the Southern dialect *alse* = also, *hose* = who so.

<sup>4</sup> While editing the *Ayenbite*, and being wholly unacquainted with these forms, I removed *euerte*, p. 96, from the text to the foot of the page, supposing it to be merely an error for *euere*; a little further on I came across *neuerte*, p. 99, l. 3, which, I am happy to say, I left standing.

I merely mention this little incident as a caution to future editors, who, for the most part, will find it safer to believe themselves ignorant than to suppose that the MS. is wrong.

# Lydgate and Occleve Society.

---

3 St George's Square, Primrose Hill, London, N.W.,  
14 March, 1872.

DEAR SIR,

FROM the amount of work before the Early English Text Society, it is clear that they cannot hope to print LYDGATE'S and OCCLEVE'S Works for something like 20 years, though these works are wanted by students at once. I have all along felt the necessity of another Society to deal with the two writers above-named, and thus relieve the Early English Text Society of the chief burden of their fifteenth-century work. The willingness of Miss L. Toulmin Smith (who for many years worked with her father, finished his *English Gilds*, and has also just finished a book of Bristol Records for the Camden Society) to undertake the editing of Lydgate's Works, while I can do Occleve's, gives an opportunity of trying to found a new Lydgate and Occleve Society, which I feel that it would not be right to pass over.

Those among us who are convinced that they ought not to let slip any chance of furthering our common object of making accessible to students the unprinted works of our old authors, of providing the grammarian and the social historian with the necessary materials for their work, will, I doubt not, help, if they can, this new attempt to put in print the MS writings of the two earliest and best-known authors of the fifteenth century. The Chaucer Society is well on with its work of clearing the first obstruction out of the way of the Early English Text Society; I hope the second obstruction—the works of Lydgate and Occleve—will be cleared away by the new Society; and then this generation may see removed from Englishmen the well-deserved

harmony of something more than words; not more diffuse than his age liked him to be, and therefore with good reason popular and honoured among English readers in the fifteenth century."<sup>1</sup>—*English Writers*, vol. ii, p. 423-424.

I propose, then, to start the *Lydgate and Occleve Society* this year, if 150 men will subscribe to it, one guinea for octavos like the Early English Text books, and 2½ guineas for large-paper copies like those of the Early English Text Society's Extra Series, if 25 men subscribe for them. Names may be sent to me. Ten years should finish the work, if the Society is fairly supported.

The MSS we shall first print are those which can be relied on as having been prepared under the authors' eyes; namely, of Lydgate "the finest MS of our Language written in Henry VI's reign"<sup>2</sup>, Harl. 2278, the Lives of St Edmund and St Fremund; and Harl. 1766, Bokas's Falles of Princes (englisht from Boccaccio's *De Casu Principum*), no doubt the copy that Lydgate himself presented to Henry VI.

Of Occleve the first MS printed will be one not noticed by Ritson, Warton, or any other writer on English Poets, so far as I know,—a seemingly autograph volume in Bp Cosin's Library at Durham, dedicated "to the noble Excellence of my Lady of Westmerlande"<sup>3</sup> by "A humble Servant to your gracious Noblesse, T. Hoccleve", containing his 'Complaint', written when he was 53 years old, after 5 years of madness, two Fables, and his Art of Dying (known elsewhere).

If the Society starts, Messrs Childs of Bungay will print the books, and Mr \_\_\_\_\_ will publish them.

*Twenty Subscribers have already joined.*

FREDK. J. FURNIVALL.

<sup>1</sup> . . . "When I was one of the novel-reading 'boys' in the Museum Library, a MS of Lydgate, with a long saint's-legend, was as pleasant to me as 'Tylney Hall' or 'Peter Simple'."

<sup>2</sup> Harleian Catalogue, ii. 639.

<sup>3</sup> Joanna, daughter of John of Gaunt, wife of Ralph, first Earl of Westmoreland.

# A Bestiary.

[Arundel MS. 292, leaf 4 a.]

cf. Holthausen, Archiv 88, 36.

## *Natura leonis j<sup>a</sup>*

**D**e leun stant on hille,  
*and* he man hunten here,  
 Oðer ðurg hif nefe smel,  
 Smake ðat he negge,  
 Bi wilc weie fo he wile  
 To dele niðer wenden,  
 Alle hife fet steppes  
 After him he filleð,  
 Drageð duft wið hif ftert  
 ðer he steppesð,  
 Oðer duft oðer deu,  
 ðat he ne cunne if finden,  
 driueð dun to hif den  
 ðar he him bergen wille.

The **LION** stands  
 on a hill.  
 If he hears a man  
 hunting or scents  
 him approaching,

4

in fleeing he  
 erases his track  
 on the ground  
 with his tail,

8

and thus he  
 escapes to his  
 12 den, where he  
 may rest in  
 safety.

*ij<sup>a</sup>*

**A**n oðer kinde he haueð,  
 wanne he if ikindled  
 Stille lið ðe leun,  
 ne ftereð he nout of flepe  
 Til ðe sunne haueð finen  
 ðrief him abuten,  
 ðanne reiseð hif fader him  
 mit te rem ðat he makeð.

When the cub  
 is first born, he  
 16 stirs not until  
 the sun has  
 thrice shone  
 about him, then  
 his father  
 rouseth him  
 with his cries.

20

ii<sup>y</sup>.

The lion sleeps  
with his eyes  
open.

**D**e ȝridde lage haueð ȝe leun,  
ȝanne he lieð to flepen 24  
Sal he neure luken  
ȝe lidef of hife egen.

*Significacio prime nature.*

The high hill is  
heaven's  
kingdom.

Christ is the lion,  
who descended  
from that hill  
and lighted here  
on earth.

Though the devil  
was a cunning  
hunter, yet he  
never knew from  
whence our Lord  
came, nor how he  
housed himself  
in the maid Mary  
for man's  
salvation.

**W**elle heg if tat hil,  
ȝat if heuen riche, 28  
vre louerd if te leun,  
ȝe liueð ȝer abauen ;  
wu ȝo him likede  
to ligten her on erðe, 32  
Migte neure diuel witen,  
ȝog he be derne hunte,  
hu he dun come,  
Ne wu he dennede him 36  
in ȝat defte meiden,  
Marie bi name,  
ȝe him bar to manne frame.

i<sup>y</sup> et ii<sup>y</sup>.

When our Lord  
was dead and  
buried, he lay  
still in the tomb  
until the third  
day, and then he  
rose from the  
dead that he  
might give us  
life.

He is our shep-  
herd and we are  
his sheep.

If we are  
obedient to him,  
he will shield us  
and keep us from  
going astray.

**D**o ure drigten ded waf, 40  
and doluen, also hif wille was,  
In a fton stille he lai  
til it kam ȝe dridde dai,  
Hif fader him flitnede fwo 44  
ȝat he rof fro dede ȝo,  
vf to lif holden,  
wakeð fo hif wille if,  
So hirde for hif folde ; 48  
He if hirde, we ben ſep ;  
Silden he uf wille,  
If we heren to hif word  
ȝat we ne gon nowor wille, 52



*Natura aquile.*

KIðen i wille ðe ernes kinde,  
 Also ic it o boke rede,

wu he neweð hif guðhede,  
 hu he cumeð ut of elde,  
 Siðen hife limef arn unwelde,  
 Siðen hif bec if al to-wrong,  
 Siðen hif \*fligt if al unstrong,  
 and hif egen dimme ;

Hereð wu he neweð him.

A welle he fekeð ðat springeð ai  
 boðe bi nigt and bi dai,  
 ðer-ouer he flegeð, and up he teð,  
 til ðat he ðe heuene feð,  
 ðurg fkief sexe and feuene  
 til he cumeð to heuene ;

So rigt fo he cunne

he houeð in ðe funne ;  
 ðe funne fwideð al hif fligt,  
 and oc it makeð hif egen brigt,  
 Hife feðref fallen for ðe hete,  
 and he dun mide to ðe wete  
 Falleð in ðat welle grund,  
 ðer he wurdeð heil and fund,  
 and cumeð ut al newe,

Ne were hif bec untrewede.

Hif bec if get biforn wrong,  
 ðog hife limef fenden strong,  
 Ne maig he tilen him non fode

him self to none gode,

ðanne goð he to a fton,  
 and he billeð ðer-on,  
 Billeð til hif bec biforn

haueð ðe wrengeðe forloren,

Siðen wið hif rigte bile  
 takeð mete ðat he wile.

I will now tell  
 you how the  
 EAGLE renews  
 his youth, and  
 how he gets rid  
 56 of his old age,  
 when his limbs  
 have become un-  
 wieldy, and his  
 beak altogether  
 awry ;

[\* leaf 4 b.]  
 when his flight  
 60 is weak and  
 his eyes dim.

He seeks a well—  
 over which he  
 flies, 'through  
 64 skies six and  
 seven,' and,  
 hovering in the  
 light of the sun,  
 he regains his  
 eyesight.

68

72 With scorched  
 wings he drops  
 down into the  
 well, where he  
 would become  
 whole and sound,

76

were it not for  
 his distorted  
 beak, which  
 prevents him  
 from procuring  
 80 his food.

Then goes he to  
 a stone and pecks  
 thereon until his  
 beak loses its  
 84 distortion.

Afterwards with  
 his 'right bill'  
 he gets what  
 'meat he will.'

*Significacio.*

Man is like an  
EAGLE.

Before he  
becomes a  
Christian he is  
old in his sins.

He renews him-  
self by going to  
church, by  
there renouncing  
the devil and  
every sinful deed,

and by betaking  
himself to Christ.

He then believes  
on Christ, and  
learns 'priest-  
lore.'

He learns of God's  
love, which re-  
stores his sight.

Naked, he falls  
into the font, and  
comes out all  
new, save a little  
—for his mouth  
as yet has not  
uttered pater  
noster nor creed.

But he may soon  
learn what is  
needful, and so  
set his mouth  
right and procure  
for himself his  
soul's food.

[leaf 5 a.]

Al if man so if tif ern, 88  
 wulde ge nu listen,<sup>1</sup>  
 Old in hife finnes dorn,  
 Or he bicumeð cristen ;  
 and tuf he neweð him ðif man, 92  
 ðanne he nimeð to kirke,  
 Or he it biðenken can,  
 hife egen weren mirke ;  
 Forlaket ðore fatanaf, 96  
 and ilk sinful dede ;  
 Takeð him to ihesu crift,  
 for he fal ben hif mede ;  
 Leueð on ure loue[r]d crift, 100  
 and lereð presteð lore ;  
 Of hife egen wereð ðe mift,  
 wileð he dreccheð ðore.  
 hif hope if al to gode-ward, 104  
 and of hif luue he lereð,  
 ðat if te funne fikerlike,  
 ðuf hif figte he beteð ;  
 Naked falleð in ðe funt-fat, 108  
 and cumeð ut al newe,  
 buten a litel ; wat if tat ?  
 hif muð if get untrewē ;  
 hif muð if get wel unkuð 112  
 wið pater nofter and crede ;  
 Fare he norð, er fare he fuð,  
 leren he fal hif nede ;  
 bidden bone to gode, 116  
 and tuf hif muð rigten ;  
 tilen him so ðe fowleð fode,  
 ðurg grace off ure drigtin.

<sup>1</sup> MS listlen.

*Natura serpentis. j<sup>a</sup>*

**A**N wirm if o werlde,  
 wel man it knoweð,  
 Neddre if te name :  
 ðuf he him neweð,  
 ðanne he if forbroken *and* forbroiden,  
*and* in his elde al forwurden.  
 Fasteð til his fel him flakeð,  
 ten daies fulle,  
 ðat he if lene *and* mainlef  
*and* iuele mai gangen ;  
 he crepeð cripelande forð,  
 his craft he ðuf kiðeð,  
 Sekeð a fton ðat a ðirl if on,  
 Narwe, buten he nedeð him,  
 Nimeð vnneðes ðurg,  
 for his fel he ðer leteð ;  
 his fles forð crepeð,  
 walkeð to ðe water-ward,  
 wile ðanne drinken.  
 Oc he speweð or al ðe uenim  
 ðat in his breſt if bred  
 fro his birde time,  
 drinkeð fiðen inog,  
*and* tuf he him neweð.

ij<sup>a</sup>.

**D**anne ðe neddre if of his hid naked,  
*and* bare of his breſt atter,  
 If he naked man ſe  
 ne wile he him nogt neggen,  
 oc he fleð fro him  
 alſ he fro fir fulde.  
 If he cloðed man ſe,  
 col he waxeð,  
 For up he rigteð him

120 A SERPENT thus  
 renews himself  
 after he has  
 become worn out  
 with old age.

124

He ſtats for ten  
 days until his  
 ſkin 'ſlacks' *and*  
 he becomes lean  
*and* weak.

128

Then creeping  
 forth he ſeeks a  
 ſtone with a  
 hole in it; he  
 forces himſelf  
 through the  
 aperture, *and*  
 ſo gets rid of his  
 ſkin.

132

136

Then he ſeeks a  
 ſpring where he  
 takes a drink,  
*and* ſpues out all  
 the venom, 'bred  
 in his breſt from  
 his birth-time,'  
*and* now drinking  
 his fill he is  
 altogether  
 renewed.

140

144

When the adder  
 ſe thus rid of his  
 ſkin *and* of his  
 venom, if he  
 ſpy a naked  
 man, he will  
 flee from him as  
 from fire; but if  
 he ſee a clothed  
 man he at once  
 prepares to  
 attack him.

148

152

Unless the man  
be wary and fight  
the adder he will  
receive injury or  
perhaps his  
death-wound.

redi to deren,  
to deren er to ded maken,  
if he it muge forðen.  
wat if ðe man war wurðe, 156  
and weren him cunne,  
figteð wið ðif wirm  
and f[a]reð on him figtande ;  
ðif neddre fiðen he nede fal, 160  
makeð feld of hif bodi,  
and fildeð hif heued ;  
litel him if of hife limesf,  
bute he lif holde. 164

[Significacio.]

Each Christian  
man has promised  
to believe in  
Christ, and to  
love his laws,  
and to follow the  
commands of  
holy church.

**K**nov cristene man  
wat tu crist higteft  
Atte kirke dure,  
ðar ðu cristned were : 168  
ðu higtef to leuen on him,  
and hife lagef luuien,  
to helden wit herte  
ðe bodef of holi k[i]rke. 172

If thou hast  
broken them,  
thou art become  
altogether feeble  
and incapable  
of obtaining  
eternal life.

If ðu haueft if broken,  
Al ðu forbreðes,  
forwurðef and forgeluef,  
Eche lif to wolden, 176  
Elded art fro eche blif,  
So ðif wirm o werld if ;  
Newe ðe fordi  
fo ðe neddre doð ; 180  
It if te ned.

Renew thyself as  
the adder does.

Confirm thee in  
steadfastness and  
in all virtues,  
assist the poor,  
[\* leaf 5 b.]

Feste ðe of stedefastneffe,  
and ful of ðewes ;  
and help ðe poure \*men 184  
ðe gangen abuten.  
Ne deme ðe nog[t] wurd,

- That tu dure loken  
 up to the heuene ward ;  
 Oc walke wið the erðe  
 mildelike among men ;  
 no mod þu ne cune,  
 mod ne mannes vncost ;  
 oc fwiç of fineginge ;  
*and* bote bid tu the ai,  
 bothe bi nigt *and* bi dai,  
 That tu milce mote hauen  
 of ðine mildedes.  
 If lif bitokneð the fti  
 That te neddre gangeð bi,  
*and* tif if the ðirl of the fton  
 That tu falt þurg gon.  
 Let ðin filðe fro the,  
 fo the wirm hif fel doð ;  
 Go þu ðan to godef huf  
 the godfþel to heren,  
 That if foule drink,  
 finnef quenching.  
 Oc or fei þu in fcrifte  
 to the preft finnef tine,  
 feg the þuf of ði breft filde,  
*and* fefte the forðward  
 faft at tin herte,  
 That tu firmeft higtel.  
 þuf art tu ging *and* newe ;  
 forðward be þu trewe.  
 Nedeð the the deuel nogt,  
 for he ne mai the deren nogt ;  
 oc he fleð fro the  
 fo neddre fro de nakede.  
 On the cloðede the neddre if cof,  
*and* te deuel cliuer on finnef ;  
 Ai the finfule
- 188  
 and walk  
 meekly among  
 men ; show no  
 pride, but leave  
 off sinning, and  
 pray night and  
 day for forgive-  
 ness of thy  
 misdeeds.
- 192
- 196
- 200  
 This is the path  
 by which the  
 serpent goeth,  
 and this is the  
 hole in the stone  
 that thou must  
 go through.
- 204  
 Go to God's house  
 and hear the  
 Gospel (the soul's  
 drink and sin's  
 quenching).
- 208  
 By shrift, get rid  
 of thy breast-  
 filth, by perform-  
 ing what thou  
 didst first  
 promise at thy  
 baptism.
- 212
- 216  
 Then wilt thou  
 become young  
 and new.
- 216  
 The devil will  
 flee from thee, as  
 the serpent from  
 a naked man.
- 220  
 As the adder is  
 always ready to  
 hurt a clothed  
 man, so is the  
 devil to hurt the  
 sinner.

Against all  
mankind the  
devil bears  
hatred.

But let us  
mortify our  
bodies and so  
preserve our  
souls.

The ANT is  
mighty, much  
she toils  
in summer and  
in mild  
weather.

In harvest time  
she takes little  
rest, but is  
constantly  
employed in  
procuring her  
food,  
which consists  
of seeds of  
various kinds,  
of corn and of  
grass.

These she drags  
to her hole and  
stores them up  
against the  
[\* leaf 6 a.]  
winter,  
when she suffers  
no harm, having  
enough in her  
hole to keep her  
alive.

bifetten he wile,  
and wið al mankin 224  
he haueð nið and win ;  
wat if he leue haue  
of ure heuen louerd  
for to deren uf, 228  
So he ure eldere or dede ;  
do we ðe bodi in ðe bale,  
and bergen ðe foule,  
ðat if ure heued geuelic, 232  
helde we it wurðlic.

*Natura formice.*

De mire if magti,  
mikel ge fwinkeð  
In fumer and in softe weder, 236  
So we ofte sen hauen ;  
In ðe herueft  
hardilike gangeð,  
and renneð rapelike, 240  
and reſteð hire feldum,  
and fecheð hire fode  
ðer ge it mai finden,  
gaddreð ilkinef ſed 244  
boðen of wude and of wed,  
Of corn and of gref,  
ðat ire to hauen ef,  
haleð to hire hole, 248  
ðat ſiðen hire helpeð  
ðar ge wile ben winter \*agen ;  
caue ge haueð to crepen in,  
ðat winter hire ne derie ; 252  
Mete in hire hule ðat  
ðat ge muge biliuen.  
ðuſ ge tileð ðar,  
wileſ ge time haueð, 256

fo it her telleð ;  
 oc finde ge ðe wete,  
 corn ðat hire qwemeð,  
 Al ge forleteð ðif oðer feð  
 ðat ic er feide ;  
 Ne bit ge nowt de barlic  
 beren abuten ;  
 oc funeð it *and* fakeð forð,  
 fo it fame were.  
 get if wunder of ðif wirm  
 more ðanne man weneð,  
 ðe corn ðat ge to caue bereð  
 al get bit otwinne,  
 ðat it ne forwurðe  
 ne waxe hire fro,  
 er ge it eten wille.

Wheat she likes  
 best of all seeds,

260

but avoids barley.

264

268 The corn that  
 she takes to her  
 cave she bites in  
 two lest it  
 perish before she  
 consumes it.

272

*Significacio.*

Ðe mire muneð uf  
 mete to tilen,  
 Long liuenoðe,  
 ðif little wile  
 ðe we on ðif werld wunen :  
 for ðanne we of wenden,  
 ðanne if ure winter ;  
 we fulen hunger hauen  
*and* harde fures,  
 buten we ben war here.  
 do we forði fo doð ðif der,  
 ðanne be we derue  
 On ðat dai ðat dom fal ben,  
 ðat it ne uf harde rewe :  
 Seke we ure liuef fod,  
 ðat we ben fiker dere,  
 So ðif wirm in winter if,  
 ðan ge ne tileð nummore.

The ANT ad-  
 monishes us to  
 labour for our  
 livelihood  
 the while we are  
 in this world.

276

Death is our  
 winter time, and  
 unless we have  
 been prudent  
 here we shall  
 then suffer  
 hunger and  
 hardships.

280

Let us imitate,  
 then, this little  
 creature,  
 and on dooma-  
 day we shall  
 not have cause  
 for sorrow.

284

288

This animal  
shuns barley  
when she finds  
wheat.  
So ought we to  
shun the old  
law and keep  
to the new.

ðe mire funeð ðe barlic,  
ðanne ge fint te wete ; 292  
ðe olde lage we ogen to funen,  
ðe newe we hauen moten.  
ðe corn ðat ge to caue bereð,  
all ge it bit otwinne, 296

The Law teacheth  
us to do good and  
to forsake sin,  
but it does not  
feed body and  
spirit alike.

ðe lage uf lereð to don god,  
and forbedeð uf finne.  
It bet<sup>1</sup> uf erðliche<sup>2</sup> bodes,  
and bekued euelike ; 300

But Christ's law  
will feed us  
always, now and  
on doomsday  
and when we  
have need.

It fet ðe licham and te goft  
oc nowt o geuelike ;  
vre louerd crist it leue uf  
ðat hif lage uf fede, 304  
nu and o domefdei,  
and tanne we hauen nede.

*Natura cervi.*

The Hart has  
two properties.

Ðe hert haueð kindes two,  
and forbifnes oc al so : 308

He draws out  
the adder from  
the stone with  
his nose and  
swallows it.

ðuf it if on boke fet,  
ðat man clepeð fifiologet.  
He drageð ðe neddre of de fton  
ðurg hif nefe up on-on, 312  
of ðe ftoc er of ðe fton,  
for it wile ðerunder gon ;  
and fweleð it wel fwiðe,

The venom  
causeth the hart  
to burn.

ðerof him brinneð fiðen  
of ðat attrie ðing, 316

[\* leaf 6 b.]

Then he rushes  
to the water and  
drinks greedily  
until he is full.

wiðinnen he \*haueð brenning :  
he lepeð ðanne wið mikel lift,  
of fwet water he haueð ðrift ; 320  
he drinkeð water gredilike  
til he if ful wel fikerlike,

The venom is  
thereby rendered  
harmless.

Ne haueð ðat uenim non migt  
to deren him fiðen non wigt. 324

<sup>1</sup> MS *ben.*

<sup>2</sup> MS *ebriche.*



oc he werpeð er hife hornes  
 in wude er in ðornef,  
 and gingid him ðuf ðif wilde der,  
 So ge hauen nu lered her.

Then he  
 sheds his horns,  
 and thus this  
 'wild deer'  
 renews himself.

328

*Significacio prima.*

Alle we atter dragen off ure eldere,  
 ðe broken drigtinnef word ðurg ðe neddre ;  
 ðer-ðurg haueð mankin  
 boðen nið and win,  
 gollipe<sup>1</sup> and gifcing,  
 giuernesfe and wiffing,  
 pride and ouerwene ;  
 fwilc atter i-mene.  
 Ofte we brennen in mod,  
 and wurðen fo we weren wod ;  
 ðanne we ðuf brennen  
 bihoueð uf to rennen  
 to criftef quike welle,  
 ðat we ne gon to helle ;  
 drinken hif wiffing,  
 it quenchet ile finiging ;  
 forwerpen pride euril[c] del,  
 fo hert doð hife hornes ;  
 gingen uf tuf to godeward,  
 and gemen uf fiðen forðward.

All we draw  
 poison from our  
 elders who  
 sinned through  
 the adder, where-  
 through man-  
 kind have both  
 envy and strife,  
 lasciviousness and  
 covetousness,  
 greed and lust,  
 pride and pre-  
 sumption.

332

336

Oft do we burn  
 in rage, and  
 become as it  
 were mad.  
 When we thus  
 burn then  
 should we run  
 to Christ's living  
 well—and there  
 drink his lore,  
 which quenches  
 sin.

340

344

Let us cast off  
 pride like the  
 hart does his  
 horns, and be-  
 come new  
 creatures in God  
 and so ensure  
 our salvation.

348

*Natura ij<sup>a</sup>.*

Ðe hertef hauen anoðer kinde,  
 ðat uf og alle to ben minde.  
 Alle he arn off one mode ;  
 For if he fer fecchen fode,  
 and he ouer water ten,  
 wile non at nede oðer fien ;  
 Oc on fwimmeð bi-forn,  
 and alle ðe oðre folegen,

Harts are all of  
 one mind—for,  
 if they cross a  
 river in search of  
 food, they keep  
 close together.

352

356

<sup>1</sup> MS kolsipe.

Each lays his  
shin-bone on the  
other's loin-bone.

If the foremost  
one gets tired  
the others assist  
him to reach  
the land.

Such is their  
custom, though a  
hundred of them  
be together.

Let us imitate  
the hart and  
assist our  
neighbours as  
though they  
were our  
brothers.

[\* leaf 7 a.]

Let us lighten  
their burdens  
and help them  
in time of need.

Heaven will be  
the reward for  
our charity.

And it is our  
Lord's will that  
we should so do.

The Fox is a  
cunning animal,  
as its name  
shows.

weðer fo he fwimmeð er he wadeð :

If non at nede ðat oðer lateð,

Oc leigeð hif fkinbon

on oðref lendbon.

gef him ðat biforn teð

Bilimpes for to tirgen,

Alle ðe oðre cumen mide,

and helpen him for to her[t]jen,

beren him of ðat water grund

up to ðe lond al heil and fund,

and forðen here nede :

ðif wune he hauen hem bi-twen,

ðog he an hundred to-giddre ben.

*Significacio*<sup>1</sup> *y*.

Ðe hertef costes we ogen to munen,

Ne og ur non oðer to funen,

oc eurlc luuen oðer,

also he were hif broder,

wurðen stedefast his \*wine,

ligten him of hif birdene,

helpen him at hif nede ;

god giueð ðer-fore mede :

we fulen hauen heuenriche,

gef we bitwixen<sup>2</sup> uf ben briche :

ðuf if ure lounderdes lage,

luuelike to fillen,

her-of haue we mikel ned,

ðat we ðar-wið ne dilllen.

*Natura vulpis.*

A wilde der if  
ðat if ful of fele wilef,  
fox if hire to name,  
for hire queðsipe ;

<sup>1</sup> MS *significacio*.

<sup>2</sup> MS *ben twixen*.

hufebondeſ hire haten,  
 for hire harm dedes :  
 ðe coc *and* te capun  
 ge feccheð ofte in ðe tun,  
*and* te gandre *and* te gof,  
 bi ðe necke *and* bi ðe nos,  
 haleð if to hire hole ;  
 for-ði man hire haticð,  
 hatien *and* hulen  
 boðe men *and* fulef.  
 Liſtneð nu a wunder,  
 ðat tiſ der doð for hunger :  
 goð o felde to a furg,  
*and* falleð ðar-inne,  
 In eried lond er in erðchine.  
 forto bilirten fugelef ;  
 Ne ſtereð ge nogt of ðe ſtede  
 a god ſtund deieſ,  
 oc dareð fo ge ded were,  
 Ne drageð ge non onde :  
 ðe rauen if ſwiðe redi,  
 weneð ðat ge rotieð,  
*and* oðre fulef hire fallen bi  
 For to winnen fode,  
 derſlike wiðuten dred ;  
 he wenen ðat ge ded beð,  
 he wullen<sup>1</sup> on ðiſ foxef fel ;  
*and* ge it wel ſeleð,  
 ligtlike ge lepeð up  
*and* letteð hem ſone,  
 gelt hem here billing  
 raðe wið illing,  
 tetoggeð *and* tetireð hem  
 mid hire teð ſarpe,

<sup>1</sup> ? *billen* or *pullen*.

388 Husbandmen  
 hate her for her  
 deeds of harm.  
 For the cook and  
 the capon she  
 often seizes, as  
 well as the  
 392 gander and the  
 goose, by the  
 neck and by the  
 nose, and takes  
 them to her hole.

396

When the fox is  
 hungry she goes  
 to a furrow and  
 falls therein for  
 400 to entrap birds.

404 For a good hour  
 of the day she lies  
 there as if she  
 were dead, with-  
 out even drawing  
 a breath.

408 The raven and  
 other birds  
 thinking it is  
 carrion,

412 without fear  
 pounce on the  
 fox's skin,  
 who on feeling  
 them, leaps up  
 and rewards  
 them for their  
 416 pecking,

420 by tearing them  
 to pieces with  
 her sharp teeth,  
 and then, having

eaten her fill, goes  
where she lists.

Fret hire fille,  
and goð ðan ðer ge wille.

*Significacio.*

In the fox we  
see two qualities,  
prudence and  
wisdom.

Twifold forbifne in ðif der 424  
to frame we mugen finden her,  
warfiþe and wifedom  
wið deuel and wið iuel man ;

The same we see  
in the devil, who  
appears as if he  
would not  
harm us.

ðe deuel dereð dernelike, 428  
he lat he ne wile uf nogt biþwike,  
he lat he ne wile uf ðon non loð,  
and bringeð uf in a finne and ter he uf floð,

He bids us obey  
our carnal will  
in order to  
betray us.

he bit uf don ure bukef wille, 432  
eten and drinken wið unfkil,  
and in ure fkemting

[\* leaf 7b.]  
He who tells idle  
tales and in-  
dulges in sin,  
pecks on the  
fox's skin and  
tears his flesh ;  
and the devil  
requites the  
sinner by leading  
him to murky  
hell.

he doð raðe a foxing, 436  
he billeð one ðe foxef fel  
wo fo telleð idel fpel,  
and he tireð on hiþ ket  
wo fo him wið finne fet,  
and deuel geld fwilk billing 440  
wið fame and wið fending,  
and for hiþ finfuler werk  
ledeð man to helle merk.

*Significacio.*

The devil and  
the wicked man  
with their crafts  
are like the fox,  
and deserve  
shame.

De deuel if tuþ ðe [fox] ilik 444  
mið iuele breidef and wið fwik ;  
and man al fo ðe foxef name  
arn wurði to haueþ fame ;

He who with  
fair words means  
evil is a fox and  
a devil.

for wo fo feieð oðer god, 448  
and ðenkeð iuel on hiþ mod,  
fox he if and fend iwif,

Herod was such  
an one, for he  
said that he

ðe boc ne legeð nogt of ðif ; 452  
So waþ herodeþ fox and flierd,  
ðo criþt kam in-to ðis middel-erd,

he feide he wulde him leuen on,  
and ȝogte he wulde him fordon.

would believe on  
Christ when he  
really intended  
to kill him.

*Natura aranée.<sup>1</sup>*

Sestef fop ure seppande,  
fene if on werlde,  
leiðe and lodlike,<sup>2</sup>  
ȝuf we it leuen,  
manikinef ȝing  
alle manne to wiffing.  
ȝe spinnere on hire fwid ge weveð,  
festeð atte huf rof,  
hire fodredeð  
o rof er on ouese,  
fo hire if on elde ;  
werpeð ȝuf hire web,  
and weueð on hire wife.  
ȝanne ge it haueð al idigt.  
ȝeðen ge driueð,  
hitt hire in hire hole,  
oc ai ge it biholdeð  
til ȝat ȝer flegel faren  
and fallen ȝer-inne,  
wiðeren in ȝat web,  
and wilen ut wenden ;  
ȝanne renneð ge rapelike,  
for ge if ai redi,  
nimeð anon to ȝe net  
and nimeð hem ȝere,  
bitterlike ge hem bit  
and here bane wurðeð,  
drepeð and drinkeð here blod,  
doð ge hire non oðer god,  
bute fret hire fille,  
and dareð fiðen stille.

456 Our Creator has  
created loath-  
some things for  
man's in-  
struction.

460

The SPIDER spins  
her a web and  
fastens it to the  
eaves of a house.

464

468 When it is  
finished she  
hides herself in  
her hole,

472 until she spies a  
fly struggling in  
her web.

476 Then runs she  
quickly, seizes  
the fly,

480

and bitterly  
bites it,  
and so kills it,  
and drinks its  
blood.

484 Having had her  
fill she again  
goes and hides  
herself.

<sup>1</sup> MS *iranée*.

<sup>2</sup> MS *loldike*.

*Significacio.*

This 'worm'  
betokens the man  
who deceives  
another,  
openly or  
privately,  
in moot, or in  
market.

Ðif wirm bitokneð ðe man  
 Ðat oðer biſwikeð 488  
 on ftede er on ftalle,  
 ftille er lude,  
 in mot er in market,  
 er oni oðer wiſe, 492  
 he him bit  
 Ðan he him bale felleð,  
 and he drinkeð his blod  
 wanne he him dreueð, 496  
 and ðo freteð hem<sup>1</sup> al,  
 Ðan he him iuel werkeð.

He bites his  
neighbour when  
he brings him  
to grief;  
he drinks his  
blood when he  
annoys him; and  
he devours him  
when he brings  
evil upon him.

*Natura cetegrandie.*

The WHALE is  
the largest of all  
fiſh.

[\* leaf 8 a.]

It looks like an  
iſland when it is  
aſtoat.

Cethegrande if a fiſ  
 Ðe moſte Ðat in water if; 500  
 Ðat tu \*wuldeſ ſeien get,  
 geſ Ðu it foge wan it flet,  
 Ðat it were á neilond  
 Ðat ſete one Ðe ſe fond. 504  
 Ðif fiſ Ðat if vnride,  
 Ðanne him hungreð he gapeð wide,  
 vt of hiſ ðrote it fmit an onde,  
 Ðe fwetteſte Ðing Ðat if o londe; 508  
 Ðer-fore oðre fiſſes to him dragen,  
 wan he it felen he aren fagen,  
 he cumen and hounen in hiſ muð,  
 of hiſ ſwike he arn uncuð; 512  
 Ðif cete Ðanne hiſe chaueles lukeð,  
 Ðiſe fiſſes alle in fukeð,  
 Ðe ſmale he wile Ðuſ biſwiken,  
 Ðe grete maig he nogt bigripen. 516  
 Ðif fiſ wuneð wið Ðe ſe grund,  
 and liueð Ðer eure heil and fund,

When he is  
hungry he gapes  
and out comes a  
sweet ſcent, by  
which numbers  
of fiſhes are  
drawn into his  
mouth.

When the whale  
closes his jaws  
he ſucks in all  
theſe fiſhes.  
But it is only  
the little fiſh he  
thus enſnares,  
the big ones he  
cannot ſeiſe.  
The whale abides  
at the bottom of

<sup>1</sup> ? him.

til it cumeð ðe time  
 ðat ftorm ftireð al ðe fe,  
 ðanne fumer *and* winter winnen ;  
 ne mai it wunen ðer-inne,  
 So droui if te fees grund,  
 ne mai he wunen ðer ðat ftund,  
 oc ftireð up *and* houeð ftille ;  
 wilef ðar<sup>1</sup> weder if fo ille,  
 ðe fipef ðat arn on fe fordriuen,  
 loð hem if ded, *and* lef to liuen,  
 biloken hem *and* fen ðif fif,  
 an eilond he wenen it if,  
 ðer-of he aren fwiðe fagen,  
*and* mid here migt ðar-to he dragen,  
 fipef on feften,  
*and* alle up gangen ;  
 Of fton mid stel in ðe tunder  
 wel to brennen one ðif wunder,  
 warmen hem wel *and* heten *and* drinken ;  
 ðe fir he feleð *and* doð hem finken,  
 for fone he diueð dun to grunde,  
 he drepeð hem alle wið-uten wunde.

*Significacio.*

Ðif deucl if mikel wið wil *and* magt,  
 So wicchef<sup>2</sup> hauen in here craft,  
 he doð men hungren *and* hauen ðrift,  
*and* mani oðer finful lift,  
 tolleð men to him wið hif onde,  
 wo fo him folegeð he findeð fonde ;  
 ðo arn ðe little in leue lage,  
 ðe mikle ne maig he to him dragen :  
 ðe mikle, i mene ðe ftedefast  
 in rigte leue mid flef *and* gaft.

520 the sea in fair  
 weather.  
 A storm causes  
 him to come to  
 the surface of  
 the sea.

524

528 Sailors seeing it  
 mistake it for an  
 island,  
 and cast anchor  
 and land upon it.

532

536 To warm them-  
 selves they light  
 a fire.

540 The whale  
 feeling the heat,  
 dives down to  
 the bottom of  
 the sea and  
 drowns them all.

544 The devil is like  
 the whale;  
 he tempts men  
 to follow their  
 sinful lusts, and  
 in return they  
 find ruin.

548 It is the weak in  
 faith, the little  
 ones that he thus  
 beguiles.

<sup>1</sup> ?æt.

<sup>2</sup> MS *witches*.

He who listens  
to the devil's lore  
will rue it sore.  
He who puts his  
trust in him  
will follow him  
to dark hell.

[\* leaf 8 b.]

In the sea are  
many wonders.

The MERMAID is  
like a maiden as  
to breast and  
body—in other  
respects, she is  
like a fish.

This marvel  
dwells in  
treacherous parts  
of the sea, and  
causes ships to  
sink.

Merry she sings,  
and hath many  
shrill 'voices,'  
but they are all  
bad, for they  
cause shipmen to  
slumber and to  
sleep, and to for-  
get their  
steering.

Thus with  
treachery she  
sinks their ships.

wo so listneð deuelef lore,  
on lengðe it fal him rewen fore ; 552  
wo so festeð hope on him,  
he fal him folgen to helle dim.

*Natura Sirene.*

IN ðe se senden  
felcuðef manie ; 556  
ðe mereman if  
a meiden ilike  
on brest *and* on bodi,  
oc al ðuf ge if bunden ; 560  
fro ðe noule niðerward  
ne if ge no man like,  
oc fif to fuliwif  
mid finnef waxen. 564  
ðif wunder wuneð  
in wankel stede,  
ðer ðe water sinkeð,  
fipef ge sinkeð, 568  
*and* scaðe ðuf werkeð  
mirie ge singeð ðif mere,  
*and* haueð manie stefnef,  
manie *and* fille, 572  
oc it ben wel ille ;  
sipmen here fteringe forgeten  
for hire stefninge,  
flumeren *and* slepen, 576  
*and* to late waken,  
ðe fipef sinken mitte fuk,<sup>1</sup>  
ne cumen he nummor up.  
Oc wise men *and* warre 580  
agen cunen chare,  
ofte arn atbroften,  
mid he[re] brest ouel ;

<sup>1</sup> ? *fuk*.



he hauen herd told of ðif mere  
 ðat tuf unie-mete,  
 half man *and* half fif,  
 fum ðing tokneð bi ðis.

*Significacio.*

**F**ele men hauen ðe tokning  
 of ðif forbifneðe ði[n]g,  
 wiðuten weren wuluef<sup>1</sup> fel,  
 wiðinnen arn he wuluef al;  
 he fpeken godecundhede,  
*and* wikke if here dede;  
 here dede if al vncuð  
 wið ðat fpekeð here muð;  
 twifold arn on mode,  
 he fweren bi ðe rode,  
 bi ðe funne *and* bi ðe mone,  
*and* he ðe legen fone,  
 mid here fage *and* mid here fong  
 he ðe fwiken ðer imong,  
 ðin agte wið fwiking,  
 ði foule wið leſing.

*Natura elephantif.*

**E**lpef arn in Inde riche,  
 on bodi borlic bergef ilike;  
 he to-gaddre gon o wolde,  
 fo ſep ðat cumen ut of folde,  
*and* behinden he hem ſampnen  
 ðanne he fulen oðre ftrenen;  
 Oc he arn fo kolde of kinde  
 ðat no golſipe if hein minde,  
 til he noten of a gref,  
 ðe name if mandragoref,  
 Siðen he bigeten on,

<sup>1</sup> ? *ſepes* or *lambeſ.*

584 By this queer  
 beaſt, half man  
 and half ſha, ſomethiſg  
 is betokened.

588 Many men are  
 like the mer-  
 maid;

592 they ſpeak fair  
 but their deedſ  
 are evil.

596

They ſwear by  
 the rood, by the  
 ſun and moon,  
 and lie both in  
 their ſaw (word)  
 and in their  
 ſong.

600

They will deſtroy  
 both a man's  
 goodſ and hiſ  
 ſoul by their  
 treachery.

604 ELEPHANTS are  
 found in India,  
 and have burly  
 bodieſ and are  
 gregarious.

608

They have no  
 concupiſcence  
 until they have  
 eaten of the  
 mandrake.

612

Two yearſ they  
 go with young,

and give birth to  
one only.

[leaf 9 a.]

They bring forth  
their young  
standing in the  
water.

Great care they  
take not to fall,  
for they have no  
power to raise  
themselves.

When the  
elephant wishes  
to rest himself  
he seeks a strong  
tree and  
leaneth thereby.

The hunter takes  
note of the  
beast's haunt, and  
saws the tree,

and watches the  
result of his  
labours.

When the  
elephant comes  
and leans  
against the tree,  
then both  
together fall.

and two ger he Ɔer-mide gon.

Ɔog he Ɔre hundred ger

on werlde more wuneden her,

bigeten he neuermor non,

so kold if hem fiƆen blod *and* bon ;

Ɔanne ge fal hire kindlef beren,

In water ge fal ftonden,

In water to mid fide,

Ɔat wanne hire harde tide,

Ɔat ge ne falle niƆer nogt,

Ɔat if moft in hire Ɔogt,

For he ne hauen no liƆ

Ɔat he mugen rifen wiƆ.

Hu he refted him Ɔif der,

Ɔanne he walkeƆ wide,

herkne wu it telleƆ her,

for he if al unride.

A tre he fekeƆ to fuligewif,

Ɔat if ftrong *and* ftedefaft if,

*and* leneƆ him troftl[i]ke Ɔer-bi,

Ɔanne he if of walke weri.

Ɔe hunte haueƆ biholden Ɔis,

Ɔe him wille fwiken,

wor hif beſte wune if,

to don hife willen ;

SageƆ Ɔif tre *and* under-fet,

o Ɔe wife Ɔat he mai bet,

*and* hileƆ it wel Ɔat he it nef war,

Ɔanne he makeƆ Ɔer-to char,

him feluen fit olon, bihalt,

weƆer hif gin him out biwalt.<sup>1</sup>

Ɔanne cumeƆ Ɔif elp unride,

*and* leneƆ him up on hif fide,

flepeƆ bi Ɔe tre in Ɔe ſadue,

*and* fallen boden ſo to-gaddre ;

616

620

624

628

632

636

640

644

648

<sup>1</sup> MS *biwartl.*

gef ðer if noman ðanne he falleð,  
 he remeð *and* helpe calleð,  
 remeð reufulike on hif wife,  
 hopeð he fal ðurg helpe riſen ;<sup>1</sup>  
 ðanne cumeð ðer on gangande,  
 hopeð he fal him don ut ſtanden,  
 Fikeð *and* fondeð al hif migt,  
 ne mai he it forðen no wigt ;  
 Ne canne<sup>2</sup> ðan non oðer,  
 oc<sup>3</sup> remeð mid hif broðer,  
 manie *and* mikle cume ðer ſacande,<sup>4</sup>  
 wenen him on ſtalle maken,  
 cc for ðe helpe of hem alle  
 ne mai he cumen fo on ſtalle ;  
 ðanne remen he alle a rem,  
 fo hornes blaſt oðer bellef drem,  
 For here mikle reming  
 rennande cumeð a gungling,  
 raðe to him luteð,  
 his fnute him under puteð,  
*and* mitte helpe of hem alle  
 ðif elp he reifen on ſtalle ;  
*and* tuſ \* atbreſted ðif huntet breid,  
 oðe wife ðat ic haue gu feid.

652 Loud he cries  
 for help,  
 and many an  
 one of the herd  
 tries 'n vain to  
 help him out of  
 his plight.

656

660

664 Then they all  
 set up a loud cry  
 like the blaſt  
 of a horn,  
 then a 'young-  
 ling' comes and  
 helps up the old  
 one by means  
 668 of his 'snout,'  
 and thus enables  
 him to escape the  
 hunter's snare.

672 [\* leaf 9 b.]

*ſignificacio.*

Ðuſ fel adam ðurg a tre,  
 vre firſte fader, ðat ſele we :  
 Moyſef wulde him reifen,  
 migte it no wigt forðen ;  
 After him prophetes alle  
 migte her non him maken on ſtalle,  
 on ſtalle, i ſeie, ðer he er ſtod,  
 to hauen heuenriche god.

Thus did Adam  
 fall through a  
 tree.

676 Moses in vain  
 tried to raiſe  
 him.

Afterwards the  
 prophets tried  
 to reſtore man  
 to his former  
 680 poſition.

<sup>1</sup> MS ſi-ſen ; margin ri[ſen].    <sup>2</sup> Read *No can he*.  
<sup>3</sup> MS o ; oc *in the margin*.    <sup>4</sup> MS *ſacande*, margin ſe[*cande*].

A cry went up to  
heaven, and  
Christ came  
down to their aid.

He became man,  
and by death  
went, as it  
were, under  
Adam and raised  
him out of  
'dim hell.'

he fuggeden *and* forgeden *and* weren in ðogt,  
wu he migten him helpen ovt ;  
ðo remeden he alle onder <sup>1</sup>fteuene 684  
alle hege up to ðe heuene,  
for here care *and* here calling  
hem cam to crift heuen king ;  
he ðe if ai in heuene mikel, 688  
wurð her man, *and* tuf was litel,  
drowing ðolede in ure manhede,  
*and* tuf adam he under-gede,  
reifede him up, *and* al mankin, 692  
ðat waf fallen to helle dim.

*Natura turturis.*

THE TURTLE-  
DOVE keeps to  
one mate,  
and never will  
she leave him.

She is a pattern  
to women.

Day and night  
they are  
together.

Whosoever says  
that they part  
company, I say  
he lies.  
If her mate dies,  
she never chooses  
another,  
but waiteth for  
her old love, and  
keepeth him in  
her heart, night  
and day, as if he  
were still alive.

IN boke if ðe turtref lif  
written o rime, wu lagelike  
ge holdeð luue al hire lif time ; 696  
gef ge onef make haueð,  
fro him ne wile ge fiðen :  
muneð wimmen hire lif,  
ic it wile gu reden ; 700  
bi hire make ge fit o nigt,  
o dei ge goð *and* flegeð.  
wo fo seit he fundren ovt,  
i feie ðat he legeð. 704  
Oc if hire make were ded,  
*and* ge widue wore,  
ðanne flegeð ge one *and* fareð,  
non oðer wile ge more ; 708  
buten óne goð *and* one fit,  
*and* hire olde luue abit,  
In herte haueð him nigt *and* dai,  
fo he were oliue ai. 712

<sup>1</sup> ? wonder or on der.

*Significacio.*

**L**ift ilk lefful<sup>1</sup> man her-to,  
*and* herof ofte reche :  
 vre fowle atte kirke dure  
     chef hire crift to meche,  
 he if ure foule spufe,  
     luue we him wið migte,  
*and* wende we neure fro him-ward  
     be dai ne be nigte ;  
 ðog he be fro ure sigte faren,  
     be we him alle trewe,  
 non oðer louerd ne leue<sup>2</sup> we  
     ne non \*luue newe ;  
 leue we ðat he liueð ai  
     up on heuen-riche,  
*and* ðeðen-he fal cumen eft,  
     *and* ben uf alle briche,  
 for to demen alle men,  
     oc nout on geuelike,  
 hife loðe men fulen to helle faren,  
     hife leue to hif riche.

*Natura pantere.*

**P**anter if an wilde der,  
 If non fairere on werlde her ;  
 he if blac fo bro of qual,  
 mið wite spottes fapen al,  
 wit *and* trendled alf a wel,  
*and* itt bicumeð him fwiðe wel.  
 wor fo he wuneð ðif panter,  
 he fedeð him al mid oðer der,  
 of ðo ðe he wile he nimeð ðe cul  
*and* fet him wel til he if ful.  
 In hif hole fiðen ftille  
 ðre dagef he flepen wille,

<sup>1</sup> MS *lefful*.<sup>2</sup> ? *luue*.

Each Christian  
 man chooses  
 Christ for his  
 mate at the  
 church door.

716

He is our soul's  
 spouse,  
 and we ought  
 never to forsake  
 him, nor to be  
 untrue to him  
 though he be  
 absent from us.

720

724 [\* leaf 10 a.]

Let us take no  
 new love, but  
 believe that he  
 ever liveth in  
 heaven's  
 kingdom.

728

He will come on  
 doomsday to  
 judge all men,  
 but not all alike.  
 His foes shall  
 go to hell, but  
 his beloved ones  
 to heaven.

732

The PANTHER is  
 a beautiful wild  
 animal.

He is of a black  
 colour with  
 white spots like  
 a rounded wheel.

736

He feeds on other  
 animals, and  
 having eaten  
 his fill, he goes  
 to sleep in his  
 cave for three  
 days.

744

Then he rises  
and cries aloud,  
and out of his  
mouth comes a  
'smell' sur-  
passing balsam  
in sweetness.

The sweetness  
of his breath  
entices a number  
of animals to  
follow him,  
except the dragon  
which lies  
trembling in  
its den.

Christ is the  
Panther.

He is fairer than  
all others.

Well he showed  
his love to man,  
when he died  
for him,  
and lay three  
days in a hole.

But up he rose  
the third day  
and ascended  
to heaven.

[\* leaf 10 b.]

A sweet smell  
came from his

þan after ðe ðridde dai  
he riseð *and* remeð lude fo he mai,  
ut of his ðrote cumeð a smel  
mid hif rem forð oueral, 748  
þat ouer-cumeð haliweie  
wið fwetneffe, ic<sup>1</sup> gu feie,  
*and* al þat eure smelleð fwete,  
be it drie be it wete. 752  
For ðe fwetneffe off hif onde,  
wor fo he walkeð o londe,  
wor fo he walked, er wor fo he wuneð,  
Ilk der ðe him hereð to him cumeð, 756  
*and* folegeð him up one ðe wold,  
for ðe fwetneffe ðe ic gu haue told.  
þe dragunef one ne ftiren nout  
wilef te panter remeð ogt, 760  
oc daren stille in here pit,  
alf fo he weren of dede offrigt.

*Significacio.*

CRift if tokned þurg ðis der,  
wof kinde we hauen told gu her; 764  
for he if faier ouer alle men,  
fo euen fterre ouer erðe fen;  
ful wel he taunede hif luue to man,  
wan he þurg holi fpel him wan, 768  
*and* longe he lai her in an hole,  
wel him dat he it wulde ðolen;  
þre daief flep he al on on,  
þanne he ded waf in blod *and* bon, 772  
vp he rof *and* rémede i-wif<sup>2</sup>  
of helle pine, of heuene blis,  
*and* fteg to heuene uvenest,<sup>3</sup>  
þer wuneð wið \* fader *and* holi gajt. 776  
Amongef men a fwete [s]mel

<sup>1</sup> MS it.

<sup>2</sup> MS in wif.

<sup>3</sup> MS uvenest

he let her of his holi spel,  
 wor-ðurg we mugen folgen him  
 in-to his godecundne se fin.  
*and* ðat wirm ure wiðerwine,  
 wor fo of godef word if dine,  
 ne dar he ftiren, ne noman deren,  
 ðer<sup>1</sup> wile he lage *and* luue beren.

*Natura columbe et significacio.*

**D**E culuer haueð costef gode,  
 alle wef ogen to hauen in mode,  
 seuene costef in hire kinde,  
 alle it ogen to ben uf minde,  
 ge ne haueð in hire non galle,  
 simple *and* softe be we alle ;  
 ge ne liueð nogt bi lagt ;  
 Ilc robbinge do we of bac.<sup>2</sup>  
 ðe wirm ge leteð *and* liueð bi ðe fed,  
 of cristef lore we haue ned ;  
 wið oðre briddes ge doð af moder,  
 so og ur ilk to don wið oðer ;  
 woning *and* groning if lic hire song,  
 bimene we uf, we hauen don wrong.  
 In water ge if wis of heuekes come,  
*and* we in boke wið deules nome ;  
 In hole of ston ge makeð hire nest,  
 In cristef milce ure hope if best.

<sup>1</sup> ? ðe.

<sup>2</sup> ? *hac* = *ac*, also.

780 holy lore, where-  
 through we may  
 follow him into  
 his Divine  
 presence.

784 But the devil  
 will not show  
 himself wherever  
 he hears the  
 din of 'God's  
 word.'

788 The Dove has  
 good seven  
 habits.  
 She has no  
 'gall' in her.  
 Let us all be  
 'simple and  
 soft.'

792 She lives not by  
 plunder.  
 Let us avoid  
 all robbery.  
 She picks up  
 seed only, and  
 avoids worms.  
 Of Christ's lore,  
 we all have need.

796 She acts as a  
 mother to the  
 young of other  
 birds.  
 Let us assist one  
 another.

800 Her song is a  
 mournful plaint.  
 Let us bewail  
 our sins.  
 In water she is  
 aware of the  
 coming of the  
 hawk.  
 So in the book  
 are we taught  
 to flee from the  
 devil.

In a hole of the  
 rock she makes  
 her nest.  
 In Christ's  
 mercy our hope  
 is best.

G. Konrath, Archiv, 88, 17; 89, 153.  
 Heuser, Anglia 17, 73.

## Old Kentish Sermons.

(Land. MS 471.)

### SERMO IN DIE EPIPHANIE.

[Fol. 128 b.]

**C**Vm natus esset ihesus in betleem iude in diebus herodis regis ecce magi ab oriente uenerunt ierosolimam dicentes. Vbi est qui natus est rex iudeorum.

When Jesus was born in Bethle- hem a star appeared to three heathe kings about sun-rise.

They determined to go and honour Jesus with gifts.

The star led them to Jerusalem.

There they asked for the King of the Jews.

Then was Herod greatly disturbed, and asked 'wise clerks' where Christ should be born.

They say, In Bethlehem.

¶ We redeth i þo holi godespelle of te dai ase ure louerd god almichti i-bore was of ure lauedi seinte Marie i þe cite of bethleem. þet si sterre was seauinge of his beringe. swo apierede te þo þrie kinges of heþenesse. to-janes þo sunne risindde. And al swo hi bi-knewe his beringe bi þo sterre. swo hi nomen conseil be-tuene hem þet hi wolden gon for to hyne an-uri. and þet hi wolden offri him. gold. and stor. and Mirre. And al swo hi hedden aparaild here offrendes swo kam si sterre þet yede to-for hem in-to ierusalem. þere hi speken to herodes and hym askede. wer was se king of gyus þet was i-bore. And herodes i-herde þet o king was i-bore þet solde bi king of geus. swo was michel anud. and alle hise men. for þet he was of-dred for to liese his king riche of ierusalem. þo dede he somoni alle þo wyse clerekes þet kuþe þe laghe and hem askede wer crist solde bien i-bore. Hi answerden þet ine ierusalem.<sup>1</sup> for hit was swo i-seid and be-hote hwilem bi

<sup>1</sup> sic.



- þo profetes. And al-swo herodes i-herde þis. swo spac  
te þo þrie kinges. and hem seide. Goþ ha seide into  
bethleem and secheþ<sup>1</sup> þet child. and wanne ye hit habbeth  
25 hi-funde swo an-uret hit. and efter þet cometh to me.  
and hic wille go and an-uri hit. \*þet ne seide he nocht  
herodes for þet he hit wolde on-uri: ac for þet he hit  
wolde slon. yef he hit michte finde. þo kinges hem  
wenten and hi segghen þo sterre þet yede bi-fore hem.  
30 al-wat hi kam over þo huse. war ure louerd was. and al  
swo hi hedden i-fonden ure louerd: swo hin an-urede.  
and him offrede hire offrendes. Gold. and. stor. and  
Mirre. þo nicht efter þet aperede an ongel of heuene in  
here slepe inc metinge and hem seide and het. þet hi ne  
solde a-yen wende be herodes. ac be an oper weye wende  
35 into hire londes. ¶ Lordinges and leuedis þis is si  
glorius miracle. and si glorius seywinge of ure lordes  
beringe. þet us telþ þet holi godespel of te day. and ye  
muee wel under-stonde be þo speche of þe godspelle þet  
40 me sal to dai mor makie offrinke þan an opren dai. and  
þer-of us yest ensample þo þrie kinges of heþenesse. þet  
comen fram verrene londes ure louerd to seche. and him  
makie offrinke. And be þet hi offrede gold. þet is  
cuuenable yestte to kinge: seawede þet he was sothfast  
45 kink. and be þet hi offrede<sup>2</sup> Stor. þet me offrede wylem  
be þo ialde laghe to here godes sacrefise: seawede þe[t]  
he was verray prest. And be þet hi offrede Mirre. þet is  
biter þing. signefieth þet hi hedde be-liaue þet he was  
diadlich. þet diath solde suffri for man-ken. Nu i-  
50 hiereth wet signefieth þet Gold. þet. Stor. þet Mirre.  
And offre we Gostliche to ure lorde. þet [h]i offrede fles-  
liche. þet Gold þet is bricht and glareth ine þo bricht-  
nesse of þo sunne. signefieth þe gode beleaue. þet is  
bricht ine þe gode cristenemannes herte. Si gode  
55 beleaue licht and is bricht ine þo herte of þo gode  
Manne ase gold. Offre we þanne god almichti god gold.

He bids the wise  
men to go to  
Bethlehem,  
and having  
found the child  
to return.  
[\* Fol. 129.]

The kings find  
Jesus and pre-  
sent their gifts,  
but do not return  
to Herod.

This star was a  
miraculous  
manifestation of  
the birth of Jesus.

On this day we  
should make  
greater offerings  
than on any  
other day.

The gold denoted  
the kingship of  
Jesus.

The incense his  
priesthood,

the myrrh his  
mortality.

Gold signifies  
good belief.

<sup>1</sup> MS *sechez*.

<sup>2</sup> MS *offrede*.

[\* Fol. 129 b.]  
Incense signifies  
prayer.

f. m. 2 N.  
1892 (vol. vii)  
p. 267.

Myrrh signifies  
those good works  
that mortify  
the flesh.

Offer to God not  
only your earthly  
goods, but  
spiritual goods,  
i. e. faith, prayer,  
and good works.

May Christ give  
us grace so to  
believe, pray, and  
serve him, that we  
may have the  
bliss of heaven's  
kingdom.

Be-leue we stede-fast-liche. pet he is fader and sune. and  
holy gost. is on-lepi god. Wo so hath beleaue ine gode  
swo offreth him god gold \*pet Stor signefied gode  
werkes.<sup>1</sup> for ase se smeche of þe store wanne hit is i-do 60  
into þe uerée and goth upward to þo heuene and to  
gode ward Swo amuntet si gode biddinge to gode of þo  
herte of þo gode cristenemanne. Swo we mowe sigge  
pet stor signefieth þe herte. and se smeche luue of gode.  
Li pet Mirre<sup>2</sup> þat is biter. and be þo biternesse defendet 65  
pet Cors pet is mide i-smered. pet no werm nel comme  
i-hende: signefiet þo gode werkes pet is biter to þo  
yemernesse of ure flesce. Si Mirre signefiet uastinge.  
for þo luue of gode wakie. go ine pelrimage. uisiti þe  
poure. and to sike. and to do alle þe gode pet me may 70  
do for godes luue. þo ilke pinges so bieth bitere to þo  
wrichede flesce. Ac al-so si mirre loket pet bodi pet no  
werm ne may per i-hende come: so us defendet þo ilke<sup>3</sup>  
pinges fram senne. and fram þe amonestement of þo  
dieule pet ha ne may us mis-do. Lordinges nu ye 75  
habbet i-herd þo signefiance of þo offringes pet maden  
þo prie kinges of hepenesse to gode. hye<sup>4</sup> habbet to gode  
i-offred of yure selure. and of yure erpliche godes. Ne  
ne offreth him nacht on-lepiliche to day. ac alle þo  
daies i þo yere gostliche. Gold. and Stor. and Mirre. 80  
ase hic habbe i-told. Gold: fore Gode belauē. Stor:  
for holy urisun. Mirre. for gode werkes. pet bieth þo  
offringes. pet ure louerd be-sekeþ aueriche daye þo  
cristenemanne. and werefore se *christenman* yef has  
lep: of-seruet þo blisce of heuene. And ihesu crist pet 85  
for us wolde an erpe bi [i]-bore. and anured of þo prie  
kinges of painime: he yeu[e] us his grace of þo holi gost  
in ure hertes wer-bi we moue hatie þo ileke pinges pet  
he hatedh. and lete þo ileke<sup>5</sup> pinges þat he for-biet. and  
luuie þo ilek<sup>5</sup> pinkes þat he luued. and do þo ilek pinges 90

<sup>1</sup> sic, but ? *biddinge*.

<sup>2</sup> MS *ileke*.

<sup>3</sup> ? and pet si *Mirre* (or *Bi pet*, &c.).

<sup>4</sup> sic ? *ye*.

<sup>5</sup> read *ilke*.

pat he hóót. ine him so bileue and bidde and serui.  
 pet we mowe habbe þo blisce of heueriche. *Quod uobis  
 presture dignetur per.* [&c.]

## DOMINI[CA] SECUNDA POST OCTAVIAM EPIPHANIE.

## SERMO EUAN.

95

Nuptie facte sunt in chana \*galiléé. *et erat mater ihesu*  
 ibi. *Vocatus est autem ihesus ad nuptias et discipuli*

[\* Fol. 130.]  
 The marriage in  
 Cana of Galilee.

eius. ¶ pet holi godspel of to day us telp. pet a bredale  
 was i-maked ine þo londe of ierusalem. in ane cite pat

160 was i-cleped Cane in þa time pat godes sune yede in erþe  
 fles[ch]liche ac.<sup>1</sup> To þa bredale was ure leuedi seinte

Jesus, his mother,  
 and disciples  
 invited to the  
 'bridale.'

Marie. and ure louerd ihesus crist and hise deciples. so  
 iuel auenture pet wyn failede. at pise bredale. þo seide  
 ure leuedi seinte Marie. to here sune. hi ne habbet no

Wine failed.

105

wyn. And ure louerd answerde and sede to hira. Wat  
 be-longeth hit to me oþer to þe wyman. Nu ne dorste  
 hi namore sigge. ure lauedi. Hac hye spac to þo serganz  
 pet seruede of þo wyne. and hem seyde. al pet he hot  
 yu do! so doþ. And ure louerd clepede þe serganz and

Jesus bids the  
 servants fill six  
 water-pots with  
 water.

110

seyde to hem. Fol vellet ha seyde. þos Ydres. pet is to  
 sigge þos Cróós. oþer þos faten of watere. for þer were.  
 vi. Ydres of stone. pet ware i-clepede bapieres wer þo  
 gius hem wesse for clenesse. and for religiun. Ase þe  
 custome was ine þo time. þo serganz uuluelden þo faten

The water is  
 turned to wine.

115

of watere and hasteliche was i-went into wyne. bie þo  
 wille of ure lounderde. þo seide ure lord. to þo serganz.  
 Moveth to-gidere and bereth to Architriclin. pat was se  
 pet ferst was i-serued. And al-so hedde i-drunke of  
 pise wyne pet ure louerd hedde i-maked of þe watere:

It is served to  
 the governor of  
 the feast.

120

ha niste nocht þe miracle. ac þo serganz wel hit wiste.  
 pet hedde pet water i-brocht. þo seide Architriclin to þo  
 bredgume. Oþer men seyde he doþ forþ pet beste wyn  
 pet hi habbet ferst at here bredale. and þu hest ido þe

He says that the  
 best wine has  
 been kept back.

<sup>1</sup> MS has *flesliche ar*. It looks like *ar* inserted between  
 the lines.—G. P.

Thus was the  
belief of his  
disciples  
strengthened.

[\* Fol. 130 b.]

The water  
betokens the bad  
Christian.  
Water cools those  
that drink it, so  
is the wicked  
Christian's heart  
cold in the love of  
God on account  
of his evil work.

Wine is in itself  
naturally hot,  
and warms the  
drinker.  
It betokens all  
those that are  
inflamed with  
the love of God.  
On earth Christ  
once turned water  
into wine—many  
times hath he  
spiritually done  
so.

Let every man  
take note  
whether he is  
water or wine.

contrarie þet þu hest i-hialde þet beste wyn wat<sup>1</sup> nu!  
þis was þe commencement of þo miracles of ure loruerde 125  
þet he made flesliche in erþe. and þo beleuede on him!  
his deciples. Ine sigge nacht þet hi ne hedden þer be-  
fore ine him beliaue: ac fore þe miracle þet hi seghe:  
was here beliaue þe more i-strengþed. Nu ye habbeþ i-  
herd þe Miracle. nu i-hereþ þe signefiance. þet water bi- 30  
tockned se euele christeneman. \*for al-so þet water is  
natureliche schald and a-kelp alle þo þet hit drinkeþ:  
so is se euele christeman chald of þo luue of Gode. for  
þo euele werkes þet hi dop. Ase so is Lecherie. spus-  
breche. Roberie. Manslechtes. Husberners. Bakbiteres, 35  
and alle opre euele deden. þurch wyche pinkes man of-  
serueth þet fer of helle. Ase godes oghe mudh hit seid.  
and alle þo signefied þet water: þet þurch yemere  
werkes. oper þurch yemer i-wil liesed þo blisce of  
heuene. þet wyn þat is naturelliche hot ine him-selue 40  
and an-het alle þo þet hit drinked: be-tokned alle þo þet  
bied an-héet of þe luue of ure lorde. Nu lordinges ure  
lord god almichti. þat hwylem in one stede. and ine one  
time flesliche makede of watere wyn: yet habbeþ<sup>2</sup> mani-  
time maked of watere wyn: gostliche. wanne þurch his 45  
grace maked of þo euele manne good man. of þe orgeilus  
umblе. of þe lechur chaste. of þe nippinge large. and of  
alle opre folies: so ha maket of þo watere wyn. þis his  
si signefiance of þe miracle. Nu loke euerich man  
toward him-seluen. yef he<sup>3</sup> is win: þet is to siggen 50  
yef he is an-heet of þo luue of gode. oper yef he is  
water. þet is yef þu art chold of godes luue. yef þu art  
euel man: besech ure lorde þet he do ine þe his uertu.  
þet ha þe wende of euele into gode. and þet he do þe  
do swiche werkes þet þu mote habbe þo blisce of 55  
heuene. Quod uobis. prestare dignetur [&c.].

<sup>1</sup> MS *wath.*

<sup>2</sup> MS *hadep.*

<sup>3</sup> MS *he he.*

## DOMINICA TERCIA POST OCTAVAM EPIPHANIE.

- Cvm descendisset ihesus de monte. secute sunt eum  
 turbe multe. Et ecce leprosus ueniens adorabat  
 eum dicens. Domine si uis: potes me mundare. ¶ þet  
 holi godspel of to dai us telp. þet ure lord ihesus crist.  
 ase he hedde i-yue þo newe laghe. in one montayne.  
 and hedde i-maked þet formeste sarmun þet euerte made  
 in erþe: suo him folgede michel folk. Swo kam a  
 leprus. a sik man and onurede him and seyde. Lord.  
 \*lord ha seide yef þu wilt: þu me nicht wel makie hool  
 of mine lepre. of mine euele. And ure lord him seide  
 and spredde his hond. and tok his lepre: hic wille  
 seide ure lord þet þu bi clensed. and al-so raþe he was  
 i-warisd of his maladie. Nu lordinges þis is þe miracle  
 þet þet godspel of te dai us telp. ac great is þe tokningge.  
 Se leprus signefieþ<sup>1</sup> þo senuulle men. si lepre þo sennen.  
 þet scab bi-tokned þo litle sennen. si lepre be-tokned  
 þo grete sennen þet biedh diadliche. Ase so is lecherie.  
 spusbreche. Gaueling. Roberie. þefte. Glutunie. drunke-  
 nesse. and alle þo sennen þurch wiche me liest þo luue  
 of gode almichti and of alle his haleghen. þurch Scab  
 nis nacht man and wyman deseiuord fram mannes  
 felarede. Ne for þo litle sennen. þet no man hine ne  
 mai loki. nis noon deseu[e]rd pardurableliche fram gode:  
 ne fram holi chereche. for lepre is man deseu[e]rd of þo  
 compainie of gode and of alle his angles. þat is to sigge  
 for diadliche senn. Nu ye habbet i-herd þe miracle  
 and wet hit be-tokned. Nu loke we yef we bieþ clene  
 of þise lepre. þat is to siggen of diadliche senn. Se<sup>2</sup>  
 liest þe felarede of oper men: for se þet sterft inne  
 diadliche senn: so for liest þe compainie of gode. And  
 yef ye bieþ clene: lokeþ þet ye ne falle nocht. þet ye  
 ne bie deseuerd fram þe felarede of gode almichti.  
 þurch none euele werkes þurch none euele i-wil. And

After the sermon  
on the Mount,  
a leper came to  
Jesus beseeching  
him to heal him.

[\* Fol. 181.]

Jesus healed the  
leprous man.

Lepers denote  
sinners.  
Leprosy betokens  
great and deadly  
sins.

The scab betokens  
little sins.

The leper loseth  
the fellowship of  
men and the  
sinner loses the  
fellowship of God.

<sup>1</sup> MS *signefiez*.

<sup>2</sup> ? se *leprus*.

Pray to God for  
spiritual health,  
and for everlasting  
life.

yef ye bieþ leprus þurch diadliche senne. greded gode 191  
 Merci! þet þo leprus yaf helpe ine bodie! þet he us  
 yeue gostliche helpe. in ure saule. Comeþ to sriste for  
 leted yure sennen and þer of bieþ a-soiled. þanne sollie  
 habbe þo helpe of heuene. þat is lif with-uten ende. 195  
 Quod uobis. prestare dignetur. per. [&c.]

## DOMINICA QUARTA POST OCTAVAM EPIPHANIE.

The tempest on  
the sea of  
Galilee.

[\* Fol. 181 b.]

Jesus and his  
disciples went  
into a ship on the  
sea of Galilee.

A storm arose.

The disciples  
were greatly  
afraid, and woke  
Jesus, saying,  
Lord, save us, for  
we perish.

Jesus stilled the  
tempest.

This miracle  
ought to  
strengthen our  
belief.

Christ will  
succour us if we  
cry for mercy.

Ascendente ihesu in nauculam. secuti sunt eum  
 discipuli eius. Et ecce motus factus est magnus  
 in mari. Ita ut naucula operiretur fluctibus. Erat  
 autem illis: uentus contrarius. ¶ We redeth i þe 207  
 holi godspelle of to dai þat ure lord ihesu crist yede  
 one time into ane ssipe and ise deciples mid him in-to  
 þe séé. And so hi were in þo ssipe so a-ros a great  
 tempeste. of winde. And ure lord was i-leid him don 205  
 to slepe. ine þo ssipe. er þane pis tempeste a-róós.  
 Hise deciples hedde gret drede of þise tempeste. so [hi]  
 a-wakede hine. and seiden to him. lord saue us! for we  
 perisset. And ha wiste wel þet hi ne hadde nocht gode  
 beleaue ine him! þo seide to hem. wat dret yw folk of  
 litle beliaue. þo a-ros up ure lord and tok þane wynd 210  
 and to séé! and al-so rape hit was stille. And al-se þo  
 men þet weren in þo ssipe hedde i-seghe þo miracle so  
 awondrede hem michel. þis is si vaire miracle þet þet  
 godspel of te day us telp. þere-fore sál hure be-liaue  
 bio þe betere a-strengþed! Ine swiche lorde þet siche 215  
 miracle mai do and doþ wanne he wile. Ac hit is us  
 nyede þet se þet sucuredede hem ine þa peril! þet us  
 sucuri ine ure niedes. þet we clepie to him þet ha us  
 helpe. and he hit wille do blepeliche. yef we him  
 bisecheth merci mid good i-wille al-so him-seluen seith 220  
 bi þe holi writes. Salus populi ego sum. et cetera.  
 Hic am ha seiþ helere of þe folke. wanne hi to me  
 clepiedh ine hire sorghen. and ine hire niedes hic hi  
 sucuri and beneme hem al here enel with-ute ende.

225 Grede we to him merci sikerliche. yef se deuel us wille  
 a-cumbri purch senne. purch prede oper purch an-vie.  
 oper purh wreþe. oper purch oper manere of diadliche  
 senne grede we to him Merci. and sigge we him lord  
 sauue us þet we ne perissi. and þet he us deliuri of alle  
 230 eueles. and þet ha yef us swiche werkes to done in  
 pise wordle. þet þo saulen of us mote bien isauued a  
 domes dai. and gon to þo bliste of heuene. *Quod ipse  
 prestare dignetur.* [&c.]

Let us cry unto  
 him when we are  
 troubled by the  
 devil,

so that we may  
 be saved at  
 Doomsday.

## DOMINICA IN SEXAGESIMA. SERMO.

235 *S*imile est regnum celorum homini patrifamilias. qui  
 exijt primo mane *conducere operarios in uineam  
 suam.*

¶ Hure lord godalmichti to us spekeþ ine þo holi  
 godespelle of te day. and us seaweth one for-  
 240 bisne. þet yef we uilleth don his seruise. þet we  
 sollen habbe þo mede wel griat ine heuene. For se  
 seyth ure lord ine þo godspelle of to dai. þet on good-  
 man was. þat ferst uut-yede bi þe Moreghen for to  
 here werkmen in-to his winyarde. for ane peny of fore-  
 245 werde. and al so he hedde i-mad pise forewerde: so ha  
 sente hi into his wynyarde. so ha dede at undren and at  
 midday also. þo þat hit was a-yen þan euen: so ha  
 kam into þe Marcatte. so he fond werkmen þet were  
 idel. þo seyde he to hem. Wée bie ye idel: and hie  
 250 answerden: and seyde. lord: for we ne fonden te dai  
 þat us herde. Goþ nu ha seide se godeman into mine  
 wynyarde: and hic þat richt is: yu sal yeue. þos yede  
 into pise wynyarde. mid þo opre. þo þet hi wel euen.  
 þo seide þe lord to his sergant. Clepe þo werkmen and  
 255 yeld hem here trauail. and a-gyn to hem þat comen last.  
 and go al to þo ferste. yef eueriche of hem ane  
 peny. Se sergant dede þes lordes commandement. so  
 paide þo werkmen and yaf euerich ane peny. And so  
 hi segghen þo þet bi þe Morghen waren i-comen. þet hi

[Fol. 132.]  
 Parable of the  
 vineyard.

A 'good man'  
 went out in the  
 morning to hire  
 workmen into his  
 vineyard. Each  
 one was to receive  
 a penny.

At mid-day he  
 hired more men,  
 and again when  
 evening was nigh.

When evening  
 was come, the  
 lord bids the  
 'sergeant' call  
 the workmen,  
 and pay them  
 their hire.

Those who had  
 come first

received only as  
much as those  
who came last,  
wherefore they  
murmured.

Friend, said the  
good man, I do  
thee no wrong.  
Why grieveth it  
thee that I do  
my will?

Many are  
called, but few  
are chosen.  
The good man is  
God.  
The vineyard is  
our Lord's  
service.

[\* Fol. 132 b.]  
The times of the  
day are the ages  
of this world.  
The morning is  
the beginning of  
the world, when  
the patriarchs  
were employed in  
God's service.

Mid-day denotes  
Moses and his  
time undern—the  
time of the  
prophets.

The evening  
denotes the time  
of Christ's  
coming.

The idle men are  
the heathens.

þet waren last i-cume. Hedden here euerich ane peny? 26:  
þo wenden hi more habbe! þo gruchchede hi a-menges  
hem. and seyden. þos laste on ure habbeþ i-travailed.  
and þu his makest velaghes to us. þet habbeth al deai  
i-bye ine þine wynyarde. and habbetþ<sup>1</sup> i-poled þe  
berdene of þo pine. and of þo hete of al þo daie. þo 65  
ansuerede se gode man to on of hem. Frend ha seide  
ine do þe noon unricht. Wat for þingketþ þat hic do  
min i-wil! and al-so ure lord hedde i-told þise forbisne!  
so he seide efter-ward. so sulle þo uersto bie last; and  
þo laste ferst. Fele bieþ i-clepede! ac feaue bieþ i-275  
cornée. Nu i-hereþ þe signefiance. þes godeman! be-  
tockneþ god almichti ure lord. Se winyard be-tock-  
neþ. þe seruise of ure lorde. þe werkmen. be-tockneþ  
alle þo þet dqþ cristes seruise. \*þo tides of þo daie!  
be-tokneþ þe time of þis world. Bie þe Morghen i-275  
herde ure lord werkmen in-to his winyarde. þo ha  
sente þe patriarches. ate begininge of þis wordl[e]. ine  
is seruise. þet purch gode beleauée him seruede. and  
seden his techinge to alle þo þet hi hedden hit to siggen.  
Al-so at undren. and at midday. i-herede he werkmen 280  
into is winyarde. þo ha sente be þo time þet Moyses  
was and Aaron. and i þe time of his prophetes dede he  
mani god man in-to his seruise! þet purch griate luue  
to him helden. and deden his seruise. To-yehes þan<sup>2</sup>  
euen! godalmichti i-hierde werkmen in-to his win- 285  
yarde. þo þat he alast of þis wordle naam fles and  
blod ine þe Maidene seinte Marie. and seauede ine þis  
world. þo fond he Men. þet al day hedden i-be idel.  
Wherefore he fond þet heþen folk þet be þo time þet was  
i-go! hedden i-be ut of godes be-liaue. and of his luue. 290  
and of his seruise. Hi ne hedden nocht i-be idel for to  
done þo deueles werkes. Ac þere-fore seith þet godspel  
þet hedden i-be idel! þo þet hi nedden bi-leued ane god  
almichti. ne him louie ne him serui. For al þat is ine

<sup>1</sup> sic.

<sup>2</sup> MS þā.



- 205 pis wordle. þet man is. bote yef ha luue god almichti.  
 / and him serui: al hit him may penche for-lore and  
 idelnesse. þo a-resunede ure lord þe paens be ise apo-  
 stles. vre-fore hi hedden i-be so longe idel. þo þet hi  
 ne hedden i-be in his seruise: þo ansuerden þe paens:
- 210 þet non ne hedden i-herd hij. þet is to sigge þet hi ne  
 hedden neuer-te i-heed prophete ne apostle ne prechur.  
 þet hem seaude ne hem tachte hu [h]i solden ine gode  
 beleue ne him serui. Gop a seide ure lord into mine  
 Winyarde. þet is into mine beleaue. and hic yw sal
- 215 yeue yure peni þet is heueriche blisce. þo he-þen men  
 yeden be þa daghen into cristes seruise: and we þet of  
 hem bieþ i-cume. and habbeþ cristendom under-fonge:  
 bieþ i-entred in-to cristes seruise þere-fore we sollen  
 habbe ure peni þet is þe blisce of heuene. \*Al-so wel
- 220 ase þo þet comen bi þe Morghen. for also we hopieþ  
 for te habbe heueriche blisce: ase þo patriarches and  
 þo prophetes. and þo apostles and þo gode men þet  
 hwilem ine þis world godalmichti serueden. So as we  
 habbeþ i-seid of diuers wordles. þet god almichti dede
- 315 werkmen into his winyarde: so we mowe sigge of þo  
 elde of eueriche men. For god almichti deþ werkmen  
 into his winyarde bi þe Morghen. wanne ha clepeþ of  
 swiche þer bieþ into his seruise ine here childhede.  
 Wanne hi of þis world wendeþ. beswo þet hi ne be ine
- 320 no diadlich senne. At undren ha sent men into his  
 winyarde. þet a turneþ into his seruise. of age of man.  
 At Middai wanne þo dai is al þer hotestd be-tokned þo  
 men of xxx<sup>4</sup>. wyntre. oþer of furti. for þe nature of  
 Man is of greater strengþe and of greater hete ine þo
- 325 age. Se euen bi-tockneþ. elde of Man. þet is se ende  
 of þe liue. Vre lord deþ werkmen in-to his winyarde  
 a-genes þo euen: Wanne fele ine here elde wendeþ ut  
 of here senne in-to cristes seruise. As so<sup>1</sup> solle hi habbe  
 þo blisce of heuene: ase þo þet ferst comen into þe

No one had ever  
taught them.

The penny is  
heaven's bliss.

[\* Fol. 133.]

So may we all  
hope to have  
heaven's bliss.

Those who die  
young enter into  
the vineyard in  
the early  
morning.

Mid-day denotes  
the full age of  
man.

Evening is the  
end of life.

All shall have the  
bliss of heaven if  
they die not in  
deadly sin.

winnyarde. Nocht for þan for þise griate bunte þet ure 330  
 lord yefþ ne solde no-man targi for to wende to godal-  
 michti ne him to serui. for al so seid þet holi writ þet  
 non ne wot þane dai of his diaþe. for Man mai longe  
 d. p. 156 [liues wene and ofte him legheþ se wrench. Nu gode  
 men ye habbeþ i-herd þet godspel and þe forbisne. 325-  
 Nu lokeþ yef ye bieþ with-inne þo winnyarde. þet is  
 þet yef ye bieþ ine godes seruise yef ye bieþ with-ute  
 diadliche senne yef ye hatied þat he<sup>1</sup> hateþ. yef ye  
 luuieþ þet he luueþ. and doþ þet he hot. and bute  
 ye do! ye bieþ hut of his winnyarde. þet is ut of his 340  
 seruise. and ye doþ þet ure lord hóót. so ye of-serueþ  
 þane peni. þet is heueriche blisce. ye of-serueþ þet good  
 þet noon herte ne may i-þenche ne noon yare i-here ne  
 tunge telle. þo blisce þet god \*halt alle þo þet hine  
 luuieþ. þider lord granti us to cumene. Quod ipse 345  
 prestare dignetur. per. [&c.]

Unless ye obey  
 God ye shall be  
 put out of his  
 vineyard.  
 If ye do what God  
 bids you, ye  
 shall earn the  
 bliss of heaven.

[\* Fol. 133 b.]

Thither may our  
 Lord grant us  
 all to come.

[Follows :—*Sermo in quadragesima* ; (in Latin).]

MS *ho ho*.

## I.

## The Passion of our Lord.

[*Jesus College (Oxford) MS I. Arch. I. 29, leaf 217.*]

Ici cumence la passyun ihesu crist en engleys.

Incipit prologus.

**I**hereþ nv one lutele tale. þat ich eu wille telle.

As we vyndeþ hit iwite. in þe godspelle.

Nis hit nouht of karlemeyne ne of þe Duzeper.

Ac of cristes þruwinge. þet he þolede her.

**A**l volk wes to-dreued. so schep beoþ in þe wolde.

Lute ymvnda. hi hedde of gode. heore heorten weren so colde.

He þet is. and euer wes. in heuene myd his fadere.

Ful lowe he alyhte. for bryngen heom to-gadere.

**P**urst. and hunger. chele. and hete. þis beoþstronge pyne.

þeos he þolede al vor vs. þat turnde water to wyne.

brytty wyntre and more. he wes among Monkunne.

Seoþþe þat Mayde hyne yber. al wiþ-vte sunne.

**Þ**o he hedde so longe ibeo. ine wrecche lyue þisse.

He wes swyþe of-longed. to his fader blysse.

Nouht for þan þat he nedde. in his godcunnesse.

Ac he wolde þat we myd him. boþe more and lesse.

**H**eo habbe scolde. and so we Mvwe. ne þerfþ þer non adrede.

**Y**f we vs wyteþ from heued-sunne. and doþ al by his rede.

þe louerd þet alle þing ischop.<sup>1</sup> to þere blysse vs brynge.

**N**v bigynneþ vre tale. nys hit no lesynge.

Hear for a  
little while a tale  
I am going to tell  
out of the Gospel.

It is not of  
Charlemagne or  
his knights,  
but of Christ's  
Passion.  
All folk were  
scattered about as  
sheep.

To gather them  
together Christ  
came upon earth.

Thirty winters  
and more he lived  
among mankind.

Then longed he  
for his Father's  
bliss, which he  
desired that we  
should enjoy with  
him.

So we shall if we  
keep ourselves  
from deadly sins.

Now we begin  
our tale.  
It's no leasing.

<sup>1</sup> MS ischop.

**Her biginneþ cristes þrowynge .i. sa passyun.**

Lady! Thou  
did'at bear the  
best child that  
ever was born.  
Were it not for  
thy Son we had  
been wholly lost.

After his baptism  
in the Jordan by  
the prophet St  
John,

he was led up by  
the Spirit into  
the weald,  
for to be tempted  
by 'Satan the old  
one.'

There he was  
forty days  
without meat,  
[leaf 217, back]  
then came Satan  
and spake to him  
with false words.

He tempted him  
even as he had  
before tempted  
Adam.

But he knew not  
that Christ was  
both God and  
man.

'Get thee hence,'  
said Jesus to  
Satan, whereupon  
he left him.

Then angels came  
and ministered  
unto him.  
Then he began to  
preach; and  
chose twelve  
companions, of  
whom some were  
wise, but one  
betrayed him.

All men he taught  
to hold true love  
to God and to  
have love one to  
another.

Much folk  
followed him.  
Some to be healed  
of their sickness,  
and others to be  
fed;

there were some  
that followed him  
all for evil and  
for no good.

**L**Euedi þu bere þat beste child. þat euer wes ihore.

Of þe he makede his moder. vor he þe hedde yeóre.

Adam and his ofsprung. al hit were fur-lore.

Yf þi sune nére. iblessed þu beo þer-vore. 24

After þat he wes yuolled. in þe flum iurdan.

Of þe prophete þat hatte seynt iohan.

þe holy gost hyne ledde. vp in-to þe wolde.

For to beon yuonded. of sathanas þen olde. 28

þer he wes fourty<sup>1</sup> dawes. al wiþ-vte mete.

þo he hedde heom yuast. þo luste hym éte.

þer hym com sathanas. þat is ful of hete.

Mid his false wordes. he gon myd him to speke. 32

Aþre cunne wise. he vondi hyne bi-gon.

As he vondede Adam. and hyne ouer-com.

M[id] yuernesse and prude. and yssyng wes þat on.

He nuste nouht. þat he wes. boþe god and mon. 36

þo seyde iheru crist. þet is godes sune.

Ga abak sathanas. to hwan artu ycume.

Anon he hyne byleuede. more to vondy.

And þer comen engles. hym to seruy. 40

þo he bygon to prechi. wel mylde weren his dede.

He ches hym twolue yuére. myd him vor to lede.

Summe hi weren wyse. and duden al bi his rede.

Ac on hyne bitrayede. þat et of his brede. 44

Alle men he tauhte to holde treowe luue.

Erest to god almyhti. þat is vs alle abuve.

Seþpe to luuye his euenyng. al so hym seolue wolde.

And euervich beo to opre. boþe treowe and holde. 48

Mvchel volk hym vulede. wyte ye for hwon.

Summe to beon hole. of vuele þet wes heom on.

Summe for beon yuedde. of lykamlyche vode.

And summe al for vuele. and for none gode. 52

<sup>1</sup> MS forurty.

**M**en he helde. and wymmen. a vele kunne wise.

þe blynde he madeð loki. and þe dede aryse.

Dumbe speke. Deue ihere. and þe holte gon.

Swich leche bi-vore hym. ne com her neuer non.

þe Gywes and þe faryseus. þer-of hi hedden onde.

þat swich leche wes ycume. in-to heore londe.

Hi seyden. he is a smyþes sune. ne beo we noht his frend.

Alle his wndres þat he doþ. is þureh þene vend.

**V**or alle þe gode þat he heom dude. hi yolde him lupre mede.

Me seyþ his hwile he vor-leost. þat doþ for þe quede.

Al-so dude ihesu crist. vor vuele. he dude god.

þer-vore hi at þen ende. schedden his swete blod.

þo he com toward ierusalem. a palme sune-day.

Ne hedde he none robe. of fowe. ne of gray.

Ne he nedde stede. ne no palefray.

Ac rod vppe on asse. as ich eu segge may.

**A**s he com in-to þe burh. so rydinde.

þe children of þe tune. comen syngynde.

Iblessed hi seyde mote he beo. þe cumeþ on godes nome.

þe Gywes and þe fariseus. þer-of hi hedde grome.

þo he com to þe temple. and wolde prechi.

He vunde þer-ynne chepmen. þet were mody.

þeyh hi were prute. he heom vt drof.

þe bysþes and þe maystres. hi were swyþe wroþ.

**A**nd hym anon axede. hwy he so dude.

Vre louerd heom onswerede. anon yne þe stude.

Hit is iwrithe þat myn hus. is bede hus icleped.

And ye þeouene dich. hit habbeþ y-made.

þe maystres of þe temple. hi were swiþe prute.

For to vndernyme vre louerd. hi were euer ab-

If he ouht prechede. to-yeynes þere lawe.

þet heo hyne myhte wreye. and don of lyf-daye.

**A**s hit neyhlecheth to heore muchele feste.

Of alle þe twelfmoneþ. þat wes þe alre meste.

Hi nomen heom to rede. at heore motyng.

Jesus healed men and women; he made the blind to see, and the halt to go.

56 There was never such a leech as he. The Jews and the Pharisees were jealous of Christ.

They said he is a smith's (carpenter's) son — all his wonders are done through the fiend (devil). They returned evil for good.

The proverb says, — All Labour [leaf 218]

64 is lost upon the wicked. At last they shed his sweet blood. When Palm Sunday came he rode toward Jerusalem on an ass.

68

As he approached the city the children of the town came singing, 'Blessed be he who cometh in God's name.' Whereupon the Jews and Pharisees were angry. When Jesus came into the Temple he drove out the moody and proud chapmen.

76

And when asked why, he said, — 'My house is called the House of Prayer, but ye have made it a den of thieves.'

80

84 As the great feast of the Jews approached they took counsel together to slay him.

On Ho'y Thure-  
day at the Last  
Supper, Jesus  
speaks of his  
betrayal.

Hw hi myhten vre louerd. to þe deþe brynge. 88

At þe schere þursday. as ye mawen ihére.

þo vre louerd wes isethe. to his supere.

He byheold abute. myd swiþe veyre chere.

And seyde to his disciples. þat þo myd hym were. 92

On me scal bitraye. þat nv is vre yuere.

Iwis hym were betere. þat he ibore nere.

Eueruych lokede to opre. hi were sore of-dredde.

Hi nuste neuer bi hwich of heom. he hit iseyd hedde.

þo queþen his disciples. on after on. 97

Louerd hi seyden alle. hwo is so hardy mon.

þat durre. þe bytraye. of vs eueruych on.

We willeþ to þe deþe. alle myd þe gon. 100

þo seyde vre louerd crist. þat is ful of blysse.

Nymeþ gode yeme. þat ye nouht ne mysse.

Hwam ich biteche þat bred. þat ich on wyne wete.

He me schal bitraye. to nyht er he slepe. 104

He hit bitauhte iudas. þat alle hit myhte iseo.

þer he wes bivoren him. and set on his kneo.

He hit et blupeliche. and lokede ful brode.

And þe veond him on bi-com. myd þerylke snode. 108

Iudas þo onswerede. and spek myd vre dryhte.

Mayster. am ich þilke. þat þe wile so dyhte.

þu hit seyst queþ vre louerd. and dest al þine Mihte.

And he hym vt iwende. al bi þuster nyhte. 112

He com to þe Gywes. þer heo to-gadere were.

Al hym seolf one. nedde he nenne yuere.

And chepte heom to sullen. vre helare.

Hi were swiþe blyþe. for þere cheffare. 116

He queþ to þe Gywes. if ich so ispede.

þat ich bitraye ihesu. hwat schal beon my mede.

þrytty panewes hi seyden. hi beoþ alle irede.

Cumeþ mid me queþ iudas. and ich eu wile lede. 120

Cvmeþ swiþe myd me. boþe yonge and olde.

þene þat ich cusse. uaste ye hyne holde.

And ledeþ hyne warlyche. he con wndres monye.

[leaf 21r, back]  
His disciples were  
sore afraid, and  
said, 'Lord, who  
is he among us  
so hardy that  
durst betray  
thee?'

Jesus gives them  
to understand  
that Judas is the  
traitor.

The devil came  
into Judas as  
soon as he had  
taken the sop.

He went out and  
bargained with  
the Jews for the  
betrayal of Jesus.

Blithe were they  
for the chaffer.

Thirty pence he  
was to receive for  
his sin.

Come with me,  
said Judas, both  
young and old.  
Him whom I  
shall kiss hold  
fast—but beware  
of his wonders.

- If he nuþe eu askapeþ. eu schal sore schomye. 124  
 After þet iudas skariot. him wes vt igón.  
 Vre louerd nom his apostles. euervych on.  
 And forþ myd him ledde. to þe Munt of olyueta.  
 þer he to heom wordes spek. myd his Muþe swete. 128  
 Ye seggeþ alle queþ vre louerd. ye willeþ myd me deye.  
 To nyht eu schal scomye. þat ye me euere yseye.  
 Hit is write in þe bok. þer me hit may rede.  
 Vele wintre hit is ágo. þe prophete hit seyde. 132  
 Beo þe seopheorde aquold. and of lyue bireued.  
 þenne scule sone his seop. alle beon to-dreued :  
 After þat ich from deþe. eft aryse beo.  
 Ich wile bi-voren eu alle. cumen to Galyle. 136  
 Þo queþ seynte peter. þeyh alle of-schomed beo.  
 Ne schal me neuer schomye. louerd for þeo.  
 Peter. queþ vre louerd. nv þu seyst so.  
 Er hit beo day to morewe. al oþer hit schal go. 140  
 þu ne knowest nouht þi seolue. ac ich þe yknowe.  
 þu me schalt þryes fur-sake. er þe cok crówe.  
 Louerd queþ seynte peter. iwis hym wes ful wo.  
 þeyh ich to þe deþe. schulle myd þe go. 144  
 Oþer in-to prysune. hweþer hit wile by-valle.  
 Ic nele neuer þe vorsake. and so hi seyden alle.  
 Þo hi hedden al þis iherd. heo were ful sori.  
 Vre louerd myd heom iwende. to geth-semany. 148  
 Sepþe he to heom seyde. iblessed mote heo beo.  
 Sytteþ her þe hwile ich go. to abidde me.  
 He nom seynte peter. seynt Iame. and seynt ion.  
 He wes of-dred. of þe deþ. þet is god and mon. 152  
 Wel ouhte we beon aferd. if we wyse were.  
 And vre sunnes bete. þe hwile we beoþ here.  
 Iesus from heom iwende. þe wrp of o ston.  
 And gon hyne to abidde. al him seolf on. 156  
 Vader he seyde ihesu crist. if hit may so beo.  
 Of þis iiche calche. nv forber þu me.  
 If ich hine schal drynke. iworþe þine wille.

After Judas had  
gone out, Jesus  
took his disciples  
to Mount Olivet.  
[leaf 210]

Then said our  
Lord, Ye all say  
that ye will die  
with me—but to-  
night you will be  
ashamed ever to  
have seen me.  
For the Prophet  
hath said, Let  
the shepherd be  
slain, then shall  
the sheep be  
scattered.

After my death I  
will appear to you  
in Galilee.

Peter says that he  
will not forsake  
his Master if the  
others should do  
so.

'Thrice shalt thou  
betray me ere the  
cock crow.'

Then our Lord  
went with them  
to Gethsemane.

Then was he in  
fear of Death.  
We ought all  
to be afraid if we  
were wise.

Jesus leaves his  
disciples, and all  
alone, he prays  
to his Father :  
'Let this cup  
depart from me  
if it be Thy will.'

[leaf 210, back]

Then did he  
sweat drops of  
blood in his  
great agony.

Then came an  
angel to gladden  
him.

Jesus comes  
again to his  
disciples and  
finds them  
sleeping.

He tells them  
that Judas is  
coming to betray  
him.

Thereupon the  
Jews came from  
their moot with  
staves and other  
things.

Jesus said, Lo I  
am he whom ye  
seek, but let  
these others  
remain whole  
and sound.

[leaf 220]

Judas betrays  
Christ by kissing  
him.

He wyste þat þe Gywes. hyne þouhte spille. 160  
**A**s vre louerd hine ybed. he bi-gon to swete.  
 þat blod orn adun of hym. dropes swyþe grete.  
 þer com of heuene on engel. and stod hym vaste by.  
 Hyne vor to gladye. he wes ful redi. 164  
 þo he hedde hyne ibede. one gode stunde.  
 He com to his apostles. and heom a slepe funde.  
**S**lepestu he seyde symon. he wes on of þe þre.  
 Ne Myhtestu one tyde. wakien myd me. 168  
 Wakieþ and ybiddeþ eu. alle to-gadere.  
 þat ye ne cumen in vondinge. vp to myne vadere.  
 þe tyde is wel neyh icume. ich do eu to understonde.  
 And monnes sune biþ bi-tauht. in sunuulle honde. 172  
**A**riseþ vp he seyde. and vte we heonne go.  
 þer him cumeþ iudas. þat is my fulle i-vo.  
 He me hafþ to nyht isold. euer wrþe him wo.  
 And alle þat oþer bitraye. nv and euer-mo. 176  
**N**edde he bute þet word iseyd. iudas him com þrynge.  
 Mid Gyues. and myd phariseus. from heore motyng.  
 Mid speres. and myd stauess. and oþe vele þinge. *oþer ?*  
 Lutle luue hi beren. to þen heuene kyng. 180  
 Iesus com to-yeynes heom. myd alle his iver.  
 And he to heom seyde. hwam ye seche here.  
 Heo hym onswerede. *ihesum* nazaren.  
**I**hesuc heom to seyde! lo ich hit em. 184  
**Y**f ye me secheþ. her ich am yfunde.  
 Leteþ þeos bileuen. hol and isunde.  
 Ne schullen hi nouht yete. polie none wnde.  
 þe Gywes myd þon worde. veollen to þe grunde. 188  
 Iudas com avoreward. þet al þat baleu wrouhte.  
 Mid Gywes. and oþer volke. þat hē myd hym brouhte.  
 Heyl he seyde mayster. to *ihesuc* þat hi souhte.  
 And hyne myd Muþe custe. as he non vuel ne þouhte.  
**F**reond seyde *ihesu* crist. to hwan er-tu yeume. 193  
 Mid þine valse cosse. þu trayest monnes sune.  
 þe Gywes vp asturte. þat leyn in þe grunde.



- And nomen anon ihesu crist. and hyne vaste bunde.  
 Seynte peter hedde o swerd. and he hit vt drouh. 197  
 And smot of Malkes ere. and nouht hyne ne slouh.  
 þo iseyh ihesu crist. þat peter so dude.  
 Put in he seyde þi sweord. anon in þe stude. 200  
 Ne mot ich nouht drynke peter vor þe.  
 þene calch þat my vader. haueþ y-yeue me.  
 Seoppe him spek ihesu crist. iheried beo his Mihte.  
 And seyde to þe Gywes. (nolde he nowiht vyhte) 204  
 Mid sweordes and myd bottes. ye beoþ her icume.  
 So me doþ to þeoue. þat schal beon ynume.  
 Vyche day in þe temple. wes myne ywune.  
 To techen eu godes lore. þer ye were summe. 208  
 Nes þo non so hardy. þat on me leyde honde.  
 Bute nv by nyhte. þet is for muchel onde.  
 Peter iseyh þe Gywes. vre louerd vaste bynde. 211  
 Anon he drouh hyne abak. and eode heom by-hynde.  
 Leste he were iknowe. he wes swiþe of-dred.  
 Nopelas he wolde iwite. hwuder he were iled.  
 Þe Gywes nomen ihesu crist. and forþ hine ledde.  
 Of alle his apostles. nenne help he nedde. 216  
 Alle heo hyne byleuede. so sore hi weren of-dredde.  
 As vre louerd þer-by-vore. heom iseyd hedde.  
 Heo brouhte hyne to kayphas. al wyþ-vte ivere.  
 Heo wes heore biscop. in þen ylke yere. 220  
 Of alle his disciples. ne vulede hym neuer on.  
 Bute seynte peter. and on yong mon.  
 Ion hedde enne mantel. of cendal hym abute. 223  
 He wende in myd ihesu crist. and peter stod þer-vte.  
 For he wes iknowe. he wes more bold.  
 He stod bi þe fure. and wermd hym for þe cold.  
 He bed þene dureward. lete in his i-vere.  
 Hi wolden heore louerdas dom. iseon and ihere. 228  
 Þe dureward hine in lette. al wyþ-vte mede.  
 Peter stod myd þon opre. and wermede hym at þe glede.  
 Summe of þet þer weren. ykeneu seynt ion.

Then the Jews  
started up, took  
Jesus and bound  
him fast.

Peter smote off  
Malchus' ear,

but is rebuked by  
Christ.

'Ye come,' says  
Jesus to the Jews,  
'with swords  
and with staves  
as if to take a  
thief.

Each day I  
taught in the  
temple and yet  
ye laid not hands  
upon me.'

When Peter saw  
the Jews bind  
our Lord he slunk  
behind—he was  
much afraid lest  
he should be  
known.

The Jews led  
Jesus forth,  
but no help had  
he of his disciples.

He was brought  
before Caiaphas,  
who was their  
bishop.

[leaf 220, back]

Peter and John  
alone followed  
him thither.

Some tried to  
detain St John,  
but he escaped  
from them and  
fled naked away.

And nom<sup>1</sup> him by þe mantel. þat he hedde vp-on. 232

He bileuede his mantel. in þes Gywes hond.

And him seolf al naked. at þere dure vt wond.

Er he were him at-broke. him þuhte ful long.

For þe dute of þe deþ. is swiþe strong. 236

Þo vre louerd wes ibrouht by-vore kayphas.

þet mayster and byscop. in þan yere was.

The Jews swore  
falsely against  
our Lord in order  
to secure his  
death.

þe princes and þe phariseus. hi were swiþe blyþe.

þo heo iseyen ihesu crist. hi þouhte hyne do of lyue. 240

A ueole kunne wise. hi lowen him vp-on.

To brynge hyne to deþe. hi nusten vor hwon.

Two false  
witnesses arose  
who testified that  
Jesus had said  
that he would  
destroy Solomon's  
temple and the  
third day rear a  
new one.

Per aysen tweyne and bigunne to speke.

þes seyde hwat he wolde. þe temple al to-breke. 244

þat þe kyng salomon. makede ful yere.

And þene bridde day. him seolf a newa a-reäre.

þis we iherde. her-of we bereþ witnesse.

þo onswerede. þe more. and þe lasse. 248

þeyh he nedde no more ydo. he ouhte hit for-beode.

'All his wonders  
are done through  
the devil.'

Al his wndres þat he doþ. is pureh þene queda.

Cayphas spek to ihesu crist. he þouhte hine derye.

Ne herestu hwat þeos seggeþ. hwy neltu onswerye. 252

Ihesuc hym wes stille. nolde heo nowyht speke.

He Mihte if he wolde. ful sone hyne awreke.

Seoppe he hym axede. of his techinge.

And of his disciples. and feole oþer þinge. 256

Vre louerd hym onswerede. myd swyþe veyre speche.

Ofte in þe temple. ich wes iwuned to preche.

Al by lyhte daye. þer men hit Mihte ihere.

And þu and oþre ynowe. þat weren þine iver. 260

Hwat ich to heom seyde. wel wyten heo.

Iwyte at heom þat hit iherde. and nouht ne axe me.

þer leap forþ o gadelyng. as ye Mawen ihere.

And smot á-non ihesu crist. anvrnder þat ere. 264

Hit is þe byscop he queþ. schal-tu so onswerie.

He is þe hexte of þere lawe. we hyne willeþ werie.

Then leapt there  
forth a wretch  
and smote Jesus  
under the ear.

'It is the bishop  
to whom thou  
speakest, the  
highest of our  
law, and we will  
protect him.'

<sup>1</sup> Originally written monye.

- Ihesuc** to hym seyde. and yef hym onswere.  
 If ich habbe vuele iseyd. witnessse þu myht bere. 268  
 And if ich habbe wel ispeke. þer-of þu nym gome.  
 And nouht me vor to beten. al wyþ-vte dome.  
 Þe Gywes þat heolde **ihesu crist**. Muchele schome him dude.  
 Blyndfellede. and spatten him on. in þen ilke stude. 272 Then the Jews  
blindfolded Jesus,  
and spat on him,  
and smote him.  
 And smyten vnder þat ere. and þus to him seyde.  
 Hwo is þat þe smot þo. constu hit arede.  
 Muchele schendnesse. hi duden vre dryhte.  
 For bryngen hyne to deþe. hi duden heore myhte. 276  
 Peter stod bi þe fur. he wes swiþe of-dred. Peter stood  
warming himself  
without, by the  
fire.  
 He iseyh hw **ihesu crist**. wes vuele biled.  
 þer com o schelchene gon. þat wes myd kayphas.  
 Heo by-wste þe dure. þer al þat mot was. 280  
 Heo byheold peter. and seyde to heom þat sete.  
 Iwis þes is myd **ihesu**. þene valse prophete.  
 Peter þo onswerede. ne yknowe ich hyne nouht.  
 Neuer er ich hyne ne yseyh. þu ert mys-by-þouht. 284  
 Sone her-after. on oþer þer com gon. [leaf 221, back]  
 And seyde. siker þu ert myd him. a galilewis mon.  
 Mon. queþ seynte **peter**. y not hwat seyst þu.  
 Ne ikneu ich hyne neuere. ne y-seyh bute nv. 288 but thrice he  
denies all  
knowledge of his  
master.  
 þo onswerede on oþer. þet wes hire yvere.  
 He wes Malkes kunes-mon. þet peter smot of þat ere.  
 Iwis þu were myd **ihesu crist**. in þe leyhtune.  
 Ich iknowe þe ful wel. þer he wes y-nume. 292  
 Peter at-sok and seyde. awaryed mote heo beo.  
 þat euer hyne iknewe. ich segge vor me.  
 Nedde he bute þet word iseyd. þe cok crowe bi-gon.  
**Ihesuc** hyne bywende. and lokede him vp-on. 296 Then the cock  
crew, and Jesus  
turned and looked  
at Peter,  
 Peter. a-non þer-after. hyne vnder-stod.  
 Hwat his louerd hedde iseyd. he wes sori-mod.  
 Anon he vt iwende. and bigon to wepe. 299 who thereupon  
went out and  
wept bitterly.  
 þeyh he hedde his louerd fur-sake. he þouhte for to bete.  
 Anon an ernemorewe. so sone so hit wes day.  
 Hi comen alle to-gadere. as ich eu seggen may.

On the morrow  
they brought  
Jesus to their  
moot-house.

Art thou  
Christ? they  
said.

'Ye will not  
believe me though  
I speak the  
truth,' said Jesus.

'Ye think to kill  
me, but I shall  
ascend into  
heaven, and shall  
come again to  
judge you all.'

'Then thou art  
God's Son,' they  
said.

Then Caiaphas  
rent his  
garments, and

[leaf 222]

they all declare  
Jesus to be  
worthy of death.

They brought  
him then to  
Pilate,

and accused him  
of breaking  
their laws, and  
of calling himself  
God's Son.

Pilate says that  
he finds no fault  
in Christ.

þe Gywes and al þat oþer volk. hi weren swiþe vouse.  
And brouhten vre louerd crist to heore mothuse. 304  
Heo him to seyden. nv þu ert her ibrouht.  
Say vs nuþe if þu ert crist. þat we habbeþ isouht.  
Vre louerd heom onswereda. þeȝh ich eu segge soþ.  
Ye nelleþ me nouht ilæue. ich hit wot inouh. 308  
If ich eu ouht axi. ye nelleþ me nouht telle.  
Ne lete me gon quite. ye þencheþ me to quelle.  
þer-vore ich ine heuene. schal sytte by myne vadere  
And seþþe cumen and deme. eu alle to-gadere. 312  
þo sayden hi alle. þenne er-tu godes sune.  
Ye hit seggeþ for ich hit am. þer-vore ich am ynume.  
Þis iherde kayphas. his weden he to-brek.  
And seþþe to þen volke. þeos wordes he spek. 316  
Hwat abyde ye nuþe. to habben mo wytnesse.  
Alle ye habbeþ þis iherd. þe more and þe lessa.  
Hw he haueþ her ispeke. hwat is eur red.  
Alle hi onswerede. he is wrþe to beo ded. 320  
Seþþe hi alle arysen vp. and forþ hyne ledde.  
Of þe kynges of heuene. none reuþe hi nedde.  
Heo brouhten hyne to pylates. þet wes heore herre.  
Herkne nv hi seyden. we nelleþ þe nouht bicherra. 324  
þesne mon we funde. vorbeoden vre lawe  
þat we nv and vre eldra. heolde by olde daye.  
Muchel of vre volke. he haueþ iturnd þer-from.  
He seȝþ þat he is godes sune. and is a dedlich mon. 328  
And he vor-beod cesares gael. of alle kunnes þing.  
He yelp to-vore vs alle. þat he is vre king.  
Pilates queþ to ihesu crist. seȝe þu me soþ  
Yf þu ert gywene kyng. oþer hi habbeþ woh. 332  
þu hit seyst queþ vre louerd. þat ich am godes sune.  
Inot for hwicche gulte. hi me habbeþ inume.  
Pilates him vt iwende. þer-after ful sone. 335  
He seyde. hwat haueþ þes mon i-do. þat is ibrouht to me.  
þe Gywes him onswereden. if he nedde mys-do.  
Nere he nouht for vs inume. ne ibrouht þe to.

- Pylates heom to seyde. after eure lawe.  
 þat ye nv habbeþ. and heolde bi olde dawe. 340  
 Demyþ hyne nuþe. oþer leteþ hyne beo.  
 Nenne gult of deþe. ich on hym i-seo.  
 Þe Gywes onswerede. after vre lawe.  
 We ne mote nenne mon. do of lyf-dawe. 344  
 Pilates eft iwende him in. þer vre louerd stod.  
 þe gywes were ful bysie. to scheden his blod.  
 Pilates clepede vre louerd. and þus hym seyde to.  
 þu ert gywene kyng. þeyh hi þe schome do. 348  
 Vre louerd him onswerede. (iblessed mote he beo)  
 Hweþer seystu hit þi seolf. oþer oþre hit seyde by me.  
 Pilates hym onswerede. am ich Gyv þenne. [leaf 222, back]  
 þe bysþes þe me bitauhte. and mo of pine Menne. 352  
 Hwat hauestu i-do. for hwan ertu i-nume.  
 Ihesuc him onswerede. seynte Marie sune.  
 Yf Mi kyneriche were ine worlde þisse.  
 Mine men wolde wyþstonde. wite þu myd iwisse. 356  
 þat ich nere nouht bi-tauht. in gywene honde.  
 Ac my kyneriche. is in oþer londe.  
 Pilates þo him seyde. þenne er-tu kyng. 359  
 þu hit seyst queþ vre louerd. nabbe ich non euenyng.  
 Ich þer-on am ibore. and to þis world i-cume.  
 And bere witnesse of soþe. þer-vore ich am i-nume.  
 Alle þat beoþ in soþe. i-hereþ myne word.  
 And heo wel atholdeþ. and leggeþ ine hord. 364  
 Þo seyde pilates him to. hwat is soþnesse.  
 Vre louerd ne onswerede. more ne lesse.  
 Pilates eft vt eode. and bileuede ihesus.  
 And com to þan volke. and seyde to heom þus. 368  
 Ine vynde nenne gult in þisse monne.  
 Hit is eur kustume. to habbe quyt enne.  
 At eure Muchele feste. euervyche yere.  
 Schal ich þere gywene kyng. lete gon al skere. 372  
 And hi alle gradden. pilates vp-on.  
 Nouht hyne hi seyden ac yef vs barraban.

The Jews say  
that by their  
law Jesus is  
worthy of death.

Pilate again  
questions Jesus.

Jesus says his  
kingdom is not an  
earthly one,  
but is in other  
lands.

He is a king, and  
has no equal.

He says that he  
came as a witness  
of the truth.

Pilate says,  
'What is truth?'

Pilate comes  
again to the Jews  
—'I find no  
guilt in this man,'  
he says.  
'Shall I let your  
king go?'

'No,' said they,  
'but give us  
Barabbas.'

Then Pilate bad  
Jesus to be  
scourged.

They stript him,  
and put a red  
cloth on him,  
and put a reed in  
his hand, and did  
obedience unto  
him.

[leaf 223]  
They set a crown  
of thorns on his  
head, and said,  
Hail, king of the  
Jews.

Pilate again offers  
to release Jesus.

But the Jews  
cried out,  
'Crucify him,  
Crucify him.'

Pilate again  
questions Jesus,  
who remains  
silent.

Pilate says that  
he has power to  
release Jesus, or  
to put him to  
death,

Barraban wes a peof. þer-vore he wes i-nume.  
And myd oþer þeoues. i-do ine prysune. 376  
Pilates nom þo ihesu crist. and hyne heyhte bete.  
þat al his swete likame. of blode gon to swete.  
þe knyhtes hyne nomen. and in hyne ledde  
And duden al of his cloyes. þet he on hym hedde. 380  
Seppe hi nomen a red clop. and duden him a-bute.  
And one yerd on his hond. and gunnen him a-lute.  
Of one wrase of þornes. he wrypen hym one crune.  
Of þan alre kennuste. þat grewen in þe tune. 384  
Hi setten heo on his heued. and vaste þer to-beote.  
On eueryche halue. þat blod gon vt yeote.  
Seppe hi knowede and seyde. hayl gywene king.  
And smyten vnder þat ere. ne sparede hi no þing. 388  
Pilates eft vt eode. and to þe gywes seyde.  
Lo her ich brynge þisne mon. and to-vore eu lede.  
Ich nenne gult ne vynde on him. i do eu to vnderstonde.  
He wuste þet he wes i-nume. vor heore muchel onde. 392  
Vre louerd ber his crune. and com him vt gon.  
Lo seyde pilates. her is þes ilke mon.  
þe byspes and þet oþer volk. gradden him vp-on.  
Do a rode do a rode. hi seyden. hyne a-non. 396  
Pilates þo onswerede. and þus heom seyde to.  
Nymeþ hym eu seolue. and on rode do.  
þe gywes hym onswereden. we habbeþ vre lawe.  
þer-after he schal beo i-don. vt of lyf-dawe. 400  
Vor he makeþ him godes sune. we holdeþ hyne a-med.  
Pilates þeos word iherde. þo wes heo more of-dred.  
He iwende eft ayeyn. þar he wes ere.  
And axede þo ihesu crist. hwenene heo were. 404  
Vre louerd ne yef nenne onswere. ac stod him al stille.  
He myhte sone hyne awreke. if hit were his wille.  
He ne onswerede hym nowiht. iblessed beo he.  
Pilates to hym seyde. þu ne spekest nouht wiþ me. 408  
Nostu þat ich habbe myhte. on rode to do þe.  
And ich habbe myhte. to lete þe quyte beo.

- Vre louerd him onswerede. neddestu none myhte.  
 Me vor do to deþe. myd wowe ne myd rýhte. 412  
 Bute hit were þe iyene. wite þu to iwisse.  
 Of him þat is. vs alle abuue. in heueryche blysse.  
 Vor þan he more sunne hafþ. nuþe of me.  
 He þat me bitrayde. and seþþe bitauhte þe. 416  
 Per-after pilates þouhte. to 'leten hyne go.  
 Ac þe gywes him seyden (euer wurþe heom wo)  
 If þu pysne bileuest. and hine letest so.  
 Ner-tu nouht cesares freond. ac ert his ivo. 420  
 Eueruych mon þat makeþ hym king. we hit seggeþ þe.  
 He wyþ-seyþ cesare. no king nys bute he.  
 Pilates ladde vt ure louerd. he nolde no leng abyde.  
 þet wes a longe vryday. at þare sixte tide. 424  
 And seyde to þon gywes. lo her eur kyng.  
 Do hine away hi gredden. an-hong an hyng.  
 Pilates heom onswerede. and þus heom seyde to.  
 Wille ye þat eur king. on rode beo i-do. 428  
 þe bispes þo onswereden. and seyden to him þar.  
 We nabbeþ nenne oþer king. bute cesar.  
 Pilates nom þo vre louerd. and heom bitauhte on honde.  
 Heo hine bitauhte knyhtes. þat duden him muchele  
 schonde. 432  
 þe knyhtes þet hine ledden. bitauhten him þe rode.  
 þer-on he deþ þolede. and bouhte vs myd his blode.  
 He ber heo on his schuldre. toward þan ilke stude.  
 þat hatte kaluarie. þer-on hi hine dude. 436  
 Þo he wes on þe rode idon. þe gywes were ful gled.  
 Hi nome tweý þeoues. þat weren myd him iled.  
 þene enne hi honge in one half. for to don him teone.  
 And on bi þat oþer half. and ihesuc heom bitweone. 440  
 Vre louerd þo þis seyde. þat is ful of sop.  
 Vader vor-yef heom þisne gult. hy nvten hwat hi dop.  
 Þo ihesuc wes vppe þe rode. þat þolede pyne strong.  
 þe knyhtes nome his cloþes. to delen heom a-mong. 444  
 þo funden heo his curtel. þat he wes al ihol

but Jesus replies  
 that all power  
 comes from  
 above.

[leaf 223, back]

Pilate was  
 desirous of  
 letting Jesus go,  
 but the Jews  
 said, 'Thou art  
 not Cæsar's  
 friend if thou  
 lettest this man  
 off.'

Hang him, hang  
 him, said they,

for we have no  
 king but Cæsar.

Then the soldiers  
 led Christ to  
 Calvary. He  
 bore his own  
 cross.

Two thieves they  
 hung with him—  
 one on each side.

'Father, forgive  
 them,' said our  
 Lord, 'for they  
 know not what  
 they do.'  
 The soldiers cast  
 lots for his  
 garment.

[leaf 224]

The Jews mocked  
our Lord while  
he was on the  
cross.

Even one of the  
thieves said,  
'Christ, help  
thyself and help  
us also.'

The other thief  
rebukes his  
fellow, and  
beseeches Christ  
to think of him  
when he comes to  
his kingdom.

'To-day,' said  
Jesus, 'shalt  
thou be in  
Paradise with  
me.'  
Pilate wrote  
above the cross,  
'This is Jesus of  
Nazareth, the  
King of the  
Jews.'  
It was written in  
Hebrew, Greek,  
and Latin.  
The Jews  
murmur about  
the super-  
scription, but  
Pilate refuses to  
alter it.

[leaf 224, back]

Hi nolden þer-of makie. nones cunnes dol.  
Ac hi casten heore lot. hwes he scolde beo.  
Hi nolden hyne nouht delen. a to ne a þreo. 448  
Ðe princes and þet oper volk. hokerede him vp-on.  
þes hi seyde haueþ iheld. mony en oper mon.  
Crist þet oper hauest iheld. kyng of yrahel.  
Help nv þi seolue. for þu myht ful wel. 452  
Yf þu ert so myhti. so þu seyst þat þu beo.  
lyht a-dun of þe croyz. þat we hit alle iseo.  
On of þe þeoues þat him heng by.  
He seyde to vre louerde. and gon him hokeri. 456  
Crist help þi seolue. and eke help vs.  
þe oper him onswerede. and to him seyde þus.  
Ðv nert wrecche of góde of-dred. þat her ert anhonge.  
We after vre gultes. mede habbeþ yuonge. 460  
þes<sup>1</sup> þet vppe þe rode is neuere vuel ne dude.  
He seyde to vre louerde. a-non in þe stude.  
[L]ouerd he seyde þench on me. and bi-gon to syche.  
Hwenne þu cument to heuene. þer is þi kyneriche. 464  
Ihesuc him onswerede. soþ ich segge þe.  
To day in paradyse. þu schalt beo myd me.  
Pilates wrot him seolf. a wryt. al on hying.  
þar is ihesuc of nazareth. þe gywene kyng. 468  
Monye gywes hit radden. and were swyþe grym.  
Hit wes iwryten on ebreu. on gryv. and latyn.  
Ðe bispes of þe gywes. seyden pilates to.  
þu ne schuldest nouht þi wryt. habben iwryte so. 472  
Ne wryt þu nouht. her is þere gywene kyng.  
þeyh he seyde þat he hit wes. hit is lesyng.  
Pilates þo onswerede. and þus heom seyde to  
þet ich wrot beo iwryte. ne may hit nomon vn-do. 476  
Hit wes welneyh mydday. þo þusternesse com.  
In alle Middenherde. fort þet hit wes non.  
þe sonne bileuede hire lyht. and þe mone al so.  
þat huding-cloþ to-delde in þe temple a to. 480

<sup>1</sup> MS Wes.



Ihesuc him gon clepyen. myd<sup>1</sup> stefne uul stronge.

Vader ich myne soule biteche in þyne honde.

þo he hedde so yseyd. þat scop þe sunne and mone.

He deyede þer-after. wel swiþe sone.

484 Christ died soon after.

þet iseyh centurio þat þer bisydes stod.

Hw vre louerd gon deye. þat bouhte vs myd his blod.

The centurio that stood by said, 'Surely this man was the Son of God.'

He seyde to þe knyhtes. þat weren his iver.

Iwis þes mon wes godes sune. þet we iseoþ here.

488

þe gywes to pilates comen and þus him seyden to.

We biddeþ þat heore pyes. beon to-broken a to.

And seopþe let heom don a-dun. of þe waritreo.

Vor vre muchele feste to morewe schal beo.

492

Of þen one þeoue hi breken his pyes a to.

On account of the approaching feast they broke the thighs of the thleves, but when they came to Jesus they found him dead.

And of his yuere. hi duden al so.

þo heo comen to ihesu crist. and seyen hine ded.

Ne breken hi nouht his pyes. þe bok hit for-bed.

496

Hi bitauhte one knyhte. a sper on his hond.

therefore they brake not his bones. But a knight pierced his side, and blood and water out ran.

And setten to his syde. hit wes sarp and long.

He schef hit myd strenkþe. þat to his heorte hit com.

Boþe blod and eke water. þer-after vt ron.

500

þe ilke þat hit iseyh. he wrot þis god-spel.

þat he soþ segge. we leueþ hit ful wel.

þo hit wes wel neyh eue. ioseph þer com gon.

Of arymathia. he wes a riche mon.

504

He com to pilates. and sayde to him þus.

Yef me þes prophetes body. þat hatte iesus.

þo heyhte pilates. þat body him bi-teche.

Of vre louerd ihesu crist. þat is soule leche.

508

Ioseph nom vre louerd. a-dun of þe rode.

Pilate gave up the body of our Lord to Joseph of Arimathea.

And wond him on o cheysil cloþ. þet bouhte us mid his blode.

Seopþe he hyne leyde in one þruh of stone.

þat he hedde newe imaked. to him self one.

512

He hwelfde at þare sepulchre-dure. enne grete ston.

[leaf 225] Joseph laid him in a stone coffin.

Sepþe he wende forþ his way. hwer he hedde to gon.

A great stone they rolled to the door of the sepulchre.

<sup>1</sup> MS myst.

Pene oþer day þer-after. þat ihesuc crist wes ded.  
 þe gywes and þe phariseus. nomen alle enne red. 516  
 Hi comen to pilates. þen maystre of þe londe.  
 Louerd hi to hym seyde. we beoþ ynderstonde.  
 þes ilke swike seyde. for hwan we beoþ vnþlyþe.  
 Ich wile þene þridde day. aryse from deþe to lyue. 520

The Jews entreat  
 Pilate to set a  
 guard over the  
 sepulchre,  
 lest the disciples  
 should take away  
 the body of Jesus  
 and say that he  
 had risen.

Let wite þe sepulchre. fort þene þridde day.  
 þat his disciples hine ne stele. and beren hyne away.  
 And seggen to þe volke. þet beoþ of vre lawe.  
 He is aryse from deþe. þet gywes hedden islawe. 524  
 þenne wrþ þe laste dwele. wurse to alegge.  
 þene þe vorme were. hwat euere men segge.  
 Pilates heom onswerede. þat wes i-cume of rome.  
 Goþ nv and wyteþ. hyne. wel hyedliche and sone. 528  
 þe gywes þo uorþ wende. and nomen heore knyhtes.  
 To witen þe sepulchre. boþe a day and nyhtes.  
 Seþþe hi dude heore sel. vpe þene ston.

Soldiers are  
 appointed to  
 guard the  
 sepulchre.

Lutel hi wiste wrecches. hw hit sculde gon. 532  
 Þe gywes weren wode. þat yeuen þene red.  
 And wende holde ihesu crist. þeyh he were ded.  
 Nu wolden heo hyne at-holden. þat scop alle þing.

But Jesus rose  
 from the dead.  
 He broke hell's  
 door and over-  
 came their king.

Ne to-brek he helle dure. and ouercom heore king. 536  
 Iesus þo his wille wes. aros from deþe to lyue.  
 þeyh hyne bi-wusten knyhtes voure oþer vyue.  
 Hwý nolden hi hine at-holden. so þe gywes redde.  
 Ne hi ne myhten hyne iseon. so hi weren of-dredde. 540

The soldiers saw  
 an angel, and  
 fell down as if  
 dead at the sight.

[leaf 225, back]

Of þen engel þet þer com. þo hi iseyen þat lyht.  
 Hi vellen so hi were ded. a-non vorþ riht.  
 Iesus crist þet suo aros. þurh his muchele myhte. 543  
 And com in-to þis myddenerd. sunfulle men to ryhte.  
 Lete us so vre lyf. in þis world dihte.

Let us pray for  
 grace to confound  
 the devil, so that  
 we may have  
 eternal life  
 without end.

þat we mote alle cumen. to þan eche lyhte.  
 Bidde we alle leoue men. god þat is so hende. 548  
 þat he of þe holy gost. so vre heorte a-tende.  
 þat we mote at vre scrift. þane veond schende.  
 þat myd fule sunnes. vs þencheþ alle a-blende.

And yef þat eche lif. þat neuere ne haueþ ende.  
 Hwanne vre soule vnbynd. of lykamlyche bende. 552

**Her is hwon ihesu crist aros from depe to lyue.**

**S**ceoppe crist from depe aros. þet is of sunnes clene.  
 þe vorme þat he myd spek. wes Marie Maudeleyne.  
 þo heo com to his buryles. hyne for to seche. 555

The first that  
 Jesus spake to  
 after his  
 resurrection was  
 Mary Magdalene  
 that sought him  
 at the tomb.

Heo wende þat þe gywes hedde fur-stole vre soule leche.  
 Marie stod wip-vte þe dure. and sore wepe bi-gon.  
 þo heo ne funde nouht ihesu crist. þet wes hire leof-mon.  
 He adun stupede. and lokede myd eye.

If heo of vre louerde. ouht þer iseye. 560

þo seyh heo þer tway engles. myd hwhite cloþes and swote.  
 þe on set at þe heuede. þe oþer at þe vote.

She saw thore  
 two angels.

Wymmon hwi wepestu. hi seyden hire to.

For hi habbeþ myne louerd. i not hwer i-do. 564

'Why weepest  
 thou?' they said.  
 'Because,' said  
 she, 'they have  
 taken away my  
 Lord.'

Marie hire drouh abak. and lokede heo bi-hynde.

þo yseyh heo ihesu crist. þet heo þer wende vynde.

Vre louerd hire gon axi. for hwi and for hwan.

Looking behind,  
 Mary saw Jesus,  
 but knew him  
 not.

Wepestu. and hwam þu seche. say me wymmon. 568

Marie him onswerede. and þus him seyde to.

þe gywes habbeþ mynne louerd. of þisse stude i-do.

Ich not neuer hwydere. hi habbeþ hyne ibrouht.

þer-vore ich am ful sori. and habbe hyne isouht. 572

Haestu hyne away ibore. seye me gode mon.

And ich hyne vecche wille. al my seolf on.

[leaf 226]

Heo nuste nouht þat he hit wes. þet vre bendes to-brek.

Heo wende hit were þe leyhtunward. þat to hire spek.

Jesus revealed  
 himself to Mary.

Iesus þo nemde marie. and cudde hwat he wes. 577

Marie in hire lyue. neuere so blyþe nes.

Very joyful was  
 she.

Heo clepede hyne mayster. þet is rabony.

And fel to his fote. and bed hym mercy.

580

Thesuc spek to marie. and hire þo for-bed.

She fell at his  
 feet and cried for  
 mercy.

þat heo attrayne ne scolde. his honde ne his fet.

Ich ne astey nouht yete. vp to myne vadere.

Ac go to myne broþren. þer hi beoþ to-gadere. 584

Jesus bids her  
go to the  
disciples,  
and tell them  
that he is alive,  
and will ascend  
to heaven unto  
his Father.

Mary came to  
the disciples,  
and very glad  
were they on  
account of these  
tidings.

Ever as they  
stood and spoke  
of these things  
Jesus stood in  
their midst.

They thought  
that it was a  
spirit.

[leaf 226, back]  
Jesus bids the  
disciples examine  
and see that he  
is no spirit.

He showed them  
his hands and  
feet,

and ate of what  
they had at hand.

Often did our  
Lord appear and  
speak with his  
disciples.

Saye heom þat ich astye. to mynes vader riche.  
þer is my vader and eke heore. and ioie euer ilyche.  
After þet ihesu crist. myd marie hedde ispeke.  
Heo nolde vor none þinge. his heste þo to-breke. 588  
Heo com to his disciples. þer hi to-gadere were.  
Neuer of tydinge. hy er so glad nere.  
Heo seyde to heom þe wordes. þet hire heyhte ihesuc.  
And þat he wes from deþe aryse. and to me seyde þus.  
þo hi þis iherde. hi were swyþe blyþe. 593  
þat vre louerd wes aryse. from deþe to lyue.  
As heo stode and speken. and weren at wenyngre.  
Of vre louerd's aryste. and fele oþer þinge. 596  
Vre louerd ihesu crist. þe wes ibore. of þe meyde.  
He stod amydde heom alle. and to heom þus seyde.  
Sibsumnesse eu beo among. ne beo ye nouht of-dredde.  
Ich hit am þat her bi-vore. eu alle myd me ledde. 600  
Hi weren aferd and offrucht. and no wunder nes.  
Heo wenden þet hit were a gost. þat a-mong heom wes.  
Ihesuc to heom seyde. of hwan beo ye of-ferde.  
And beoþ in eure heorte. þouhtes fele a-rerde. 604  
Iseoþ nuþe boþe myne vét. and ek myne honde.  
þat ich hit am ihesu crist. þat her myd eu stonde.  
Hondleþ nv and iseoþ. þat gost naueþ none bon  
Ne vleys ne bon nouþer. as me is vp-on. 608  
þo he hedde so yseyd. he dude more yet.  
He schewede heom his honde. and so he dude his fet.  
Yet heo hit nyleuede. þe more ne þe lesse.  
Ac þuhte muche wunder. of heore gladnesse. 612  
Vre louerd ihesu crist. myd heom bi-gon to speke  
Habbe ye ouht here. þat mon may of ete.  
Hi hym bivore brouhten. of one visse ibred.  
And ek enne huny-comb. hi weren swiþe gled. 616  
Vre louerd nom and et þer-of. to-uore heom euervychone.  
And sewede þat he wes a-ryse. myd fleyse and myd bone.  
Aveole kunne wise. vre louerd him tok on.  
To schewen his apostles. þet he wes god and mon. 620

- Seopþe þat he wes a-ryse. from deþe to lyue.  
 þet vs alle bouhte. myd his wndes fyue.  
 Ofte he heom myd spek. þer hi weren to-gedere.  
 Er he wolde astyen. to heuene to his vedere. 624  
 He heyhte heom holde treowe luue. euerych to oþre.  
 As ich habbe eu yluued. for ye beoþ alle broþre.  
 Vre louerd heom bleu vp-on. þet alle þing con dyhte. he breathed upon them and had them receive the Holy Spirit.  
 Vnder-uongef he seyde. þe holiġostas myhte. 628  
 þeo þat ye aleseþ here. of heore sunnes bende.  
 Hi schulle beoþ vnbounden. euer buten ende.  
 And þeo þat ye her byndeþ. ine lyue þisse.  
 Hi beoþ euer ibunde. wyteþ ye myd iwisse. 632  
 Þo vre louerd astye wolde. from eorþe to heuene  
 He seyde to his apostles. hi weren elleouene.  
 Herkneþ alle to me. þe more and þe leste.  
 Ich eu wille senden on. mynes fader biheste. 636 and promised to send them the Comforter.  
 Sytteþ in þe burewe. and ich eu wille dihte.  
 Fort ye beon byweued. of heueliche myhte.  
 [leaf 227]  
 He seopþe heom vt ledde. in-to bethany.  
 And myd his swete honde. gon heom blessy. 640  
 þo he heom hedde iblessed. þat scop þe sunne and mone.  
 He astey to heuene. þer-after ful sone.  
 Hi stoden and biheolden. hw he to heuene asteyh.  
 Mid his swete moder. he wes hire heorte neyh. 644  
 Þer stoden twai veyre men. neren hi nouht ihud.  
 Ac were myd hwite cloþes. swyþe veyre iscrud.  
 And hi to heom seyden. men of galile.  
 Toward þare heuene. hwat bi-holde ye. 648  
 þe ilke sulue ihesuc. þat is from eu y-ume.  
 He wile hym sult eft-sone. hider to ev cume.  
 Mid fleysse and myd bone. as he heonne ywende.  
 He wile eft hider cume. þeos word he eu sende. 652  
 Þo heo þis iherden. hi turnden heom aȝen.  
 Mid muchele gladnesse. eft to iherusalem.  
 And weren in þe temple. god heryinde.  
 And þene king of heuene. euer blessynde. 656 Then the disciples went to Jerusalem, and were in the Temple praising God.

- At þon heye vndarne. a wit-suneday.  
 þer hi were to-gadere. as ich eu segge may.  
 And heryeden vre louerd crist. and heore bede sunge.  
 þe holy gost heom com vp-on. in fury tunge. 660  
 So sone so hi weren. of þe holy goste attende.  
 Heo alysen alle to-gadere. and vt heom iwende.  
 And speken godes wordes. hi weren swiþe gled.  
 Of none monne in eorþe. nere hi þo of-dred. 664  
 Þo were in iherusalem. as ich me vnderstonde.  
 Men wunynde. of alle kunnes londe.  
 þo heo iherden þe apostles. godes lore teche.  
 Eueruych þer vnderstod. his icunde speche. 668  
 Heo seyden heom bi-twenen. hwat may þis beo.  
 þeos men þat we heren speke. hi beoþ of galile.  
 And we iherden heom heryen. in heore preching.  
 After vre tunge. þen heoueliche kyng. 672  
 Seoppe in alle londes. hi eoden vor to prechen.  
 And for to fully þat folk. and godes lawe techen.  
 Hi nolden þo bileue. vor kayser. ne vor kynge.  
 Ne vor nore pyne. heore prechyng. 676  
 þer-vore heo iwenden. in-to alle londes.  
 And fullede kinges. eorles. and bondes.  
 And alle men and wymmen. þat wolde to heom cume.  
 And bileuen on ihesu crist. þet is godes sune. 680  
 þer-uore þe veond of helle. hedde muchel onde.  
 Vor hi by-nomen him saulen. in water. and in londe.  
 þer-vore he hine bi-þouhte. hw he don myhte.  
 And euer wes abute. bi daye. and bi nyhte. 684  
 Vor bryngen heom to deþe. þet spek myd his y-corene.  
 þat wes. Nerun. and Dacyen. and mo þet beoþ vor-lorene.  
 þeos nomen þe apostles. and heom to deþe dude.  
 And vre louerd heom vnderueng. a-non i þe stude. 688  
 Nv hi beoþ ine blisse. myd þon heuene kynge.  
 þat is heore mede. vor heore preching.  
 Bidde we alle ihesu crist. vor heore erndinge.  
 þat he vre saule. to þare blisse brynge. 692

On Whitsunday  
the Holy Spirit  
descended upon  
them, and they  
received the gift  
of tongues.

Men of all nations  
had the gospel  
preached to them  
in their own  
tongue.

[leaf 227, back]

They went into  
all lands and  
preached and  
baptized king,  
earl, and bond-  
man, whoever  
would believe on  
Jesus Christ.

Nero and Dacian  
persecuted the  
Christians,  
and put the  
apostles to death.

Pray God that he  
bring our souls  
to bliss.

Vor his swete moder lue. of hwam he vleyss nom.

He habbe mercy of vs. þat is god and mon.

And lete vs so her libben. in þisse wrecche lyue.

þat we moten to him cume. for his wundes fyue. 696

And he þat haueþ þis rym iwryten. beo hwat he oeo.

God in þisse lyue. hyne lete wel iþeo.

And alle his iveren. boþe yonge and olde.

God heom lete heore ordre. trewliche her holde.

þat hi mote to-gadere cume. to heueriche blysse.

Hwanne hi schullen to-party. vt of lyue þisse.

He þet alle þing ischop. þis vs graunty.

Vor his leue moder lue. seynte Mary.

And heo vre erende bere. so is hire ywune.

Mid alle oper halewe. to hire swete sune. Amen.

He who has  
written, be what  
he may—  
may God let him  
speed well in this  
life, and all his  
fellows, young  
and old; and  
may they come to  
heavenly bliss  
when they  
[leaf 228]  
shall depart out  
of this life.

704 May the Holy  
Mary bear our  
petition to her  
sweet son. Amen.

## II.

*Pænn a  
Moral Ode  
in MS. p. 385*

## A Moral Ode.

[Same MS, leaf 242.]

### Tractatus quidam in anglico.

My wit does not  
keep pace with  
my years.

**I**ch am eldre þan ich wæs a winter and ek on lore.  
Ich welde more þan ich dude. my wyt auhte beo  
more.

Wel longe ich habbe child ibeo. a werke and eke on  
dede.

þah ich beo of wynter old. to yong ich am on rede. 4  
Vnned lif ich habbe ilad. and yet me þinkþ ich lede.  
Hwenne ich me biþenche. ful sore ich me adrede.

I have been too  
much of a child.

**M**est al þat ich habbe idon. is idelnesse and chilce. 7  
Wel late ich habbe me bi-þouht. bute god do me mylce.  
Veole idel word ich habbe ispeke. seopþe ich speke  
cuþe.

Idle words have  
I spoken, and  
been guilty in  
word and deed.

And feole yonge deden ido. þat me of-þincheþ nuþe.  
Al to lóme ich habbe agult. on werke and on worde.  
Al to muchel ich habbe i-spend. to lutel i-leyd an horde.  
**B**est al þat me likede er. nv hit me mys-lykeþ. 13  
þe muchel foleweþ his wil. him seolue he bi-swikeþ.

(Mon let þi fol lust ouer-go. and eft hit þe likeþ.)

I might have  
done better had  
I been wise, but  
now old age  
prevents me.

Ich myhte habbe bet i-do. heuede ich eny selhþe. 16  
Nv ich wolde and i ne may. for elde. ne for vnhelhþe.  
Elde is me bi-stolen on. er þan ich hit wiste.  
Ne may ich bi-seo me bi-fore. for smoke ne for myste.  
Erewe we beoþ to donne gód. vuel al to þriste. 20



More eye stondeþ mon of mon. þan him to cryste.

þe wel ne doþ hwile he may. hit schal him sore reowe.

Hwenne alle men repen schule. þat heo ear seowe.

Dod to gode þat ye Muwen. þe hwile ye beoþ alyue. 24

Ne lipne no mon to muchel. to childe. ne to wyue.

þe him seolue for-yet. for wiue. oþer for childe.

He schal cumen on vuele stude. bute god him beo Milde.

Sende vch sum god bivoren him. þe hwile he may to  
heouene. 28

We shall reap  
what we sow.

Put not your  
trust in man, nor  
in any child of  
man.

Send some good  
before you to  
heaven.

Betere is on almes bi-noren. þane beoþ after seouene.

Ne beo þe leouere þan þi seolf. þi may ne þi mowe.

Sot is þat is oþer mannes freond. more þan his owe.

Ne lipne no wif to hire were. ne were to his wyue. 32

Beo vor him seolue vch mon. þe hwile he beoþ alyue.

Dis<sup>1</sup> is þat him seolue biþenkþ. þe hwile he mot libbe.

Vor sone willeþ him for-yete þe fremede and þe sibbe.

þe wel nule do hwile he may. ne schal he hwenne he  
wolde. 36

He is a fool who  
is a better friend  
to others than to  
himself.

He who will not  
do well while he  
[leaf 242, back]  
may, shall not  
be able when he  
would.

Mony monnes sore iswynk. ofte habbeþ vnholde.

Ne scholde nomon don a first. ne slakien wel to donne.

Vor mony mon bihotet wel. þat hit for-yetet sone.

þe mon þat wile syker beo. to habbe godes blysse. 40

Do wel him seolf þe hwile he may. þenne haueþ he hit  
myd iwisse.

Delay not to do  
good.

þeos riche men wenet to beon syker. þurh walles and  
þurh diche.

Ah heo doþ heore ayhte in siker stude. þat sendet hit  
to heoue-riche.

Rich men ween  
to be safe through  
wall and ditch,  
but heaven is the  
safest treasury.

Vor þer ne þarf. he beon adred. of fure ne of þeue. 44

þar ne may hit bynyme. þe loþe ne þe leoue.

þer ne þarf he beon of-dred. of yefte. ne of yelde.

þider we sendet and seolf bereþ. to lutel and to selde.

þider we schulde drawen and don. wel ofte and ilðme.

Ne may þer non hit vs bynymen. myd wrongwise  
dome. 49

We should send  
the best that we  
have,

<sup>1</sup> Read *Wis*.

for we shall find  
it again.

We should dis-  
tribute alms for  
the love of God.

No evil shall go  
unpunished, no  
good unrequited.

Every man may  
purchase heaven's  
kingdom, the  
poor man with  
his penny, the  
rich man with  
his pound.

[leaf 248]

A little offering  
is acceptable to  
God.

Nothing is hid  
from God's sight,

þider we schulden drawen and don. wolde ye me ileue.  
Vor þer ne may hit vs by-nyme. þe king. ne þe schirréue.  
Al þe beste þat we habbeþ. þider we schulde sende. 52  
Vor þer we hit myhte vinden eft. *and* habben .o. buten  
ende.

He þat her doþ eny god. to habbe godes ore.  
Al he schal vynde þer. an hundred folde more.  
þe þat ayhte wile holde wel. þe hwile he may him wolde.  
Yeue hit for godes luue. þenne doþ he hit wel iholde.  
Vre swynk *and* vre tyleþe. is iwuned to swynde. 58  
Ah heo þat hit yeueþ for godes luue. eft hit mowen  
ivynde.

Ne schal non vuel beon vn-bouht. ne no god vn-vor-gulde.  
Vuel we doþ al to muchel. god! lasse þane we scholde.  
þe þat mest doþ nv to góde. *and*(te)þe leste to laþe. 62  
Eyþer to lutel and to muchel. schal þunchen heom ef[t]  
to baþe.

þer me schal vre werkes weyen by-vore heouene kinge.  
And yeuen vs vre swynkes lean. after vre earnynge.  
Everuych mon myd þat he haueþ. may bugge heoueriche.  
þe riche and þe poure boþe. ah nouht alle ilyche. 67  
þe poure. myd his penye. þe riche myd his punde.  
þat is þe wunderlicheste ware. þat euer was ifunde.  
*And* ofte god con more þonk. ye þat yueþ him lasse.  
Alle his werkes. *and* his yeftes. is in ryhtwisnesse.  
Lvtel lok is gode leof. þat cumeþ of gode wille. 72  
*And* lutel he let on muchel wowe. þer þe heorte is ille.  
Heouene *and* eorþe he ouer-syhþ. his eyen beoþ so  
brihte.

Sunne. *and* Mone. heuene. *and* fur. beoþ þeostre. ayeyn  
his lyhte.

Nis him for-hole nowiht. ne ihud. so muchele beoþ his  
myhte. 76

Nis no so derne dede idon. in so þeostre nyhte.  
He wot hwat þenchep. *and* hwat doþ. alle quyke wyhte.  
Nis no louerd such is crist. ne king. such vre dryhte.

Heouene *and* eorþe. and al þat is. biloken is. in his honde. all is under his hand, 80

He doþ al þat his wille is. a waters. and eke on londe.

He makede fysses in þe sea. and fuweles in þe luft.

for he is the Creator of all things.

He wit and wald alle þing. and schop alle schafte.

He wes erest of alle þing. and euer byþ buten ende. 84

He is on ewiche stude. wende hwer þu wende.

He is buuen and bi-nepen. bi-voren vs and bi-hinde.

þe þat godes wille doþ. ichwer may him fynde.

Hvych rune he iherþ. þe wot alle dede. 88

He hears, sees, and knows all things.

He þurh-syhp. vych monnes þonk. wy hwat schal vs to rede.

þe þat brekeþ godes hes. and gultep so ilóme.

Hwat schulle we seggen oþer don. at þe muchele dome.

What shall we say or do at the great doom?

þe þat luueþ vnryht. and heore lif. vuele ledeþ. 92

We þat neuer god ne duden. þen heueneliche demep.

Hwat schulle seggen oþer don. þer engles heom drede.

Crist for his muchele myhte. hus helpe þenne and rede.

Hwat schulle we beren vs bi-voren. Mid hwan schulle we queme. 96

Devils shall be our accusers.

þe[r] schule beon deoulen so veole. þat wulleþ vs forwreye.

Nabbeþ heo nowiht for-yete. of al þat heo iseyen.

Al þat we mysduden here. heo hit wulleþ cuþe þere.

They keep a reckoning of our sins unless we have repented of them.

Bute we habben hit ibet. þe hwile we her were. 100

Al heo habbeþ in heore wryte. þat we mysduden hera.

þah we hit nusten. heo weren vre i-fere.

Hwat schulleþ horlinges don. þe swiken. and þe forsworene.

Swipe veole beoþ icleped. and fewe beoþ icorene. 104

Way hwi were heo bi-yete. hwi weren heo iborene.

þat schulle beo to deþe idemed. and euer-more forlorene.

Huych mon him seolue schal her. bi-cleopien. and ek deme.

[leaf 943, back] Each man shall be his own judge.

His owene werkes and his þouht. to witnesse hit schal teme. 108

His own works shall be his witnesses.

A man's own  
heart is his  
greatest witness.

Ne may him nomon deme so wel. iwis. ne al so ryhte.  
For non ne knoweþ so wel his þonk. bute vre dryhte.  
Vych mon wot him seolue best. his werkes and his wille.  
þat lest wot he seyþ ofte mest. and he þat al wot is stille.  
Nis no witnesse al so muchel. so monnes owe heorte. 113  
For so seyþ þat vnhol is him seolue hwat him smeorteþ.  
Vych mon schal him seolue deme. to depe oþer to lyue.  
þe witnesse of his owe werk. þer-to him schal dryue.

All men's sins  
are written in a  
book.

And al þat euer mon haþ idon. seppen heo com to  
monne. 117

Al so he hit iseye on boke iwryten. hit schal him pinche  
þenne.

Every man shall  
be deemed  
according to the  
end of his life.

Ne schal nomon beon ydemed. after his bigynnyng.  
Ah dom schal polyen vych mon. after his endinge  
If þe ende is vuel. al hit is vuel. god yef vs god ende.  
God yef vs vre ende gód. hwider þat he vs lende. 122

The evil man may  
well dread death.

þe mon þat neuer nule do god. ne neuer god lif lede.  
þat deþ cume to his dure. he may sore a-drede.  
þat he ne Muwe bidden ore. for þat i-tyt ilóme.  
Vor-þi is wis þat bit ore. and bet. bi-vore þe dome. 126

When death is  
at the door it is  
very late to ask  
for mercy.

Hwenne deþ is at þe dure. wel late he bit ore.  
Wel late he leteþ þat vuel. þenne he ne may do na more.

If thou wilt have  
mercy, forsake  
thy sins now,

Bilef sunne hwil þu myht. and do bi godes lore.  
And do to gode hwat þu myht. if þu wilt habben ore.  
For we hit ileueþ wel. and dryhten seolf hit seyde. 131

for God is ever  
willing to forgive  
the sinner.

On hwiche tyme so euer þe mon. of-pincheþ his mys-  
dede.

Oþer rapen oþer later. Milce he schal y-mete.

Ah he þat nouht naueþ ibét. muchel he haueþ to bete.

Mony mon seyþ hwo rekp of pyne. þat schal habben  
ende. 135

Ne bidde ich no bet. bute ich beo. ilested a domes day  
of bende.

Little we know  
of the pains of  
hell—of the great  
heat and of the  
bitter winds that  
torment the soul.

Lutel wot he hwat is pyne. and lutel he hit iknoweþ.  
Hwich hete is þar þe soule wuneþ. hw bitter wynd þer  
bloweþ.

Hedde he iwuned þer enne day. oþer vnneþe one tyde. [leaf 244]

Nolde he for al þe Middelerd. an oþer þer abyde. 140

Swiþe grimlych stench þer is. *and* wurþ wyþ-rten ende

*And* hwo þe enes cumeþ þer. vt may he neuer þenne wende.

He who might abide there one day would not for all the world stop there another day.

Neuer ich in helle ne com. ne þer to. cume ne recche.

þah ich al þes worldes weole. þer wende to vecche. 144

þat seyden þeo þat weren þer. heo hit wisten myd iwisse.

þer þurh<sup>1</sup> seorewe of seoue yer. for sonenyhtes blysse.

*And* for þe blysse þat ende haueþ : endeles is þe pyne.

Beter is worie wateres drung. þane atter meynd myd wyne. 148

Better is a drink of dirty water than poison mingled with wine. Deer and swine's flesh is dearly bought with one's neck. Full belly may speak lightly of hunger and of fasts; so may he of pain who knows not that it shall last for ever.

Swynes brede is swete. so is of þe wilde deore.

Al to deore he hit buþ. þat yeueþ þar-vore his sweore.

Ful wombe may lihtliche speken. of hunger and of festen.

So may of pyne. þat not hwat hit is. þat euer-mo schal lesten. 152

Hedde he ifonded summe stunde. he wolde seggen al oþer.

*And* lete for crist. beo wif *and* child. fader. suster. and broþer.

Al he wolde oþer don. *and* oþerluker þenche.

Hwenne he biþouhte on helle fur. þat noþing ne may quenche. 156

Eure he wolde in bonen beon. *and* in godnesse wunye.

Wiþ þat he myhte helle fur. euer fleon *and* schonye.

*And* lete sker al þes worldes weole. *and* þes worldes blysse.

All worldly woes are as nothing compared to the pains of hell.

Wiþ þat he myhte to heouene cumen. *and* beo þer myd iwisse. 160

Ich wile eu seggen of þe dome. as ich eu er seyde.

On þe day and on þe dome. vs helpe cryst and rede. Of Doomsday.

þer we Muwen beon aferd. and sore vs of-drede. 163

þer vych schal seon him bi-fore. his word and ek his dede.

<sup>1</sup> ? wurþ.

All our sins shall  
be made known  
at Doomsday.

Al schal beon þer þeonne ikud. þat er men lowen and  
stelen.

Al schal beon þer þeonne vñwrien. þat men her wrien  
and helen. 166

The doom shall  
not last long.

Vve schulleþ alre monne lyf. iknowe al so vre owe.  
þer-schulle beon euenynges. þe riche and ek þe lowe.  
þe dom schal beon sone idon. ne lest he nowiht longe.  
Ne schal him nomon menen þer. of strengþe. ne of  
wronge. 170

[leaf 244, back]  
The wicked shall  
have a hard  
sentence.

þeo schullen habbe harde dom. þat er weren harde.  
þeo þat vuele heolde wrecche men. and vuele lawe  
arerde.

Alle þeo þat beoþ icumen. of adam and of eve.  
Alle heo schule þider cumen. and so we owen hit ileue.  
þeo þat habbeþ wel idon. after heore Mihte. 175  
To heoueriche heo schulle vare. forþ myd vre dryhte.  
þeo þat habbeþ feondes werk idon. and þer-in beoþ  
ifunde.

They shall go  
forth with the  
devil into the  
abyss of hell.

Heo schulle fare forþ myd him! in-to helle grunde.  
þer ho schulle wunyen .o. buten ore and ende.  
Ne brekeþ nouht crist eft helle dure. to lesen heom of  
bende. 180

Once Christ  
harrowed hell,  
and brought out  
his friends, but  
he will do so no  
more.

Nys no seollich þeh heom beo wo. he mawe wunye eþe.  
Nul neuer eft crist þolye deþ. to lesen heom of deþe.  
Enes drihte helle brek. his freond he vt brouhte.  
Him seolue he þolede deþ for vs. wel deore he vs  
abouhte. 184

For us thralls,  
Christ suffered on  
the Cross,  
and bought us  
with his blood,  
and yet we give  
him hardly a  
stick of our  
bread.

Nolde hit nomon do for me. ne suster for broþer.  
Nolde hit sone do for vader. ne nomon for oþer.  
Vre alre louerd for vs þrelles. ipnyed wes on rode.  
Vre bendes he vnbond. and bouhte vs myd his blode.  
And we yeueþ vñneþe. a stucche of vre brede. 189  
We ne pencheþ nouht þat he schal deme. þe quyke and  
ek þe dede.

Muchel luue he vs cudde. wolde we hit vnderstonde.  
þat vre elderne mys-duden. we habbeþ harde on honde.

Dep com i pis Middelerd. purh þe deofles onde.

And sunne. and sorewe. and muchel swynk. a waters.

and a londe.

194

Through the  
devil's envy  
death came into  
the world.

Vre forme faderes gult. we abuggeþ alle.

Al his ofsprung after him. in harme is ifalle.

Purst and hunger. chele. and hete. ache and vnhelpe.

purh him com in pis myddelerd. and oþe vnyselyhpe.

Nere nomon elles ded ne sek. ne non vnhele. 199

We all suffer for  
Adam's misdeed. 2

Through him  
came hunger,  
thirst, heat, and  
cold, &c., into the  
world.

Ah myhten libben euer-mo. myd blysse and myd wele.

Lutel hit pincheþ monymon. ah muchel wes þe sunne.

For whon alle polieþ dep. þat comen of heore kunne.

Vre sunne and vre sor. vs may sore of-punche. 203

In sunnen we libbeþ alle. and seorewe. and in swynke.

Hwenne god nom so muche wreche. for one mys-dede.

We þat ofte mys-dop. we Mowen vs sore adrede.

Adam and his ofsprung. for ore bare sunne. 207

[leaf 245]

In sin and sorrow  
we all live.  
We ought to be  
in great fear since  
God punished  
Adam so  
severely for one  
sin.

Weren feole hundred wynter in pyne. and on vrwunne.

And þeo þat ledeþ heore lif. myd vnriht and myd  
wronge.

Bute hit godes mylce beo. he beoþ þar wel longe.

Godes wisdom is wel muchel. and al so is his myhte.

Nis his mylce nowiht lasse. ah al by one wyhte. 212

More he onë may for-yeue. þan al volk agulte kunne.

þeyh seolf deouel myhte habbe mylce. if he hit bi-  
gunne.

God's mercy is as  
great as his  
power.

The devil might  
have had mercy  
had he sought it.

þe þat godes mylce sekþ. iwis he hit may fynde.

Ah helle kyng. is ore-les. wiþ þon þat he may bynde.

þe þat dop his wille mest. he schal habbe wrst mede.

His baþ schal beo wallynde pich. his bed bernynde  
glede. 218.

He that seeks  
God's mercy may  
find it.  
Hell's king is  
merciless.

Also ich hit telle as wyse men vs seyden.

And on heore boke. hit iwryten is. þat me may hit  
reden.

Ich hit segge for heom. þat er pis hit nusten.

And warny heom wiþ harme. if heo me wulleþ lusten.

Vnderstondeþ nū to me. edye men and arme. 223

BEST.

5

- Ich wille ou telle of helle pyne. and warny of harme.  
 In hell is hunger and thirst. þar is hunger and þurst. vuele tweye iverē.  
 þeos pyne þolieþ þer. þat were mete-nyþinges here. 226  
 þar is wonyng and wop. after vlche strete.  
 Ho vareþ from hete to chele. from chele to þar hete.  
 Hwenne heo cumeþ in hete. þe chele heom þinceþ  
 lysse.  
 þenne heo cumeþ eft to chele. of hete heo habbeþ mysse.  
 Eyþer heom doþ wo y-nouh. nabbeþ heo none lisse. 231  
 Heo nuten hweþer heom doþ wurse. myd neuer none  
 iwisse.  
 Heo walkeþ euer and secheþ reste. ah heo hit ne muwe  
 iméte.  
 For heo nolde hwile heo myhten. heore sunnen ibete.  
 Heo schecheþ reste þer non nys. for-þi ne muwen hi  
 finde  
 Ah walkeþ þar boþe vp and dun. so water doþ myd  
 winde. 236  
 [leaf 245, back] þis beoþ þe. þat weren her Mid hwom me heold feste.  
 And þeo þat gode bi-heyhte wel. and nolden hit ileste.  
 And þeo þat god were<sup>1</sup> by-gunne and ful-endy hit  
 nolden.  
 Nv were her. nv were þer. heo nuste hwat heo wolden.  
 In burning pitch do their souls bathe. Ðet ich<sup>2</sup> pych. þat euer walleþ. þat heo schulle habbe  
 þere. 241  
 þeo þat ledeþ heore lyf vnwreste. and eke false were.  
 þar is fur an hundred-folde. hatture þane be vre.  
 Ne may hit quenche no salt water. ne auene strém. ne  
 sture. 244  
 þat is þet fur þat euer barnþ. ne may hit nomon  
 quenche.  
 In this fire shall dwell the persecutors of the poor, þar-inne beoþ þeo. þat her wes leof. poure men to  
 swenche.  
 Ðeo þat were swikelemen. and ful of vuele wrenche.

<sup>1</sup> MS were.<sup>2</sup> Qu. Ðer is.



And þeo þat ne myhte vuele do. *and* was hit leof to  
penche. 248

þeo þat luued reving. and stale. *and* hordom. *and* thieves, whore-  
drunken. drunkards, &c.;

And on deoueles werke. blupeliche swunken.

þeo þat were so lese. þat me heom ne myhte iléuen.

Med-yorne domes men. and wrongwise reuen. 252

þe þat wes leof oþer mannes wif. *and* his owe létén.

judges greedy  
of bribes,  
unjust reeves,  
gluttons,  
misers,

And þe þat suneged ofte. on drunken. and on méte.

þeo þat wrecche men bynymeþ. his eyhte. *and* hit leyþ  
an horde.

And lutel let on godes bode. and of godes worde. 256

þeo þat almes nolde yeue þere he iseyh þe neode.

[Ne his poure kunesmen. at him ne myhte nouht spede.]

þe þat nolde here godes sonde. þar he sat. at his borde.

And was leof oþer mannes þing. leuere þan beon  
schulde. 260

And weren al to grédi. of seoluer. and of golde.

covetous men,

And luueden vntrewnesse. þat heo schulden beon hólde.

And létén þat hi scolden do. and duden þat heo ne  
scholden.

Heo schulleþ wunyen in helle. þe ueondes onwolde.

unfaithful  
persons,

þe þat were gaderares. of þisse worldes ayhte. 265

And duden þat þe loþe gost heom tycede and tahte.

and all who have  
followed the  
devil's lore.

And alle þeo þe myd dusye wise. deouele her iquemep.

þeo beoþ nū in helle wip him. fordon. and for-dēmdé.

Bute þeo þat of-þincheþ her. sore heore mysdede. 269

[leaf 246]

And heore gultes gunnen lete. and betere lif to lede.

þer beoþ neddren. *and* snaken. euethen and fruden.

There are adders,  
snakes, newts,  
and ferrets, that  
tear the wicked.

þer tereþ and freteþ. þat vuele spekeþ. þe nyþfule *and*  
þe prude.

Neuer sunne þer ne schineþ. ne Móne. ne steorre.

No sun nor moon  
shine there.

þer is muchel godes héte. *and* muchel godes eorre. 274

Euer þar is muchel smeche. þeosternesne and eye.

There is much  
smoke, darkness,  
and awe.

Nis þer neuer oþer lyht. bute þe swarte leye.

þer lyþ þe lodliche ueond. in stronge rake-teye.

There lie  
horrible devils  
in strong chains.

*þat* is *þe þat* wes myd god. in heouene swiþe heye. 278  
*þer* beoþ ateliche ueondes. *and* grysliche wyhtes.

125

*þer* schule *þe* wrecche soulen iseon. *þat* sunegeden *bi* *þurh*  
sihtes.

Loathsome Satan  
and old Beelzebub.

*þer* is *þe* *loþe* sathanas. *and* beelzebub *þe* olde.  
Eþe heo mwue beon adred. *þat* heom schulde biholde.

No one can tell  
how many pains  
there are in hell.

*Ne* may non heorte hit *þenche*. ne no tunge telle. 283  
Hw muche pyne. hw ueole ueondes. beoþ in *þe*ostre  
helle.

For al *þe* pyne *þat* her is. nulle ich eu nouht lye.  
Nis hit bute gome and gleo. al *þat* mon may her dreye.  
*And* yet ne doþ heom noþing so wo. in *þe* *loþe* bende.  
*Ase þat* witen heore pyne. ne schal habbe non ende.

heo

In hell are the  
heathen men,  
wicked Christians,

*þar* beoþ *þe* heþene men. *þat* were lawe-lese.<sup>1</sup> 289  
*þet* nes nouht of godes forbode. ne of godes hese.

Vuele cristenemen. beoþ *þer* heorure nere.  
*þeo þat* heore cristendom. vuele heolden here. 292  
Yet heo beoþ a wrse stude. *anye* helle grunde.

whom neither  
mark nor pound  
shall ever help.

*Ne* schullen heo neuer cumen up! for marke. ne for  
punde.

*Ne* may helpe *þer*. nouþer beode ne almesse.  
For nys noþer in helle. ore ne [for]yeuenesse. 296  
Nu schilde him vych mon hwile he may. wiþ *þe* ilke  
pyne.

✱

Let each man  
warn his friends  
of this place of  
torment.

*And* warny vich his freond. so ich habbe myne.  
*þeo þat* schilde heom ne kunnen. ich heom wille teche.  
Ich con beon eyþer if ich schal. lycome and soule  
leche. 300

[leaf 246, back]

Lete we *þat* god forbed. alle mon-kunne.

Let us love God  
and man.

*And* do we *þat* he vs hat. *and* schilde we vs wiþ sunne.  
Luuye we god myd vre heorte. *and* myd alle vre  
myhte.

Vre euen-cristen. as vs seolf. for so vs lerede dryhte.  
Al *þat* me redeþ and syngeþ. bi-voren godes borde. 305  
Al hit hongeþ and hald. bi þisse twam worde.

<sup>1</sup> MS leve, altered by a later hand to lese.

Alle godes-lawe he fullep. þe newe. and ek þe olde.

þat haueþ þeos ilke two luuen. and wel heom wile  
atholde. 308

He who hath  
these two loves  
fulfils the old and  
the new law.

Ah soþ ich hit eu segge. ofte we agulteþ alle.

For strong hit is to stonde longe. and lyht hit is to  
falle.

Ah dryhten crist vs yeue strengþe. stonde þat we mote.

And of alle vre sunnen. vs lete cume to bote. 312

Vve wilneþ after worldes ayhte. þat longe ne may  
ileste.

We long after  
world's weal  
instead of  
heavenly bliss.

And mest leggeþ vre swynk. on þing vnstudeueste.

If þat we swunken for gode. half. þat we doþ for eyhte.

Nere we nouht so ofte bi-cherd. ne so vuele by-bouhte.

Yef we seruede god. so we doþ earmynges. 317

We Mihte habbe more of heouene. þan eorles oþer  
kynges.

We may get more  
from heaven than  
from earls or  
kings.

Ne mowe nouht weryen heom. wiþ chele ne wiþ hunger.

Ne wiþ elde ne wiþ deþe. þe eldure ne þe yonge. 320

Ah þer nys hunger ne þurst. ne deþ. ne vnhelpe ne elde.

Of þis world we þencheþ ofte: and þer-of al to selde.

Vve schulde vs bi-þenche. wel ofte and wel ilóme.

Let us think of  
the shortness  
of this life.

Hwat we beoþ. to hwan we schulen. and of hwan we  
comen. 324

Hw lutle hwile we beoþ here. hw longe elles-hware.

And after gode wel wurchen. þenne ne þuruue noht kare.

If we were wyse men. þus we schulde þenche. 327

Bute we wurpe vs iwar. þes world vs wile for-drenche.

and beware of  
this false world.

Mest alle men he yeueþ drynke. of one deofles [schenche.]<sup>1</sup>

He schal him cunne schilde wel. yef he him. [wole bi-þen-  
che.]<sup>2</sup> 330

Mid almyhtyes godes luue. vte we vs werie.

Wip þeos wrecche worldes luue. þe heo vs ne derye.

Mid festen. and almesse and beoden. were we vs wip  
sunne.

[leaf 247]  
Let us fortify  
ourselves with  
fasts, alms, and  
prayer.

<sup>1</sup> MS reads: *senþe*, in a later hand.

<sup>2</sup> MS reads: *wole bi-genthe*, in a later hand.

Mid þe wepnen þat god haueþ yeuen. to alle mon-  
kunne. 334

Let us go by the  
narrow and  
bright way.

Lete we þeo brode stret. and þene wey grene.  
þat lat þe nyepa to helle. of folke. and mo ich wene.  
Go we þene narewe wey. þene wey so schene.  
þer forþ fareþ lutel folk. and þat is wel eþ-sene. 338

The broad way is  
man's will.

þe brode stret is vre wil. þat is vs loþ to leta.  
þe þat al feleweþ his wil. he fareþ þe brode strete.

The narrow way  
is God's behesta.

þe narewe wey is godes hesta. þat forþ fareþ wel fawe.  
þat beoþ þeo. þe heom schedeþ wel. wiþ vych vnþewe.  
þeos goþ vnneþe ayeyn þe cleo. ayeyn þe heye hulle.  
þeos leteþ awei al heore wil. for godes hestes to fulle.

The narrow way  
leads to heaven.

Go we alle þene wei. for he vs wile brynge. 345

Mid þe fewe feyremen by-uoren heouene kinga.

There are all kinds  
of joys and angels'  
songs.

þer is alre Murehþe mest. myd englene songe.  
Wel edy wurþ þilke mon. þat þer byþ vnderuonge.  
þe lest haueþ murehþe. he haueþ so muche. ne bit he  
namore. 349

Hwo so þeo blisse for þisse foryet. hit may him rewe  
sore.

Ne may no pyne ne no wone beon in heouene riche.

There are many  
dwellings there.

þah þer beon wonynges feole. and oþer vnyliche. 352  
Summe habbeþ lasse Murehþe. and summe habbeþ more.  
Vych after þat he dude her. and after þat heo swunken  
sore. 354

Ne wrþ þer bred ne wyn. ne nones kunnes este.

God alone is the  
bliss of the  
righteous.

God one schal beon eche lif. and blisse eche reste.  
þer nys nouþer fou ne grey. ne konyng. ne hermyne.  
Ne oter. ne acquerne. Beuveyr ne sablyne. 358  
Ne þer ne wurþ ful iwis. worldes wele none.

Al þe Murehþe þat me vs bihat! al hit is god one.

Nis þer no Murehþe so muchel. so is godes syhte.

He is soþ sunne. and briht. and day bute nyhte. 362

He is vyche godes ful. nys him nowiht wiþ-rte.

Nis heom nones godes wone! þat wuneþ hym abute.

[leaf 247, back]

þer is weole bute wone. and reste bute swynke.

Hwo may pider cume and nule. hit schal hym sore of-  
pinche. 366 In heaven there is  
rest and eternal  
life;

þer is blysse bute teone. and lif wiþ-vte deþe.

þeo þat schulle wunye þer. bliþe mvwen heo beon eþe.

þer is yonghede buten ealde. and hele buten vnhelpe. 370 youth and perfect  
health.

þer nys seorewe ne no sor. neuer non vnhelpe. 370

Seoþþe me dryhten iseo. so he is myd iwisse.

He one may beon and schal. englene and monne blisse.

þeo schulen of him more iseon. þat her him luede  
more. 373 All in heaven  
have not equal  
bliss, for they  
have not all alike  
of God's light.

And more iseon and iwyten. his Milce and his ore.

On him heo schullen fynden. al þat mon may luste.

And on lyues bec<sup>1</sup> iseon. al þat heo her nusten.

Crist seolf one schal beon. i-nouh to alle derlinges. 377 They who loved  
him most here  
shall see most of  
him there.

He one is more and betere. þan alle wordliche þinges.

Inouh hi habbeþ þat hyne habbeþ. þat alle þinges  
weldeþ.

Him to seonne murie hit is. so fayr he is to biholde.

God is so swete and so muchel. in his godnesse. 381 All things are  
inferior to God.

Al þat wes and is. is wel wurse and lasse.

Ne may nomon hit segge. ne wyten myd iwisse. No man may tell  
of the joys of  
heaven.

Hu muchele Murehþe habbeþ heo. þat beoþ in heuene  
blisse. 384

To pare blisse bringe vs god. þat lesteþ buten ende.

Hwenne he vre saule vn-bind. of lichomliche bende.

Crist vs lete such lif lede. and habbe her such ende.

þat we mote to him cume. hwenne we heonne wendeþ.

Amen. 388

Bidde we nu leoue freond. yonge and ek olde.

þat he þat þis wryt wrot. his saule beo þer athelde. Let us pray, dear  
friends, for the  
salvation of the  
writer's soul.

Amen. 390

<sup>1</sup> MS bee.

*f. Holthausen, Archiv. 88, 369. = Hlt. III.*

## Sinners Beware!

[*Same MS, leaf 248.*]

May the might of  
the Holy Ghost  
help us to pre-  
serve ourselves  
from the devil  
who ever seeks  
to ensnare us.

**H**eos holy gostes myhte.  
Vs helpe. and rede and dihte.  
And wisse vs and theche.  
To wyten vs wyþ þan vnwihte.  
þat bi daye and bi nyhte.  
þencheþ vs to bi-peche.

4

He makes us  
commit sins; he  
hath envy toward  
mankind; he  
thinks to win us,  
and to dwell  
within us and  
have us in hand.

He makeþ vs don sunnen.  
And habben of mon-kunne.  
Swipe muchel onde.  
And þencheþ vs i-wynne.  
And wunye vs wiþ-Inne.  
And vs habben an honde.

8

12

But pray we to  
Christ to ward  
him off, for he  
that turneth to  
him shall burn  
in hell in ever-  
lasting grief.

Ac bidde we crist yorne.  
þat he. þat heom werne.  
For his holynesse.  
For þe þat to heom turneþ.  
In helle heo schulle for-berne.  
On eche sorynesse.

16

If we honour our  
Maker and love  
him, he will  
defend us so that  
the envious devils  
shall not hurt us.

Ah ich hit segge and swerie.  
If we vre suppen herye.  
And luuyep hyne swipe.  
He vs wille werye.  
þat feondes vs ne derye.  
þat fulle beoþ of nyþe.

20

24

Ne schulle we nouht beo here.

Swiþe vale yere.

For-þi er we wende.

Makie we us clene and skera.

þat we englene iwere.

Mawe beon o buten ende.

þat is in heouene blysse.

Heo cumeþ þer myd iwisse.

þat luuyeþ godes lore.

Hwo þat for lyue þisse.

þer-of schal mysse.

Hit schal him reowe sore.

Hit seyþ in þe godspelle.

Ne may no tunge telle.

þe blisse þat þer is euere.

Ne of þære pyne of helle.

þar-to we beoþ to snelle.

A-way. heo ne endeþ neuere.

In helle beoþ þe pynen.

þat makeþ heorte chynen.

þe stude is swiþe vnuele.

þer no lyht ne shineþ

Ne non. oper at-tryneþ.

To helpe ne to hele.

Her is chele and hete.

And hunger vnymete.

And þurst elles to kene.

Wikede<sup>1</sup> beoþ þe sete.

And þe wurmes eke.

þat doþ þe saule teone.

We shall not be here many years, therefore, ere we go, let us purify ourselves to be the companions of angels for ever.

28

He that loves God's lore shall have heaven's bliss; he who through love of this life shall miss it, shall bitterly repent the loss thereof.

32

36

No tongue may tell the bliss of heaven, or the pains of hell.

40

To the latter we hasten, but, alas, they have no end.

The pains of hell rive the heart.

44

No light shines there. None helps another.

48

[leaf 248, back] There is cold and heat, hunger and thirst.

52

Horrible are the worms that torture the soul.

<sup>1</sup> MS Pikede.

There is weeping  
and whining  
and moaning that  
ever they were  
born.

There is no  
returning nor  
cessation if once  
we come there.

We ought, there-  
fore, to take heed  
and serve  
heaven's King  
while on earth,

and beseech him  
to keep us from  
this torture.

Let us forsake  
our sins and  
amend our lives.

Sin is sweet, and  
it is easy to find  
hell.

The seven deadly  
sins mar the soul.

Therewith our  
enemy thinketh  
to ensnare us all.

Pride and  
Moodiness,  
Sloth and  
Despair,  
Envy and Hatred,

Wrath and  
Treachery,  
Whoredom and  
Gluttony.

þar is wop and wonyng.

And mucche bymenyng.

þat heo ibore were.

And þar nys no yeyn-cherryng.

Ne þar nys non endyng.

þe enes cumeþ þere.

þi we auhte nyme gome.

Her. er wa. þider côme.

And serue heouene kinge.

Bisechen hym ilome.

þat he vs at þe dome.

From þare pyne vs bryng.

Vte we sunnen lete.

And nyme scryf[t] and bête.

Of vre Misdede.

To donne he beoþ swete.

þy vs. is. eþ-gete.

Helle þat is vnlede.

þeo seuen heaued-sunne.

þat we ofte beoþ inne.

þe saule willeþ amerre.

Heo beoþ of swikele kunne.

þer-myð þe wyperwynne.

Vs alle þencheþ bicharre.

Þrude and modynesse.

Ne arhhede ne sorynesse. *Het*

And nyþe and ek onde.

Wrappe and swikelnesse.

Hordom and yuernesse.

þeos we auhte vnderstonde.

56

60

64

68

72

76

80

84



Deos beoþ sunnen seouene.  
þat bryngeþ vt of heouene.

These sins keep  
many men out  
of heaven.

Swiþe vele manne.  
þe weyes beoþ vn-euene.  
Wiþ wepynde stefne.  
To helle he schulle þenne.

88 With weeping  
votes to hell  
they shall go.

Nv wenep monye riche.  
To beon englene ilyche.  
For heore prude clape.  
þerfore heo schule siche.  
And in helle smyche. *Net*  
Acoryn hit ful wraþe.

92 Many men ween  
to be like angels  
with their proud  
clothes, but in

hell smoke they  
shall buy it full  
dear.

96

He wenep for heore ayhte.  
To heouene beo cuplehthe.  
Ah bute heo hit ryht dele.  
Of heouene heo beoþ bipahte.  
And þane ueonde by-cauhte. *40t*  
For heore mucþe weole.

[leaf 249]  
Some think to  
gain heaven with  
their wealth—but  
except they  
rightly deal it,

100 heaven they  
shall lose, and by  
the devil be  
ensnared through  
their great weal.

Nv wenep ek þes wrecche.  
þat he ne þurue recche.  
For he ayhte nabbeþ.  
Ac sathanas þe frecche.  
þe saule wule drecche.  
Hwanne he agult habbeþ.

104 The poor think  
they have nothing  
to fear for they  
have no goods.

But Satan shall  
trouble their  
souls if they  
commit sin.

108

þe ryche myd iwiisse.  
Wel myhte cume to blisse.  
If he hit wolde of-seruie.  
þe poure may wel mysse.  
Bute he his pouernesse.  
Mid mylde heorte polye.

The rich may  
come to bliss if  
they deserve it.

112 The poor may  
miss it unless his  
poverty be borne  
with a meek heart.

Some monks  
think to enjoy  
the wealth they  
have heaped up,

but Death shall  
deprive them of  
all, and the devil  
shall have their  
souls.

The priest that  
singeth mass  
for greed, except  
he do alms, shall  
in eternal sorrow  
bring his soul.

Soldiers that  
have killed their  
fellow Christians  
think themselves  
full bold—but  
Satan shall  
affright their  
souls.

False pleaders in  
red and green are  
full keen—but in  
hell shall they  
have grief where  
devils roar.

There are  
chapmen that  
care not what they  
swear provided  
they get profit—  
but Satan shall  
hurt their souls

**Þes Munekes wenep summe.**  
**þat gedereþ gersumme.** 116

þat heo hit schulle bruke.  
Ah hwen deþ schal cume.  
Al hit wurþ heom bi-nume.  
And he bitauht þe puke. 120

**Þe preost þat singeþ masse.**  
**For his yuernesse.**  
And for owe þinge.  
Bute he do almesse. 124  
In eche sorinesse.  
His saule he may brynge.

**Þes knyhtes beoþ so bolde.**  
**Hwenne heo habbeþ aquolde.** 128  
Heore crystene ivére.  
Ah sathanas þe olde.  
þe saule wule at-holde.  
And makie heo vnfere. 132

**Þeos playdurs beoþ wel kene.**  
**þat werieþ red and grene.**  
And al þis vnriht demep.  
Ho schule þah heo ne wene. 136  
In helle habben teone.  
þer as feondes reneþ.

**Þes chapmen monye bi stréte.**  
**Beoþ swiþe vnymete.** 140  
Ne reccheþ hwat hi swerie.  
Bute heo habben biyéte.  
þi sathanas je kete.  
þe saule wule derye. 144

Of alle men a londe.  
 Mest swynkeþ þe bonde.  
 And mest biyet myd ryhta.  
 If he hit cuþe vnderstonde.  
 And theope ryht vnder his honde.  
 To heouene he cume myhte.

[leaf 249, back]  
 The husbandman  
 tills most—if he  
 pays his tithes  
 he may come to  
 heaven,

148

Ah for al his sore swynke.  
 In helle he may adrynke.  
 If he stelep cristes theopinge.  
 Sur hit schal him pinche.  
 Deop in helle stunchen.  
 His saule he may bringe.

but if he steals  
 Christ's tithing

152

deep in hell  
 stink his soul  
 shall come.

156

Peos prude leuedies.  
 þat luuyep drywories.  
 And brekeþ spusynges.  
 For heore lecherye.  
 Nulleþ here *sermony*e.  
 Of none gode þinge.

Proud ladies  
 there are, spouse-  
 breakers, that  
 desire to hear  
 no sermons.

160

Heo drawep heore wede.  
 Mid seolkene þrede.  
 Ilaced and ibunde.  
 Ah he þat beoþ nv leaþe. *He!*  
 Remen heo schule and grede.  
 Deope in helle grunde.

They like laced  
 and trimmed  
 garments, but

164

they shall bewail  
 their pride in  
 hell's hole.

168

Mvnekes and Nunnen.  
 þat heom wyte ne kunnen.  
 From sucche lecherye.  
 Heo schule to helle cume.  
 Alle heore cloþes buue.  
 Ne schule heom warantye.

Monks and nuns  
 that are lecherous  
 shall go to hell.

172

? bone "purchasing"? y nro

Better were they  
unborn than  
to come there,

Sopliche betere heom were.  
þat heo ibore nêre.

176

for there they  
shall be without  
end.

þenne þider schulen wénde.  
Sop is þat ich eu lere.  
Hwo so enes cumeþ þere.  
He wrþ þer buten ende.

180

We think to sin  
all our life long,

Ah we wenep lyuie.  
And longe sunegie.  
And eft at þon ende.

and on our death-  
bed to repent and  
go to heaven.

Alle vre sunnen endye.  
Bi-wepen *and* bi-reusye.  
And so to heouene wende.

184

But be not too  
confident—for no

Ah ne beo nouht to þryste.  
Ne þer-to nouht ne truste.  
þer-vppon ich eu lere.

188

man knows when  
his death-day  
shall be.

For nes non þat wiste.  
Bute him seolue criste.  
Hwenne his ende-day were.

192

After death shall  
come the  
[leaf 250]  
judgment, and

Sopliche hwenne we beoþ dede.  
Euerych schal vo þe mede.  
After his ernynge.

the guilty spirit  
shall go into  
torment.

Bute we vs bi-rede.  
þe gost hit schal ivrede.  
And fareþ to pynynge.

196

When the body  
is laid in the  
earth, worms

Hwenne bali me byndeþ.  
On here me hyne bi-windeþ.  
And bryngeþ hine on eorþe.

200

shall find it and  
grind it into  
ashes.

þe wurmes hine ifyndeþ.  
To axe heo hyne gryndeþ.  
þar-to we schule iwurþe.

204

He lyþ and roteþ lowe.

Naueþ he þat beo his owe.

Of ayhte ne of londe.

Ne naueþ he meý ne mowe.

þat durre one þrowe.

Bi hym sitte ne stonde.

He lies and rots  
low and has  
naught of his own.

208 None of his  
kinsfolk will  
dare remain  
with him.

Sopliche nakede and bare.

Wip woþe and wip kare.

We come to þisse lyue.

Al so we schule fare.

And al vre prude þare.

Vor-leten and bileuen.

Naked we came  
into this world,

212

so shall we go  
out of it,  
and leave all our  
pride behind us.

216

Her-of we owe þenche.

And vre sunnen aquenche.

Mid beden and myd almesse.

And cunnen at-blenche.

From sathanases wrenche.

And from his swikelnesse.

Therefore let us  
quench our sins  
with prayers and  
with alms, and

220 guard ourselves  
against the wiles  
of Satan.

Þah we beon falle in sunne

Ne ligge we noht þer-inne.

Ah ute we vp aryse.

And schenden vre wyþerwine.

þat þencheþ vs to bi-gynne.

þenne doþ we as þe wise.

Lie not long in  
sin, but rise  
quickly out of it;

224

confound the  
devil, who thinks  
to beguile you.

228

Vte we leten vs schryue.

And þene ueond vt of vs dryue.

Ne þarf vs noht schomye.

Ne beoþ noht on þisse lyue.

Wymmen ne wapmen fyue.

þat ofte ne sunegie.

Let us drive out  
the devil by  
shrif.

232 Let us not be  
ashamed to do so,  
for there are  
not five persons  
that have not  
sinned.

Proud men and  
women that live  
in sin, when they

Ah þes modie gume.

And þeos leuedies at þe frume.

236

Heo dyhtep heom vnwreste.

come to shrift  
affect modesty.

And þeos gedelynges summe.

Hwenne heo to schrifte come.

Heo beoþ schomeuaste.

240

They will not  
confess their  
misdeeds.

Nule heo þe soþe telle.

þah me scholde heom aquelle.

Ne vnwreo heore Misdede.

[leaf 250, back]  
Therefore in hell  
shall they shrink  
and swell and  
receiue the  
reward of their  
guilt.

For-þi heo schule in helle.

244

Euer schrinke and swelle.

And fo þer lupre mede.

He who will  
not confess his  
sins to the priest,

Hwo nule hyne her rede.

And vnwreo his Misdede.

248

To þe preoste one.

shall hereafter  
yell so loud that  
quick and dead  
shall hear them.

He schal eft lude grede.

þe quike and ek þe dede.

Theren hi schulen vychone.

252

Then shall he be  
ashamed, and the  
shame shall be  
greater than his  
pain, unless he

Penne schal him schome sore.

þe schome him þyncþeþ more.

þan muchel of his pyne.

follow priest's  
lore and pray to  
God for mercy.

Bute he do bi preostas lore.

256

And yeorne bidde godes ore.

Ne schal him no god attrýne.

At Mount Olivet  
we shall all meet,  
the good and the  
bad ;

At þe Munte of olyuete.

We schulle vs eft alle y-mete.

260

þe gode and þe vnwreste.

the day shall be  
mild and sweet,  
but bitter to those  
who have broken  
God's heste.

þe day wurþ mylde and swete.

And bytter heom þat lete.

To donne godes heste.

264

þe cumeþ god myd his rode.  
 His honde *and* his syde al a blode.  
 And scheweþ hu he vs bouhte.  
 Offer þenne beoþ þe gode.  
 And wo is þenne þe ouermode.  
 þat er þar-of ne rouhte.

Then shall God  
 come with the  
 rood and show  
 the signs of his  
 passion.

268 The good shall  
 be afraid—how  
 shall the wicked  
 feel ?

Loke seyde god nuþe. *V<sup>1</sup>4*  
 Hwat ich for ou ouþe.  
 And hwat ich gon þolye.  
 Lutel þonk ye me cuþe.  
 Mid heorte ne myd Muþe.  
 Nolde ye me þonkie.

Look, God said,  
 what I have  
 suffered for you.

272

But no thanks  
 did I get of you.

276

He seyde þenne to his gode. *M<sup>1</sup>2*  
 And spek myd Milde mode.  
 Mine gode. ye me fedde.  
 [ . . . . . , . .  
 . . . . .  
 . . . . . . ]

To the good then  
 he spake,

"Ye fed me, my  
 good folk,

280

And schrudden *and* wel bihedden.  
 And leyden in softe bedde.  
 þo ic a-mong eu eode.  
 For-þi ich eu wulle a-redde.  
 From sathanas þe vn-ledde.  
 For her ye habbeþ neode.

and clothed,  
 sheltered, and  
 lodged me when  
 I was among you,

284

therefore I will  
 deliver you from  
 Satan.

288

þe gode seyþ þenne.  
 Louerd hwer and hwenne.  
 Dude we þe goddède.  
 Do ye yeue þene pouere monne.  
 þo he help nedde nenne.  
 Bute, as he for me bed.

Ye fed the poor  
 when he had  
 none to help him.

292

But ye wicked  
 ones recked not  
 [leaf 251]  
 of me;—though I  
 was hungry ye  
 took me not in."

He seyþ þenne to þe wrecchen.

Ye nolden of me recchen.

For hunger ich swal þar-vte. *het. p. 359* 296

Ye nolden me in vacchen.

Ye weren eu seolue wr[e]cchen.

So Modi and so prute. 300

Then the wicked  
 reply,

He gredeþ þanne heye.

þe wrecches *and* þe vnsleye.

þat luuede þe vnredes.

"Lord, we never  
 saw thee in need."

Louerd myd vre eye.

Neuer we þe ne yseyen.

Hwenne þu neode heddest. 304

"My poor, saith  
 Jesus, came to  
 your doors, but

[H]e seyþ þenne Myne.

Poure vn-hole hyne.

To eure dure come.

ye took no heed  
 to their wants.

For chele hy gunne hwyne.

For hunger hi hedde pyne.

Ye nolden nyme gome. 312

Ye gave them no  
 meat, drink, or  
 clothes.

Per-of ye nolde hede.

Ne yeuen of eure brede.

Of drenche ne of clope.

To-day ye shall  
 have your  
 reward,  
 for ye are to me  
 full loathsome.

To day ye schuleþ y-frede.

*And* vnder-fo lupre mede.

For ye me beoþ ful loþe. 316

My good people  
 shall go this day  
 to heavenly bliss,

Myne gode he sayþ myd iwisse.

To day ye schulle myd blysse.

To heueryche wende.

but ye shall  
 depart into  
 everlasting  
 sorrow."

And ye to þesternesse.

And to eche sorynesse.

And þer beo buten ende. 324



He yeorreþ *and* heo gredeþ.

þe feondes heom forþ ledeþ.

Boþe lychom and saule.

And beteþ heom *and* schredeþ.

And lupre heom biledeþ.

Mid pykes and myd eaule.

They roar and yell, but devils lead them away, both soul and body,

328 and beat them with pikes and awls.

þe saule seyþ to þe lychome.

Acursed wurpe þi nome.

þin heaued *and* þin heorte.

þu vs hauest iwroht þes schome.

And alle þene eche grome.

Vs schal euer smerte.

The soul curses the body as the cause of all its sufferings.

332

336

þe gode. þe Milde. *and* þe clene.

þah heo i-seon alle y-mene.

Al þat kun þat we of come.

Nulleþ heo neuer ene.

By-reusy ne bi-mene.

Ne þar-to nyme góme.

The righteous shall feel no pity for the sufferings of the wicked,

340 nor even take heed of them.

Ah wolde we vs wel dihte.

And leden vre lyf myd rihte.

þe hwiles we beoþ here.

Ich hit eu segge *and* plyhte.

A domes day we Myhte.

Beon engles ivére.

If we lead our lives aright here, [leaf 251, back]

344

of a truth, I say, on doomsday we shall be angels' companions.

348

Bidde we vre dryhte.

þat day scop and nyhte.

þat do vre saule bote.

þat we in heuene lyhte.

Among þan englen bryhte.

Wunyen and beo mote. Amen.

Pray we to our Lord to preserve our souls

352 that we may light in heaven among bright angels.

## IV.

## The Woman of Samaria.

Incipit de Muliere samaritana.

[Same MS, leaf 251, back.]

**þ**o ihesu crist an eorþe was. Mylde weren his dede.  
 Christ went about preaching. Alle heo beop on boke iwryten. þat me may heom rede.  
 þo he to monne wes iboren. of þare swete Marie.  
 And wes to ful elde icumen. he venk to prechie. 4  
 A lutel te-for þe tyme. þat he wolde deþ polye.  
 He neyleyhte<sup>1</sup> to one bureh. þat hatte samarie.  
 He came to Samaria. Al so he. þiderward. sumpung neyhleyhte.  
 He sende his apostles by-voren. and het heom and  
 His apostles left him to go and buy food. tauhte. 8  
 Heore in and heore biléuyng. greyþi þat heo schulde.  
 Heo duden heore louerdas hestas : ase þeines heolde.  
 Al so heo weren a-gon. þe apostles everychone.  
 He sat by a well, weary and thirsty. Iesus at ore walle. reste him seolf al one.  
 Ase he þer reste. ase weri wei were.  
 þar com gon o wymmon. al one buten ivere. 14  
 Ase heo wes er iwuned. heo com myd hire sténe.  
 And ihesuc to þare wymmon. bi-gon his þurst to mene.  
 Yef me drynke wymmon. he seyde myd mylde Muþe.  
 þeo wymmon him onswerede. al so to mon vnkup. He asked a woman who came with her stone pitcher to the well to give him drink.  
 Hwat artu. þat drynke me byst. þu þinchest of iude-  
 londe. 19  
 She was unwilling to give a Jew drink. Ne mostu drynke vnder-fo. none of myne honde.  
 þo seyde ihesu crist. wymmon. if þu vnderstóde.  
 Hwo hit is. þat drynke byd. þu woldest beon of oþer  
 mode. 22

<sup>1</sup> MS neylehyte.

- þu woldest bidde þat he þe yeue. drynke þat ilast euere. þe þat ene drynkeþ þer-of. ne schal him þurste neuere. Christ speaks to her of living [leaf 252.] waters.
- Louerd þo seyde þe wymmon. yef me þar-of to drynke. The woman was of poor wit, and thought he spake of earthly waters, but he spake of the Holy Spirit's grace.
- þat ich ne þurue more. to pisse welle swynke. 26
- Heo nuste hwat heo mende. heo wes of wytte poure.
- Heo nuste noht þat heo spek. of þan holy gastes froure.
- Sete áðun queþ ihesu crist. wymmon þine stene.
- Go and clepe þine were. and cumeþ hider y-mene.
- I nabbe heo seyde nenne were. ich am my seolf al one.
- Nabbe ich of wepmonne. nones kunnes y-mone. 32
- Wel þu seyst quap ihesu crist. wére. þat þu nauest nenne. Jesus speaks to her of her mode of life.
- Fyue þu hauest ar pisse iheuod. and yet þu hauest enne.
- And þe þat þu nuþe hauest. and heuedest summe þrowe.
- He is an oþer wyues were. more þan þin owe. 36
- Louerd heo seyde hwat art þu. ich wot myd iwisse.
- þat þu me hauest soþ iseyd. of alle wordes pisse.
- þi of one þinge. sey me iredynesse. 39
- Bi-twene þis twam folke. me þuncheþ a wundernesse.
- For alle þeo men þat wunyeþ. in samaryes tune.
- Alle heo biddeþ heom to gode. an-vppe pisse dune.
- And alle pilke þat beoþ. wiþ-inne iherusaléme. 43 She asks whether men should worship God in Jerusalem or Samaria.
- No-hwere bute in þe temple. ne wenep god iquéme.
- Ilef me wymmon quap ihesu crist. and þar-of beo vnderstonde.
- þat schal cume þe ilke day. and nv he is neyh honde. Jesus says that the time shall come when God shall be worshipped spiritually.
- þat ne beo neuer þe mon. in so feorre londe. 47
- If he myd swete þouhtes biþ. þat he ne biþ vnderstonde.
- þah he nouþer ne beo. an-vppe pisse dune.
- Ne in þe heye temple. of ierusalemes tune.
- Ye nuten hwat ye biddeþ. þat of gode nabbeþ imóne.
- For al eure bileue. is on stokke. oþer on stone. 52
- Ac þeo þat god iknoweþ. heo wyten myd iwisse.
- þat hele. is icume to monne. of folke iudaysse.
- Louerd heo seyde nv quiddeþ men. þat cumen is The woman speaks to him of the Messiah.
- Messyas. 55
- þe king. þat wurp. and nuþen. is. and euer yete was.

[leaf 252, back.]

Hwenne he cumeþ he wyle vs alle ryhtleche.

For he nule. ne he ne con. nenne mon bipeche.

Jesus says that  
he is the Messiah.

Ich hit am quap ihesu crist. þat wiþ þe holde speche.

þat Messyas am icleped. and am þes worldes leche. 60

Mid þon comen from þe bureh. þe apostles euervychone.

And wundrede þat ihesu wolde speke. wiþ þare wymmon  
one.

Ah þeyh heom þuhte wunder. no þing heo ne seyde.

The woman ran  
to the city and  
declared that she  
had seen the  
Messiah.

Ac þe wymmon anon. hire stene adun leyde. 64

And orn to þare bureh anon. and dude heom to vnder-  
stonde.

Of one Mihtye wihte. þat cumen is to londe.

Tó alle þat heo myhte. iseon oþer y-mete. 67

Heo gradde and seyde. ich habbe iseye þane soþe pro-  
phete.ch wene wel þat hit beo crist. of hwam. þe prophete  
sayde.

þurh ihesu cristes Milce. and þureh his wyssynge. 70

Monye þer byleuede. on þe heye kinge.

Many of the  
Samaritans  
believed on  
Christ.

And vren vt of þe bureuh. myd wel Muchel þrynge.

And comen to ihesu þar he set. and beden his blessinge.

þo byléuede þat folk. mucheles þe more. 74

For his mylde speche. and for his mylde lore.

And þus was þes bureuh a-red. vt of helle sore.

And byléuede on al-Mihty god. nuþe and euer-more.

## V.

## Fortune.

Fortune deals  
partially;

Weole þu art awaried þing. vn-euene constu dele.

þu yeuest a wrecche weole y-nouh. noht þurh his hele.

she neglects the  
poor.Wyþ freomen þu art ferly feid. wiþ sauhte and make  
heom sele.

þe poure i londe naueþ no lot. wiþ riche for to mele.

## VI.

## The Fife Joys of the Virgin.

Her bi-gynneþ þe vif Blyssen of vre leuedi  
seynte Marie.

[leaf 254]

I Leuedy for þare blisse.  
þat þu heddest at þe frume.  
þo þu wistest myd iwisse.  
þat ihesuc wolde beo þi sune.  
þe hwile we beoþ. on lyue þisse.  
sunnen<sup>1</sup> to don is vre wune.  
Help vs nv þat we ne mysse.  
of þat lif þat is to cume.

1. The bliss  
that Mary  
had when she  
knew that she  
should be the  
mother of Jesus.

4

II Moder. bliþe were þu þo.  
hwanne þu iseye heouen-king.  
Of þe ibore wiþ-vte wo.  
þat scop þe and alle þing.  
Beo vre scheld from vre ivó.  
and yef vs þine blessyng.  
And bi-wyte vs euer-mo.  
from alle kunnes suneging.

2. The bliss that  
the Virgin had  
when she bore  
heaven's King.

8

12

16

III Leuedi al myd rihte.  
þu were gled and bliþe.  
þo crist þureh his myhte.  
arós from deþe to lyue.  
þat alle þing con dihte.  
and wes i-boren of wyue.  
He make vs elene and bryhte.  
for his wundes fyue.

3. The bliss that  
Mary had when  
her Son rose from  
the dead.

20

24

<sup>1</sup> MS summen.

4. The bliss of his  
ascension into  
heaven.

IIII From þe Munt of olyuete.

þo þi sone to heouene steyh.  
þu hit by-heolde myd eye swete.  
for he wes þin heorte neyh. 28  
þer he haueþ imaked þi sete.  
in o stude þat is ful heyh.  
þer þe schulen engles grete.  
for þu ert bope. hende and sleyh. 32

5. The bliss that  
Mary had when  
she came to  
heaven.

V Þe king þat wes of þe ibore.

to heouene. he þe vette.  
To þare blisse þat wes for-lore.  
and bi hym seolue sette. 36  
Vor he hedde þe icore.  
wel veyre he þe grette.  
Blyþe were þu þer-vore.  
þo engles þe imette. 40

Mother of mercy,  
let not the world  
deceive us,

Moder of Milce. and mayde hende.  
ich þe bidde as i con.

Ne let þu noht þe world vs blende.  
þat is ful of vre ivon. 44

but help us at our  
live's end;

Ac help vs at vre lyues ende.  
þu þat bere god and mon.

send us all to  
heaven.

And vs alle to heouene sende.  
hwenne we schulle þis lif for-gon. 48

[leaf 254, back]  
Jesus, for thy  
Mother's prayers,

Ihesuc for þiṛ moder bene.

þat is so veyr and so bryht.  
Al so wis so heo is quene.  
of heouene and eorþe. and þet is ryht. 52

purify us and  
give us everlast-  
ing light.

Of vre sunnes make vs clene.  
and yef vs þat eche lyht.  
And to heouene vs alle i-méne.  
louerd þu bryng. for wel þu Miht. 56

VII.

Hwon holy chireche is vnder uote.

**H**wile wes seynte peter. i-cleped symon.  
þo queþ vre louerd him to. þu schalt hoten ston.

Ich wile myne chireche. sette þe up-on.

þeo þat heo schulde biwite. nv beoþ hire ivon.

Of alle hire forme freond. nv naueþ heo non.

þar-fore is hire wurpsype. wel neyh al agon.

þo her wes symon. and nv is symonye.

þat muchel del haueþ amerd. of þere clergie.

Bidde we vre louerd crist. þat hire warantye.

For his swete moder lue. seynte Marie.

**S**oppe wes seynte peter. pope ine Rome.

þer is þat heued. and auhte to beon. of þe cristendóme.

Clement. and Gregorie. þat him after come.

✓ Hi hedden teone and seorewe. ofte and ilóme.

✓ For hi heolden cristes men. myd sib and myd some.

And eke holi chireche wip-vten þeowedome.

✓ þo heo stod ful vaste. and seoppe sume stunde.

✓ Nu me kastep hire to. myd markes and myd punde.

Of seolure and of golde. to vellen heo to grunde.

Nis nv non þat wile for hire. þolie dep ne wunde.

**S**oppe seynt thomas þoleda dep. al myd vnrihte.

þe Archebisscop stephne. for hire gon to fyhte.

And seynt Admund soppe. ful veyre hire dihte.

For holden hire wurschipe. hi duden al heore myhte.

**N**v is holy chireche vuele vnder honde.

Al hire weorrep þat wunep ine londe.

Bispes. and clerekes. knyhtes. and bonde.

Kynges and eorles. to hire habbeþ onde.

And þe seolue pope. þat heo bi-wyte scholde.

Habbe he þe yestes. of seoluer and of golde.

Markes and pundes. myd rihte oþer myd wronge.

Heo let heom alle i-wurpe. þat beoþ so swype stronge.

**A**way þat heo bi vre daye. so is vnder uote.

**B**idde we alle ihesu crist. þat hyre sende bote.

For his swete moder lue. þat is so veyr and swote.

þat we in pisse lyue. hit i-seon mote. Amen.

Formerly Peter was called Simon, then Jesus said, Thou shalt be called Stone, and I will set my Church upon thee. But those who ought to defend the Church are her foes. All her friends and honour are gone. *8* **Simony** has taken the place of *Simon*.

After St Peter, who was Pope in Rome, came Clement and Gregory.

*16* Holy Church was not then in bondage.

Now they seek to overthrow the Church with silver and with gold. *20* None are willing to suffer death or wounds for her. St Thomas suffered death, and Archbishop Stephen fought for the Church. St Edmund held the Church in honour. But now-a-days all bear hatred towards the Church.

*28* [leaf 255]

Even the Pope is guilty of bribery.

Pray God to send her salvation, and that we may see it in this life. *36*

# Anthem of St Thomas the Martyr.

[leaf 258, back] *Incipit Antiphona de sancto Thoma Martyre in  
Anglico.*

Holy Thomas,  
thou art now the  
equal of apostles  
and martyrs.

Receive our  
petition,  
for thou art  
comfort to  
mankind—help us  
out of our sins.

**H** Aly thomas of heoueriche.

Alle apostles eueliche.

þe Martyrs þe vnderstonde.

Godfullyche. in heore hondo.

4

Selcuþ dude vre dryhtin.

þat he water wende to win.

þu ert help in engelaunde.

Vre stephne vnderstonde.

8

þu ert froure a-mong mon-kunne.

Help vs nv of vre sunne. Evovae.<sup>1</sup>

## IX.

# On Serbing Christ.

Why do we not  
serve Christ and  
be reconciled to  
him?

[leaf 259]

Lord, have mercy  
upon our  
misdeeds.

At Doomsday all  
shall be sore  
afraid.

**H** wi ne serue we crist. and secheþ his sauht.

Seoppe vs wes at þe font. fulluht by-tauht.

Ne beo we siker of þe lif. on-lepy nauht.

Crist kundeliche kyng. cuþ þu þi mayht.

4

Rihtwise louerd. on rode wes rauht.

And þolede dom vor his dupe. þat he wes ded strauht.

Yef we habbeþ werkes. yeynes þi wille wrauhht.

Louerd haue merci of vs. þat neuer ne faht.

8

Hwi ne beo we duhty men. and duten vre deden.

Al we schullen a-syen. and seo to þe nede.

*Archiv. 88, 369.*

þer þe crysmechild for sunnes. sore schal drede.

I-seon vre louerd crist. þat schal þis world fede.

12

<sup>1</sup> This word is struck through with a red line.



✓ Showen his wunden. so blodi to-bleden.  
 Nouht for his gultes. bute for Adames deden.  
 Leste he schulde his dupe. from him seolue scheden.  
 Leue we pis for sayn. soþ al so þe crede.

when the Lord  
 shall show his  
 wounds so  
 bloody,  
 which he endured  
 for Adam's deede.

16

✓ As ich ihere holde men. vpe bok rede.  
 þer ere feole to fordeme. in schynnde wede.

However  
 sumptuously  
 clothed men may  
 be,

*Archie 88, 369.*

✓ Nis so wlonk vnder crist. ridynde on stede.

✓ Ne þeos cresty clerekes. þat vpe bok rede.

20

✓ For gold ne for seoluer. ne for glysynde wede.

✓ For al þe weole and þe wyn. þat riche men fede.

For seolk. ne for cendal. ne for deore [weddes]<sup>1</sup>

at the doom shall  
 they render an  
 account of their  
 deede.

— þat ne schal at þe dom. beon demed of heore dedes. 24

þer is þe sunfulle. vnsofte to beon.

Hwer he not no wey. fyr for to fleon.

And Adames eyres beoþ parted on þre.

The sinner will  
 not know which  
 way to flee from  
 the fire.

✓ þer is gronyng and grure. and gryslich gle.

28

Bi-seche we þe louerd. þat weldeþ þe ueo,

As he for monkunnes neodes. don wes on þe treo.

And seynte Marie þe brude. þat bryht is and bleo.

Leue þat we moten at schrifte vre sunnes vn-wreo.

Hwi nule we þenchen and beo polemode.

For him þat polede for vs. þe wunden of blode.

þayh we her hoppen. ihosed and ischode.

Heonne we schulle þrynge. þat er were so mode.

Bi-leueþ oure weorre. warlawes wode.

Al þes world is bi-heled. myd heþene-hode.

Seynte peter wes prynce. and pyned is on rode.

For to volewen vre fader. his wille. pet he stode.

And we wyþ sunnes geteþ. saulene fode.

Ye mowen iheren fur drerlyke. me demep þis gode.

Nv ye Muwen iheren. in chireche. bo syngen and rede.

Hw seynte laurence. wes ibrouht bunde. for to brede.

So he wes i-hyed. and hot on þe gledi.

Ful Derlike<sup>2</sup> þis deore mon. dute his dede.

Pray to the Lord,  
 and to St Ma'y,  
 so that we may do  
 true shrift.

*Archie 88, 369.*

Let us think of  
 Jesus' sufferings  
 and be patient.

[leaf 250, back.]

Forsake war—for  
 the world is  
 covered with  
 heathendom.

St Peter suffered  
 on the cross.

St Laurence was  
 bound and  
 roasted.

<sup>1</sup> In a later hand.

<sup>2</sup> kerlike altered to Derlike.

St John the  
Baptist lost his  
head—which was  
brought as a  
present.

St Thomas was  
a bishop, and the  
barons killed  
him,  
because he would  
uphold the law  
of holy Church.

We shall all go to  
dreary death,

and take up our  
dwelling with  
[leaf 260]  
worms.

No gay robes will  
avail us there;

no brave hounds,

but body and  
bone shall rot.

Lord, have mercy  
upon us all.

Leste he schulde his saule. horyen *and* schede.  
In hepene helle þer hirdsype is gnede. 48  
Bi-seche we vre louerd. þat schal þis world fede.  
þat he haue mercy of vs. of vre Misdede.

Seynt iohan is þe beste. þat euer wes iwrouht.  
Seopþe god makede Middelerd. and mon myd his þouht.  
þureh his sely sermun. serewe him wes by-þouht.  
þe prophetes. heued to present me brouht.

For to folewen vre fader. so he haueþ [þouht].<sup>1</sup>  
Hwo ysayh. euer blisse byterluker ibouht. 56

Seynt thomas wes biscop. *and* barunes him quolde.  
Heo brutlede him ful breoly. þe beornes þat were bolde. ? 61

For he wolde þe lawe. leoflyche holde.  
As god wyþ his werkes. i þis world stolde. 60  
For þe luue of vre fader. vihten. he nolde.  
þer he þolede pyne. as þe peple. me tolde.  
For þe dute of þe dom. he þet lif solde.

Hwe schullich<sup>2</sup> þauh vre heorte beon in [? wolde] 64

Alle we schulle to þe deþ dreoreliche gon.  
And bi-leuen vre leoue freond. euervych on.

Me graueþ þis gode. in greote and in ston.  
þer wereþ vre wlite. in wurmene won. 68

Ne geyneþ vs no grene. ne no [scarlat non].<sup>1</sup>  
þe robes of russet. ne of rencyen.

Ne þe ronke racches. þat ruskit þe ron.  
Boþe him schal rotye þat body and þe bon. 72

þayh þu frayny after freond. ne fyndestu nón.  
Bute saule for seorewe makeþ hire mon.  
He þat fulewede him seolue. in þe flum iurdan.  
þureh þe sybnesse of seynt iohan. 76

þureh þe riche blode þe roche to-chon.

Louerd haue mercy of vs. euervychon. Amen.

<sup>1</sup> In a later hand.

<sup>2</sup> So in MS.

## X.

## A Luue Ron.

cf. Holthausen, Archiv, 88, 369.

Incipit quidam cantus quem composuit frater Thomas  
de hales de ordine fratrum Minorum. ad instanciam  
cuiusdam puelle deo dicte.

Minorum Priores  
115 1571 464

A Mayde cristes me bit yorne.  
pat ich hire wurchen a luue ron.

A maid of Christ  
intreated me to  
make a love-song.

For hwan heo myhte best ileorne.

to taken. on oper soþ lefmon.

4

pat [t]reowest were of alle berne.

and best wyte cuþe a freo wymmon.

Ich hire nule nowiht werne.

ich hire wule teche as ic con.

8

I will not refuse  
her, but will  
teach her as  
I can.

Mayde. her þu myht biholde.

þis worlde's luue nys bute o res.

And is by-set. so fele-volde.

vikel. and frakel. and wok. and les.

12

þeos þeines pat her weren bolde.

beoþ aglyden. so wyndes bles.

Vnder molde hi liggeþ colde.

and faleweþ so doþ medewe gres.

16

Worldly lovers  
shall pass away  
like a wind's  
blast.

Nis no mon iboren o lyue.

pat her may beon studeuest.

For her he haueþ seorewen ryue.

ne tyt him neuer [Ro ne Rest.]<sup>1</sup>

20

Toward his ende he hyeþ blyue.

and lute hwile he her i-lest.

Pyne and deþ him wile of-dryue.

hwenne he wenep to libben best.

24

Death will soon  
drive them away,

<sup>1</sup> In a later hand.

be they never so  
rich or gay.

Nis non so riche. ne non so freo.  
 þat he ne schal heonne. sone áway.  
 Ne may hit neuer his waraunt beo.  
 gold. ne seoluer. vouh. ne gray. 28  
 Ne beo he no þe swift. ne may he fleo.  
 ne weren his lif enne day.  
 þus is þes world as þu mayht seo.  
 al so þe schadewe þat glyt away. 32

This world is  
like a passing  
shadow.

Þis world fareþ hwilynde.  
 hwenne on cumeþ an oþer goþ.  
 þat wes bi-fore. nv is bihynde.  
 þat er was leof nv hit is loþ. 36  
 For-þi he doþ as þe blynde.  
 þat in þis world. his luue doþ.  
 Ye mowen iseo. þe world aswynde.  
 þat wouh goþ forþ. abak þat soþ. 40

He acts as a blind  
man that loves  
this world.

[leaf 260, back]

Worldly love is  
fleeting and full  
of sorrow.

Þeo luue þat ne may her abyde.  
 þu treowest hire myd muchel wouh.  
 Al so hwenne hit schal to-glide.  
 hit is fals. and mereuh. and frouh. 44  
 And fromward in vychon tide.  
 hwile hit lesteþ is seorewe inouh.  
 An ende ne werie mon so syde.  
 he schal to-dreosen. so lef on bouh. 48

Man shall fade  
like the leaf on  
the bough.

Man's love is not  
constant.

Monnes luue nys buten o stunde.  
 nv he luueþ. nv he is sad.  
 Nu he cumeþ. nv wile he funde.  
 nv he is wrōþ. nv he is gled. 52  
 His luue is her and ek a lunde.  
 nv he luueþ sum þat he er bed.  
 Nis he neuer treowe ifunde.  
 þat him tristep. he is amed. 56

It is not to be  
trusted.

Yf mon is riche of worldes weole.

hit makeþ his heorte smerte *and* ake.

If he dret þat me him stele.

þenne doþ him pyne nyhtes wake.

Him waxeþ þouhtes monye *and* fele.

hw he hit may witen wiþ-vten sake.

An ende hwat helpeþ hit to hele.

al deþ hit wile from him take.

World's weal  
makes the heart  
to smart and  
ache.

60

At last death will  
deprive him of  
all.

64

Hwer is paris *and* heleyne.

þat weren so bryht *and* feyre on bleo.

Amadas, tristram, *and* dideyne.<sup>1</sup>

yseude. and alle þeo.

Ector wiþ his scharpe meyne.

*and* cesar riche of wordes<sup>2</sup> feo.

Heo beoþ iglyden vt of þe reyne. }

so þe schef<sup>3</sup> is of þe cleo. }

Where now are  
Paris and Helen,

Amadas and  
Tristram, &c.,

68

Hector and  
Cesar?

*Archiv. 88, 370*

They have passed  
away as a shaft *sheaf* of murray  
from the *head* of  
bowstring. *hillside* 1489, p. 15.

72

Hit is of heom al so hit néro.

of heom me haueþ wunder itold.

Nere hit reuþe for to heren.

hw hi were wiþ pyne aquold.

*And* hwat hi þoleden alyue héré.

al is heore hot iturnd to cold.

þus is þes world of false fere.

fól. he is. þe on hire is bold.

It is as if they  
had never lived.

76

All their heat is  
turned to cold.

80

Þeyh he were so riche mon.

as henry vre kyng.

And al so veyr as absalon.

þat neuede on eorþe non euenyng.

Al were sone his þrute agon.

hit nere on ende wrþ on heryng.

Mayde if þu wilnest after leofmon.

ich teche þe enne treowe king.

Were a man as  
rich as Henry  
our King, or as  
fair as Absalom,  
at the last his  
pride would not  
be worth a  
herring.

84

Maid, if you want  
a lover I will  
direct you to  
one—

88

<sup>1</sup> MS *and* dideyne. tristram.

<sup>2</sup> *Read* worldes.

the fairest,

truest,

and richest in the  
whole world.[leaf 261]  
Henry, king of  
England, is his  
vassal.Maid, to thee this  
lover sends a  
message, and  
desires to become  
acquainted with  
thee.His dwelling is  
fairer than any  
that Solomon  
ever wrought.

A swete if þu iknowe.

þe gode þewes of þisse childe.

He is feyr. *and* bryht on heowe.

of glede chere. of mode mylde.

92

Of lufsum lost. of truste treowe.

freo of heorte. of wisdom wilde. *of wilde chere*

Ne þurhte þe neuer rewe.

myhtestu. do þe in his ylde.

96

He is ricchest mon of londe.

so wide so mon spekep. wiþ muþ.

Alle heo beoþ to his honde.

est. *and* west. norþ. and suþ.

100

Henri king of engelonde.

of hym he halt. and to hym buhþ.

Mayde to þe he send his schonde.<sup>1</sup>*and* wilneþ for to beo þe cup.

104

Ne byt he wiþ þe lond ne leode.vouh. ne gray. ne rencean.

Naueþ he þer-to. none neode.

he is riche and wel[i man.]

108

If þu him woldest luue beode.

and by-cumen his leouemon.

He brouhte þe to suche wede.

þat naueþ king ne kayser non.

112

Hwat spekestu of eny bolde.

þat wrouhte þe wise salomon.

Of iaspe. of saphir. of merede golde.

*and* of mony on oþer ston.

116

Hit is feyrure of feole volde.

more þan ich eu telle con.

þis bold mayde þe is bihote.

if þat þu bist his leouemon.

120

<sup>1</sup> *Read* sonde.

- Hit stont vppon a treowe mote.  
 þar hit neuer truke ne schal.  
 Ne may no Mynur hire vnderwrote.  
 ne neuer false þene grundwal.  
 þar-inne is vich balewes bóte.  
 blisse. and Ioye. and gleo. and Gál.  
 þis bold. mayde is þe bihóte.  
 and vych o blisse þar-wyþ-al.
- 124 This stands on a  
 sure foundation.  
 Nothing can  
 undermine it.  
 It is within full  
 of all bliss.
- 128
- Þer ne may no freond fleon oþer.  
 ne non fur-leosen his iryhte.  
 þer nys hate ne wreþþe nouþer.  
 of prude. ne of onde. of none wihte.  
 Alle heo schule wyþ engles pleye.  
 some. and sauhte. in heouene lyhte.  
 Ne beoþ heo mayde in gode weye.  
 þat wel lueþ vre dryhte.
- 132 No hate, pride, or  
 envy comes there.
- 136 All shall play  
 with angels in  
 peace and  
 concord.  
 Are they not in a  
 good way that  
 love such a  
 lord?
- Ne may no mon hine iseo.  
 al so he is. in his Mihte.  
 þat may wiþ-vten blisse beo.  
 hwanne he isihþ vre drihte.  
 His sihte is al ioye and gleo.  
 he is day wyþ-vte nyhte.  
 Nere he. mayde ful seoly.  
 þat myhte wunye myd such a knyhte.
- 140 His sight is all  
 joy and glee.
- 144
- He haueþ bi-tauht þe o tresur.  
 þat is betere. þan gold oþer pel.  
 And bit þe luke pine bur.  
 and wilneþ þat þu lit wyte wel.  
 Wyþ þeoues. wiþ reueres. wiþ lechurs.  
 þu most beo waker and snel!  
 þu art swettture þane eny flur.  
 hwile þu witest þene kastel.
- 148 He has given  
 thee a treasure  
 greater than  
 silver or gold,  
 which thou must  
 carefully guard.
- 152
- BEST.

It is a precious  
gem-stone (*jewel*);  
it heals all *lowe*-  
wounds.

**H**it is ymston. of feor iboren.  
nys non betere vnder heouene grunde.  
He is to-fore alle oþre i-coren.  
he heleþ alle lune wunde. 156

But if it once be  
lost it can never  
be found.

Wel were. a lyue iboren.  
þat myhte wyten þis ilke stunde.  
For habbe þu. hine. enes for-lóren.  
ne byþ he neuer eft ifunde. 160

This stone is  
called Virginity.

[leaf 261, back]

Þis ilke ston. þat ich þe nemne.  
Mayden-hod icleoped is.  
Hit is o derewurþe gemme.  
of alle oþre he berþ þat pris. 164

While it is whole  
and sound thou  
art sweeter than  
any spice.

And brynges þe wip-vie wemme.  
in-to þe blyse of paradis.  
þe hwile þu hyne witest vnder þine hemme.  
þu ert swettare þan any spic. 168

This jewel is  
more precious  
than any earthly  
gemme.

**H**wat spektu of eny stóne.  
þat beoþ in vertu oþer in [*? grace*]<sup>1</sup>  
Of Amatiste. of calcydóne.  
of lectorie. and tupace.<sup>2</sup> 172

Of iaspe. of saphir. of sardone.  
smaragde. Beril. and crisopace.  
Among alle oþre ymstone.  
þes beoþ deorre. in vyche place. 176

**M**ayde. al so ich þe tolde.  
þe ymston of þi bur.  
He is betere an hundred folde.  
þan alle þeos in heore culur. 180

It shines full  
bright in heaven's  
bower.

He is idon in heouene golde.  
and is ful of fyn amur.  
Alle þat myhte. hine wite scholde.  
he schyneþ so bryht in heouene bur. 184

<sup>1</sup> MS *pris* in a later hand.

<sup>2</sup> *y-vys* is added in a later hand.



Hwen þu me dost in þine rede.

for þe to cheose a leofmon.

Ich wile don as þu me bede.

þe beste þat ich fynde con.

Ne doþ hé mayde. on vuele dede.

þat may cheose. of two þat on.

And he wile wip-vte neode.

take þet wurse. þe betere let gon. ?

In choosing a  
lover

you must select  
the best.

188

þis rym mayde ich þe sende.

open and wip-vte sel.

Bidde ic þat þu hit vntrende.

and leorný bute bok vych del.

Her-of þat þu beo swiþe hende.

and tech hit oþer maydenes wel.

Hwo so cuþe hit to þan ende.

hit wolde him stonde muchel stel.

Learn this rhyme  
so as to say it by  
rote.

196

Teach it to other  
maldens.

200

Hwenne þu sittest in longynge.

drauh þe forþ þis ilke wryt.

Mid swete stephne þu hit singe.

and do al so hit þe byt.

To þe he haueþ send one gretynge.

god al-myhti þe beo myd.

And leue cumen to his brudþinge.

heye in heouene. þer he sit.

Sing it to thyself,  
and do as it bids  
thee.

204

May God be with  
thee and bring  
thee to his ~~bride-~~  
chamber in  
heaven,

208

And yeue him god endynge.

þat haueþ iwryten þis ilke wryt. Amen.

and give him that  
has written this  
piece a good  
ending!

## XI.

# The Annunciation of the Virgin Mary.

[*Jesus Coll. MS. 29, leaf 261, back, the latter part on leaf 254.*]

## Item cantus.

Gabriel's message  
to the Virgin  
Mary.

**F**rom heouene in-to eorþe. god gretynge he sende.

Bi on Archaungle. þat to Marye wende.

Milde wes þat mayde. swete *and* swiþe hende.

*Andir 88, 370.* [And of fayre ibere. Gabriel hire grette. þus queþinde. 4  
Edy beo þu mayde. þus wunyinde.

þer schal a child in þe kenyen. *and* springe.

I-lef me Marie.

Mary's answer.

Marie him onswerede. myd stephne swiþe mylde. 8

Hw myhte hit iwurþe þat ich were myd childe.

Monnes imóne on me. ne may. nómon fynde.

Of-dred wes þat mayde.

12

[leaf 254]

Of þine swete wordes. ich am swiþe gled.

Ich am godes wenche. ful wel ich hadde i-sped.

Al his wille beo ifuld. as þu hauest iseyd.

Let us pray for  
the bliss that  
lasteth for ever.

Bidde we þilke louerd. wende hwer we wende. 16

þat to þe swete mayde. gabriel gon sende.

þat for his swete moder luue. þat feyr is and hende.

Bringe vs to þe blisse. þat lesteth buten ende. Amen.

## XII.

## Fragment of a Song.

[*Jesus Coll. MS. 29, leaf 262.*]

My soul has  
nought but fire  
and ice,  
and my body  
earth and wood.

Naueþ my saule. bute fur and ýs.

*and* þe lichome eorþe and treo.

[B]idde we alle þen heye kyng.  
 þat welde schal þe laste dom.  
 þat he vs lete þat ilke þing.  
 þat we mowen his wille don.  
 He vs skere of þe tyþing.  
 þat sunfule schulle an-vnderfon.  
 Hwenne deþ heom lat to þe Murehþe.  
 þat neuer ne byþ undon. Amen.

4

May the Lord  
 preserve us from  
 the doom of the  
 wicked.

8

## XIII.

## Signs of Death.

[Jesus Coll. MS. 29, leaf 262.]

[H]wenne þin heou blokep.  
 And þi strengþe wokep.  
 And þi neose coldep.  
 And þi tunge voldep.  
 And þe byleueþ þi breþ.  
 And þi lif þe at-geþ.  
 [M]e<sup>1</sup> nymeþ þe nuþe wrecche.  
 On flore me þe streccheþ.  
 And leyþ þe on b're.  
 And bi-preoneþ þe on here.  
 And doþ þe ine putte. wurmes ivére.  
 þeonne biþ hit sone of þe. al so þu neuer nere.

When thy face  
 pales, and thy  
 strength decays,

and thy nose  
 becomes cold,  
 and thy tongue  
 falters,  
 and thy breath  
 fails,  
 and thy life goes  
 away;  
 then shall they  
 stretch thee on  
 the floor, and  
 place thee on  
 a bier, and sew  
 thee up in a clout,

and put thee in  
 a pit along with  
 the worms.

12

## XIV.

## Three Sorrowful Tidings.

[Jesus Coll. MS. 29, leaf 262.]

[V]yche day me cumeþ tydinges preo.  
 For wel swiþe sore beoþ heo.  
 þe on is þat ich schal heonne.  
 þat oper þat ich noth hwenne.  
 þe þridde is my meste kare '  
 þat ich not hwider ich scal fare.

Three things  
 cause a man to be  
 sorrowful.

1. He knows that  
 he must depart  
 hence.  
 2. He knows not  
 when.  
 3. He knows not  
 where he shall go.

4

<sup>1</sup> MS. He; but the H is by a later hand.

## XV.

## Holtzmann, Archiv, 88, 370. The Proverbs of Alfred.

## TEXT I.

[Jesus Coll. MS. 29, leaf 262.]

## Incipiunt documenta Regis Aluredi.

## 1.

At Seaford  
sat many thanes;  
bishops, and book-  
learned men.

AT Seuorde  
sête peynes monye.

fele Biscopes.

and feole bok-ilêred.

4

Eorles prute.

knyhtes egleche.

There was Earl  
Ælfric and also  
Alfred.

þar wes þe eorl Alurich.

of þare lawe swiþe wis.

8

And ek Ealured

englene hurde.

Englene durlyng:

on englene londe he wes kyng.

12

Heom he bi-gon lere.

so ye mawe i-hure.

Them did Alfred  
teach, as ye  
may hear.

hw hi. heore lif

lede scholden.

16

Alured. he wes in englene lond.

and king. wel swiþe strong.

Alfred was king  
and clerk.

He wes king. and he wes clerek.

wel he luede godes werk.

20

He wes wis on his word.

and war. on his werke.

He was the  
wisest man in  
England.

he wes þe wysuste mon:

þat wes engle-londe on.

24

## XV.

## The Proverbs of Alfred.

## TEXT II.

[From Wright's print in '*Reliquiæ Antiquæ*,' and  
Kemble's in his '*Dialogue of Salomon and  
Saturnus*.']

## 1.

|  |                             |
|--|-----------------------------|
| At Siforde                                     |                             |
| setin kinhis monie,                            |                             |
| fele biscopis,                                 |                             |
| and fele booc-lerede,                          | 4                           |
| herles prude                                   |                             |
| and cnites egleche.                            |                             |
| þer was erl Alfred,                            |                             |
| of þe lawe suiþe wis,                          | 8                           |
| and heke Alfred,                               |                             |
| Englene herde,                                 |                             |
| Englene derling ;                              |                             |
| in Enkelonde he was king.                      | 12                          |
| Hem he gon lerin,                              |                             |
| so we mugen i-herin,                           |                             |
| whu we gure lif                                |                             |
| lede sulin.                                    | 16                          |
| Alfred he was in Enkelonde a king,             |                             |
| wel swiþe strong and lufsum <sup>1</sup> þing. | 1 K. lussum.                |
| He was king and cleric,                        |                             |
| ful wel he louede Godes <sup>2</sup> were ;    | 20 2 K. Godes, W.<br>Godis. |
| he was wis on his word,                        |                             |
| and war on his werke ;                         |                             |
| he was þe wisiste mon                          |                             |
| pad was in Engelonde on.                       | 24                          |

## 2.

|   |  |    |
|---|--|----|
|   | <b>Þvs queþ Alured</b><br>englene frouer.  |    |
| If you would<br>listen to your<br>lord,                             | wolde ye mi leode<br>lusten eure louerde.  | 28 |
| he would teach<br>you wise things,                                  | he ou wolde wysse.<br>wisliche þinges.   |    |
| how to attain<br>world's honour<br>and soul's union<br>with Christ. | hw ye myhte worldes.<br>wrpsipes welde.  | 32 |
|   | and ek eure saule.<br>somnen to criste.<br>wyse were þe wordes.<br>þe seyde þe king Alured.    | 36 |
| [leaf 283, back]  | <b>Mildeliche ich Munye.</b><br>myne leoue freond.<br>poure and riche.<br>leode myne           | 40 |
| Fear Christ,  | þat ye alle a-drede.<br>vre dryhten crist.   |    |
| love and please<br>him.   | luuyen hine and lykyen.<br>for he is louerd of lyf.  | 44 |
| He is the only<br>good, joy, and<br>bliss.                          | He is one. god !<br>ouer alle godnesse.<br>He is one gleaw.<br>ouer alle glednesse.            | 48 |
|   | He is one. blisse.<br>ouer alle blissen.<br>He is one monne.<br>Mildest mayster.               | 52 |
| He alone is father<br>and comforter of<br>the people.               | He is one. folkes fader.<br>and frouer.  |    |
| He alone is<br>righteous.   | He is one. rihtwis.<br>and so riche king.<br>þat him ne schal beo wone.<br>nouht of his wille. | 56 |

## 2.

|   |                           |
|---|---------------------------|
| ¶ þus quad Alfred,<br>Englene frowere : |                           |
| Wolde we, mi leden,                     |                           |
| lustin gure louird,                     | 28                        |
| and he gu wolde wissin <sup>1</sup>     | 1 K. wissan.              |
| of wi[s]liche þinges,                   |                           |
| gu we migtin <sup>2</sup> in werelde    | 2 W. & K. mistin.         |
| wrsipe weldin,                          | 32                        |
| and heke gure sa[u]lle <sup>3</sup>     | 3 W. & K. salle.          |
| samne <sup>4</sup> to Criste.           | 4 K. samne, W.<br>same.   |
| þis weren þe sawen                      |                           |
| of kinc Alfred :                        | 36                        |
| Arme <sup>5</sup> and edie ledin.       | 5 K. Arme, W.<br>Armo.    |
| of livis dom, <sup>6</sup>              | 6 K. lifis dom.           |
| . . . . .                               |                           |
| . . . . .                               | 40                        |
| þad we alle dredin                      |                           |
| gure drigtin <sup>7</sup> Crist,        | 7 W. & K. dristin.        |
| lovin him and likin,                    |                           |
| for he is louird ouir lif.              | 44                        |
| He is one god                           |                           |
| ouer alle godnesse,                     |                           |
| and he is gleu <sup>8</sup>             | 8 K. gleu, W.<br>gleues.  |
| ouer alle glade þinhes ;                | 48                        |
| he is one blisse                        |                           |
| ouer alle blitnesse ;                   |                           |
| he is one mones <sup>9</sup>            | 9 K. mon.                 |
| mildist maister ;                       | 52                        |
| he is one folkes                        |                           |
| fadir and frowere ;                     |                           |
| he is one rigtewis, <sup>10</sup>       | 10 W. & K. riste-<br>wis. |
| and suo riche king,                     | 56                        |
| nat him sal ben wone                    |                           |
| no þing of is wille,                    |                           |

He who honoure  
him shall want  
for nothing.

we<sup>1</sup> hine her on worlde.  
wrpie pencheþ.

<sup>1</sup> Read þe.

60

3.

Þvs queþ alured.

englene urouer.

A righteous king  
must be book-  
learned,

Ne may non ryhtwis king.  
vnder criste seoluen.

64

Bute if he beo  
in boke ilered.

And he. his wyttes  
swipe wel kunne.

68

And he cunne lettres.  
lokie him seolf one.

so that he may  
rule his land  
aright.

hw he schule his lond  
laweliche holde.

72

4.

Þus queþ Alured.

The Earl and the  
Atheling are  
under the king  
to judge the land  
lawfully.

Þe eorl and þe epelyng.  
ibureþ vnder gódne king.  
þat lond to leden.

76

myd lawelyche deden.

They must judge  
all alike.

And þe clerek and þe knyht.  
he schulle démen euelyche riht.  
þe poure. and þe ryche.  
démen ilyche.

80

As one sows,  
so will he mow.

Hwych so þe mon sowep?  
al swuch he schal mowe.

Every man's  
doom returns to  
his door (comes  
home to him).

And eueruyches monnes dom.  
to his owere dure churreþ.

84

5.

It is the soldier's  
duty to guard his  
country against  
invasion,

þan knyhte bi-houeþ.  
kenliche on to fóne.  
for to werie þat lond.

88



wo him her on worolde  
wrþin þenket. 60

## 3.

¶ þus quad Alfred,  
Englene frouere :  
May no riche king  
ben onder Crist selnes, 64  
bote þif<sup>1</sup> he be booc-lerid,  
1 Read ylf.

. . . . .  
and he writes wel kenne ;  
. . . . . 68  
and bote he cunne letteris,  
lokin him seluen  
wu he sule his lond  
laweliche holden. 72

## 4.

¶ þus quad Helfred :  
þe herl and þe heþeling,  
þo ben vnder þe king,  
þe lond to leden 76  
mid lauelichi dedin ;<sup>2</sup>  
boþe þe clerc and þe cni[c]t<sup>3</sup>  
demen euenliche rict.

. . . . . 80  
. . . . .

For after<sup>4</sup> þat mon<sup>5</sup> souit,  
als suyich<sup>6</sup> sal he mouin,  
and eueriches monnes dom 84  
to his oge dure cherried.<sup>7</sup>  
4 K. aftr.  
5 K. man.  
6 K. al suyich.  
7 W. cherried.

## 5.

¶ þus quad Alfred :  
þe cnith biouit  
kenliche<sup>8</sup> to cnouen, 88  
for to weriin þe lond of hero  
8 W. kerliche.

that the Church  
may have rest,  
and the churl  
peace to sow and  
to mow, to drive  
his plough.

wiþ hunger and wiþ herivnge.

þat þe chireche habbe gryþ.

And þe cheorl beo in fryþ.

92

his sedes to sowen.

his medes to mowen.

And his plouh beo i-dryue.

to vre alre bihoue.

96

þis is þes knyhtes lawe.

loke he þat hit wel fare.

## 6.

Þvs queþ Alured.

He who learneth  
well in his youth,

þe mon. þe on his youhþe.

100

yeorne leorneþ.

wit and wisdom.

And iwriten reden :

may be a good  
instructor in his  
old age.

he may beon on elde.

104

wenliche lorþeu.

He that will not  
learn while  
young, shall  
repent of it when  
old.

And þe þat nule one youhþe

yeorne leorný.

108

wit and wysdom.

and iwriten rede.

þat him schal on elde.

sore rewe.

þenne cumeþ elde.

112

and vnhelþe.

þenne beoþ his wéne

ful wroþe isene.

Boþe heo beoþ bi-swike.

116

and oke hi beoþ a-swunde.

## 7.

Weal without  
wisdom is  
worthless,

þus queþ Alured.

Wyp-vte wysdome

is weole wel vnwurþ.

120

and of heregong,  
 þat þe riche habbe gryt,  
 and þe cherril be in frit  
 his sedis to souin,  
 his medis to mowen,  
 his plouis to driuin,  
 to ure alre bi-lif ;  
 þis is þe cnich[t]<sup>s</sup> lage,  
 loke þat hit wel fare.

92

96

<sup>1</sup> K. & W. enclchs.

[illegible]

**6.**

¶ þus quad Helfred :  
Wid widutin wisdom  
is wele ful unwrd,

120

for though a man  
had 70 acres  
sown with red  
gold, and the  
gold grew like  
grass, yet were  
he not a whit the  
worthier unless  
he gain friends  
[\* leaf 283]  
for himself,

for þey o mon ahte.  
huntseuenti Acres.  
and he hi hadde isowen.  
alle myd reade golde.  
And þat \* gold greowe.

124

so gres doþ on eorþe.  
nere he for his weole.

neuer þe furþer.  
Bute he him of frumþe.  
freond iwrche.

128

Gold is but a  
stone unless a  
wise man have it.

for. hwat is gold. bute ston.  
bute if hit haueþ wismon.

132

## 8.

A young man  
should not give  
way to sorrow,

þus queþ Alured.  
Ne scolde neuer yongmon  
howyen to swipe.

though his state  
please him not.

þeih him his wyse  
wel ne lykie.

136

Ne þeih he ne welde.  
al þat he wolde.

God may, when  
He will, send  
good after evil,

for god may. yeue þenne he wule.  
god after vuele.

140

weal after woe.

weole after wowe.  
wel is him þat hit ischapen is.

## 9.

It's hard to row  
against the  
sea-flood,

þus seyþ Alured.  
Strong hit is to reowe.  
a-yeyn þe séé þat floweþ.

144

so it is against  
misfortune.

so hit is to swynke.  
a-yeyn vnylimpe.

148

He who toils in  
his youth to win  
wealth,

þe mon. þe on his youhþe.  
swo swinkeþ.  
and worlde weole her iwinþ.  
þat he may on elde.

152

for þau o mon <sup>1</sup> h[æu]de  
 hunt seuinti acreis,  
 and he al heged <sup>2</sup> [hit] sagin  
 mid rede golde,  
 and þe golde greu<sup>3</sup>  
 so gres deit on þe reiþe,<sup>4</sup>  
 ne were hi[s] <sup>5</sup> wele  
 nout þe vurfere,<sup>6</sup>  
 bote he him fremede  
 frend y-werche.  
 For wad is g[old] bute ston,  
 bute it <sup>7</sup> habbe wis mon ?

1 K. man.

2 P read Acwede.

124

3 K. grue.

4 P þerþe.

5 W. i . . .

128 6 K. wrþere.

132 7 W. id.

7.

¶ þus quad Alfred :  
 ſulde nefere gu[n]ge <sup>8</sup> mon  
 giuen him to huuele,  
 þoeh he is <sup>9</sup> gise <sup>10</sup>  
 wel ne like . . ,  
 ne þeoh he ne welde  
 al þad he wolde ;  
 for God may giuen wanne he wele  
 goed after yuil  
 wele after wrake ;  
 ge wel him þet mot scapen.

8 K. gise, W.  
guge.136 9 K. his.  
10 W. gile.

140

8.

¶ þus quad Alfred :  
 [Stron]ge <sup>11</sup> it his to rogen  
 agen þe se flod,  
 so it is <sup>12</sup> to swinkin <sup>13</sup>  
 again hineselþe,<sup>14</sup>  
 [a]ch wel <sup>15</sup> is him agueþe <sup>16</sup>  
 þe suinch <sup>17</sup> was,  
 wanen <sup>18</sup> her on werlde  
 welþe to winnen,

144

11 K. [Sor]ge.

12 K. his.  
13 K. sginkin.  
144 14 K. heni selþe.15 W. omite.  
16 W. agueþe.  
17 K. sunich.  
Read swinkere.  
18 Read wanne.

152

so that he may  
enjoy ease in his  
old age and please  
his God,

idelnesse holde.

And ek myd his worldes weole.

god iqueme er he quele.

has well be-  
stowed his toll.

youþe and al þat he haueþ idrowe.

is þenne wel bi-towe.

156

. . . . .

## 10.

þus queþ Alured.

Many a one  
expects what  
he ought not,

Monymon wenep

160

þat he wene ne þarf.

length of life,

longes lyues.

but he shall be  
deceived.

ac him lyeþ þe wrench.

for þanne his lyues

164

alre best luede.

þenne he schal léten :

lyf his owe.

There is no herb  
that can uphold  
man's life for  
ever.

for nys no wrt uexynde

168

a wude. ne a velde.

þat euer mwwe þas feye

furf vp-holde.

No man knows  
when his last  
day shall be.

Not no mon þene tyme.

172

hwanne he schal. heonne turne.

Ne nomon þene ende.

hwenne he schal heonne wende.

God only knows.

Dryhten hit one wot.

176

doweþes louerd.

hwanne vre lif

leten schule.

## 11.

þus queþ Alured.

180

If thou hast  
wealth, be not  
therefore proud.

Yf þu seoluer and gold.

yfst<sup>1</sup> and weldest in þis world.

<sup>1</sup> Read yetst.

Neuer vpen eorþe.

to wlonk. þu ny-wrþe.

184

[bat] he muge on helde  
 hednesse holdin ;  
 migt<sup>1</sup> his welpe  
 werchin Godis wille,  
 [b]enne his his guepe<sup>2</sup>  
 swiþe wel bitogen.

1 K. . . . mist, W.  
 ne mist.  
 156

2 W. & K. gæwe.

10.

¶ þus quad Alfred :  
 Monimon wenit  
 þat he wenen ne þarf,  
 longer<sup>3</sup> liuis,  
 ac him scal legen þat wrench ;  
 for wanne he is lif alre beste trowen,  
 þenne sal he letin lif his ogene.  
 Nis no wurt woxen  
 on woode ne<sup>4</sup> on felde,  
 þet<sup>5</sup> euure muge þe lif up helde.<sup>6</sup>  
 Wot no mon þe time  
 wanne he sal henne rimen,  
 ne no mon þen hende,  
 wen he sal henne wenden ;  
 Drittin<sup>7</sup> hit one wot,  
 domis louird,  
 wenne we ure lif  
 letin scullen.

160

3 K. longere.

164

4 K. ne, W. no.  
 168 5 K. þer.  
 6 K. uphelden.

172

7 ƿ Drictin.

176

. . . . .  
 . . . . .  
 . . . . .

9.

¶ þus quad Alfred :  
 Gif þu hauest welpe a wold<sup>8</sup>  
 i þis<sup>9</sup> gerlde ne þin wil neure for-þi  
 al to wlonc wurþen,  
 [ac]te<sup>10</sup> nis non eldere stren,  
 BEST. 8

180

8 K. awold.

9 W. i-wis.

184 10 K. acte, W.  
 [Ah]te.

It is not thy  
forefathers' ac-  
quisition,  
but God's gift.  
Therefrom must  
we depart when  
it is His will.

Ayhte nys non ildre istreon :

ac hit is godes lone.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Or lone.

hwanne hit is his wille.

þar-of we schulle wende.

188

And vre owe lyf.

myd alle for-leten.

Then shall our  
foes seize our  
treasures.

þanne schulle vre ifon.

to vre vouh. gripen.

192

welden vre Mayþenes.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>2</sup> Read madnes.

and leten vs by-hinde.

12.

þus queþ Alured.

Trust not too  
much to the  
sea-flood.

Ne ilef þu nouht to fele.

196

uppe þe séé þat floweþ.

If þu hafst madnes

monye and inowe.

Gold and silver  
shall turn to dust,  
but God shall  
live for ever.

gold and seoluer.

200

hit schal gnyde to nouht.

to duste hit schal dryuen.

[\* leaf 263, back]

Dryhten schal \* libben euere.

Monymon for his gold.

204

haueþ godes vrre.

Many a one loses  
his soul through  
his silver.

And for his seoluer.

hym seolue for-yemeþ.

for-yeteþ and forleseþ.

208

Betere him by-come

iboren þat he nére.

13.

þus queþ Alured.

Listen, my  
people, and I will  
instruct you.

Lvstep ye me leode.

212

ower is þe neode.

And ich eu wille lére.

wit and wisdom.

Wit and wisdom  
excel all things.

þat alle þing ouer-gop.

216



ac it is Godis loue,  
 wanne hit is his wille,  
 þer-fro<sup>1</sup> we sullen wenden,  
*and* ure ogene lif  
 mid sorw letin,  
 þanne scullen ure fon  
 to ure fe gripen,  
 welden ure madmes  
*and* lutil us bimenen.

1 W. wer fro.

188

192

## 11.

¶ þus quad Alfret :  
 Leue þu þe nout to swiþe  
 up þe se-floed ;  
 gif þu hawest madmes monie  
*and* moch gold *and* siluir,  
 it sollen wurþen to nout,  
 to duste it sullin<sup>2</sup> driuen ;  
 Drigtin<sup>3</sup> sal liuin eure.  
 Monimon for is gold  
 hauid Godis eire,  
*and* þuruch is siluer  
 is saulle he for-lesed.  
 Betere him were  
 i-borin þat he nere.

196

200

2 K. sullen.

3 K. &amp; W. Dristin.

204

208

## 12.

¶ þus quad Alfred :  
 Lustlike lustine<sup>4</sup>  
 . . lef dere,  
*and* ich her gu wille leren  
 wenes mine,  
 wit *and* wisdomes,

212 4 K. lustnie.

216

Wealth may pass  
away, but wisdom  
will remain,

syker he may sitte.  
þe hyne haueþ to i-vere.  
For þeyh his eyhte him a-go.  
his wit ne agop hym neuer-mo.

220

and no man may  
periah that has it  
for his comrade.

for ne may he for-vare  
þe hyne haueþ to vere.  
þe wile his owe lyf.  
ileste mote.

224

## 14.

If thou hast  
sorrow, keep it to  
thyself.

þus queþ Alured.  
If þu hauest seorewe.  
ne seye þu hit nouht þan arewe.  
seye hit þine sadelbowe.

228

Ride singing  
away,

and ryd þe singinde forþ.  
þenne wile wene.

and people will  
think thee  
contented and  
happy.

þet þine wise ne con:  
þat þe þine wise wel lyke.  
serewe if þu hauest.

232

Tell not thy  
sorrow to thy foe,  
for he will pity  
thee to thy face,  
and scorn thee  
behind thy back.

and þe erewe hit wot:  
by-fore. he þe menep:  
by-hynde he þe teleþ.

236

Thou mayest tell  
it to such a man  
as would wish  
thee more.

þu hit myht segge swyhc mon.  
þat þe ful wel on.  
wyþ-vte echere ore.

240

Therefore hide  
thy sorrow in  
thine heart.

he on þe Muchele more.  
By-hud hit on þine heorte:  
þat þe eft ne smeorte.  
Ne let þu hyne wite.  
al þat þin heorte by-wite.

244

## 15.

þus queþ Alured.  
Ne schal-tu neuere þi wif.

248

þe alle welþe on ure god,  
 siker he may [sitten],  
*and* hwo hem nu<sup>1</sup> senden.  
 For þoch his weleþe him at-go,  
 is wid ne wen[t] him newere fro.  
 Ne may he newir for-farin,  
 hwo him to fere hanep,  
 hwilis þat is lif  
 lesten may.

1 K. mite.

220

224

## 13.

¶ þus quad Alfred :  
 Gif þu hauist sorwe,  
 ne say þu hit þin arege ;  
 seit þin sadilbowe,  
*and* rid þe singende.  
 þanne sait þe mon  
 þat ti wise ne can,  
 þad þe þine wise  
 wel þe likit.  
 Sorege gif þu hauist,  
*and* ten arege hit sed,  
 bi-foren he þe bimened,<sup>2</sup>  
 bi-hindin he þe scarne l.  
 þu hit migt<sup>3</sup> seien swich mon,  
 þad it þe ful wel on,  
 swich mon<sup>4</sup> þu maist seien þi sor,  
 he wolde þad þu heuedest mor.  
 For-þi hit in þin herte . . . one,<sup>5</sup>  
 for-hele hit wid þin arege,  
 let þu neuere þin arege witin  
 al þer þin herte þenket.

228

232

236

2 K. bimenid.

3 W. &amp; K. mist.

240

4 h. men.

5 K. hirte one.

244

## 16.

¶ þus quad Alfred :  
 Ne sal þu þi wif

248

Choose not a wife  
for her beauty  
nor for wealth.

by hire wlyte cheose.  
for neuer nōne þinge.  
þat heo to þe bryngeþ.

Study her  
disposition,

Ac leorne hire custe.  
heo cuþeþ hi wel sone.

252

for many a one  
for money fares  
but ill.

For mony mon for ayhte.  
vuele i-auhteþ.

Oft a man  
chooses a frail  
one, though fair.

And ofte mon of fayre.  
frakele icheoseþ.

256

Woe is him that  
an ill woman  
bringeth home.

wo is him þat vuel wif.  
bryngeþ to his cotlyf.  
so him is alyue!

260

She shall make  
him oft dreary.

For he schal vppen eorþe.  
dreori i-wurþe.

*cf. Anglia, 3, 370.*

{ Monymon singeþ.  
þat wif hom bryngeþ.  
wiste he hwat he brouhte.  
wepen he myhte.

264

*Archiv, 88, 370.*

16.

Be never so mad  
as to tell thy  
wife all thy will.

þus queþ Alured.  
Ne wurþ þu neuer so wod.  
ne so wyn-drunke.

268

þat éuere segge þine wife.  
alle þine wille.

272

If she saw thee  
before all thy foes,  
and thou hadst  
angered her, she  
would reproach  
thee with thy  
misfortune.

For if þu iseye þe bi-vora.  
þine i-vo alle.

And þu hi myd worde  
iwreþþed heuedest.

276

Ne scholde heo hit lete.  
for þing lyuyinde.

þat heo ne scholde þe forþ vp-breyde.  
of þine baleu-sypes.

280

Woman hath  
tongue too swift.

wymmon is word.-wop.  
and haueþ tunge to swift.

bi hire wlite chesen,  
 ne for non athte <sup>1</sup> to pine bury bringen,  
 her þu hire costes cuþe ;  
 for moni mon for <sup>2</sup> athte <sup>3</sup>  
 iuele i-hasted,  
*and* ofte mon on faire  
 fokel chesed.  
 Wo is him þat iuel wif  
 brinhit to is cot-lif ;  
 so his oliue  
 þat <sup>4</sup> iuele wiued,  
 for he sal him often  
 dreri maken.

<sup>1</sup> *Read* achte.

252 <sup>2</sup> W. fer.  
<sup>3</sup> *Read* achte.

256

<sup>4</sup> W. þai.

260

. . . . .  
 . . . . .  
 . . . . .  
 . . . . .  
 . . . . .  
 . . . . .

264

17.

¶ þus quad Alfred :  
 Wurþu neuere swo wod,  
 ne so drunken,  
 þat euere sai þu þi wif  
 al þat þi wille be.  
 For hif hue sege <sup>5</sup> þe  
 biforen pine fomen alle,  
*and* þu hire mit worde  
 wraged <sup>6</sup> hauedest,  
 he ne sold it leten <sup>7</sup>  
 for þinke liuihinde,  
 þat he ne solde þe up-breidin  
 of pine bale-sipes.  
 Wimon is word-wod,  
*and* hauit tunke to swist, <sup>8</sup>

268

272

<sup>5</sup> W. segen.

276 <sup>6</sup> ? wra[n]ged.

<sup>7</sup> K. letin.

280

<sup>8</sup> *Read* swift.

If she would she  
could not control  
her tongue.

þeyh heo wel wolde.  
ne may heo. hi nowiht welde.

284

## 17.

[leaf 264]  
Idleness and  
pride teach a  
young wife evil  
manners.

þus queþ Alfred.  
Idelschipe and ouer-prute.  
þat lereþ yong wif vuele þewes.  
And ofte þat wolde.  
do. þat heo ne scholde.

288

She might easily  
shun vice, if she  
oft were sweaty  
with toil.

þene vnþev lihte.  
leten heo myhte.  
If heo ofte a swóte  
for swunke were.  
þeyh hit is vuel to buwe.  
þat heo nule treowe.

292

Oft mouseth the  
cat after the  
mother.

For ofte Museþ þe kat.  
after hire moder.

296

Where the wife is  
master, seldom  
does the man  
enjoy peace.

þe mon þat let wymmon  
his mayster iwurþe.  
Ne schal he neuer beon ihurd.  
his wordes louerd.

300

Ac heo hine schal steorne  
to-trayen. and to-teóne.  
And selde wurþ he blype and gled.  
þe mon þat is his wiues qued.

304

Many an apple is  
bright without  
and bitter within;

Mony appel is bryht wiþ-vte.  
and Bitter wiþ-inne.

308

so is many a  
woman fair in her  
bower, and yet is  
she hurtful.

So is mony wymmon.  
on hyre fader bure.  
Schene vnder schete.  
and þeyh heo is schendful.  
So is mony gedelyng.  
godlyche on horse.  
and is þeyh lutel wurþ.  
wlonk bi þe glede.  
and vuel at þare neode.

312

316

þauc<sup>1</sup> he hire selue wel wolde,  
ne mai he it nowit welden.

1 W. þane.

284

## 21.

¶ þus quad Alured :

Idilsceipe *and* orgul-prude,

þat lerit gung wif

leþere þewes,

288

*and* often to þenchen

don þat he ne scolde.

Gif he for-swu[n]ken<sup>2</sup>

swoti wuere<sup>3</sup> swo hie ne þochte,

292

ac þoch hit is iuel to bewen<sup>4</sup>

þat tertre<sup>5</sup> ben ne wille;<sup>6</sup>

for ofte mused þe catt

after þe moder.

296

Wose lat is wif his maister wurþen,

sal he neuer ben his wordes louerd ;

ac<sup>7</sup> he sal him rere dreige,

*and* moni tene selliche hawen :

300

selden sal he ben on sele.

## 20.

¶ þus quad Alured :

Moni appel is wid-uten grene,

bri[c]t<sup>8</sup> one<sup>9</sup> leme,

*and* bittere wid-innen.

8 W. & K. brit.  
9 K. on.

So his moni wimmon

308

in hire faire bure,

schene under schete,

*and* þocke hie is [schendful]

in an stondes wile.

312

Swo is moni gadeling

godelike on horse,

wlanc on werge,

*and* unwurþ on wike.

316

## 18.

þus queþ. Alured.

Take not too  
quickly as counsel  
the word of thy  
wife, if she be  
angered by word  
or deed.

[N]eure þu bi þine lyue.

þe word of þine wyue.

to swipe þu ne aréde.

320

If heo beo i-wreþþed

myd worde. oþer myd dede.

A woman often  
weeps to further  
her purpose or to  
beguile thee.

wymmon wepeþ for mod.

oftere þan for eny god.

324

And ofte lude *and* stille.

for to vordrye hire wille.

Heo wepeþ oþer-hwile.

for to do þe gyle.

328

Salomon hit haueþ i-sed.

A woman knows  
full evil counsel;  
he who follows  
her advice will  
come to sorrow.

þat wymmon can wel vuelne red.

þe hire red foleweþ.

heo bryngeþ hine to seorewe.

332

for hit seyþ in þe loþ.

as seumes forteoþ.

hit is ifurn iseyd.

Woman's counsel  
is colt counsel,  
says an old  
proverb.

þat cold red is quene red.

336

hu he is vulede.

þat foleweþ hire rede.

Ich hit ne segge nouht for þan.

þat god þing ys god wymmon.

340

þe mon þe hi may icheose.

and icouere over oþre.

## 19.

þus queþ Alured.

Many a man  
thinketh, what he  
need not think,  
that he has a  
friend.

Monymon wenep

344

þat he weny ne þarf.

Freond þat he habbe.

þar me him vayre bi-hat.

seyþ him vayre bi-vore.

348

and frakele bi-hynde.



25.

¶ þus quad Alured :

Uretu noth <sup>1</sup> to swiþe

1 ? nocht.

þe word of þine wiue ;

for þanne hue bed i-warþed <sup>2</sup>

320 2 W. i-wuarþ-  
ed (P).

mid wordes oþer mid dedes,

wimmon weped for mod

ofter þanne fro eni god,

and ofte lude and stille

324

for to wurchen hire wille.

Hue weped oþer wile,

þen hue þe wille biwilen

Salamon hid hawit i-sait,

328

hue can moni yuel reid.

Hue ne mai hit non oþir don,

for wel herliche hue hit bi-gan.

þe mon þad hire red folewiþ,

332

he bringeþ him to soruge ; <sup>3</sup>

3 W. seruge.

for hit is said in lede,

cold red is quene red.

Hi ne sawe it <sup>4</sup> nocht bi þan,

336 4 K. hit.

þat god þing is god wimmon ;

þe mon þad michte hire cnoswen, <sup>5</sup>

5 Read cnowen.

and chesen hire from oþere.

340

. . . . .

. . . . .

. . . . .

19.

¶ þus quad Alured :

Mani mon <sup>6</sup> wenit

344 6 K. man.

þat he wenin ne þarf,

frend þad he habbe,

þer mon him faire bi-hait,

seiet him faire bi-foren,

348

fokel at-henden.

so me may þane loþe  
lengust lede.

Believe not the  
man of many  
words, nor all  
the things thou  
hearest men sing.

Ne ilef þu neuer þane mon.  
þat is of feole speche.  
Ne alle þe þinge.

352

þat þu iherest singe.

It's hard to guard  
against a  
treacherous  
mouth.

Mony mon haueþ swikelne muþ.  
milde and monne for-cuþ.

356

Nele he þe cuþe.

hwenne he þe wule bi-kache.

20.

þus queþ Alured.

360

Through saws a  
man is wise.

Þvrh sawe mon is wis.

And þurh his elþe. mon is glev.

þurh lesinge mon is loþ.

[\* leaf 264 b.]

and þurh lupre wrenches. And \*vnwurþ.

364

And þurh hokede honde. þat he bereþ.

him seolue he for-vareþ.

Keep thee from  
lying, and shun  
all vice, then  
mayst thou be  
beloved among all  
people.

From lesyng þu þe wune.

And alle vnþewes þu þe bi-schune.

368

so myht þu on þeode.

leof beon in alle leode.

And lue þyne nexte.

he is at þe neode gód.

372

Make friends at  
market, and at  
church, with poor  
and with rich.

At chepyng. and at chyreche.

freond þu þe iwurche.

wyþ pouere and wyþ riche.

wyþ alle monne ilyche.

376

þanne myht þu sikerliche.

sely sytte.

And ek faren ouer lond le

hwider so beoþ þi wille.

380

21.

þus queþ Alured.

All worldly wealth

Alle world-ayhte

So mon mai welþe lengest helden,  
 giu þu neuere leuen  
 alle monnis spechen, 352  
 ne alle þe þinke  
 þat þu herest sinken ;  
 for moni mon hauit fikil mod,  
 and he is monne cuð. 356  
 Ne saltu neuere knewen  
 wanne he þe wole biþechen.

## 23.

¶ þus quad Alfred : 360  
 þurch <sup>1</sup> sage mon is wis,  
 1 K. þurh.  
 and þurh selþe mon is gleu,  
 þurch <sup>2</sup> lesin mon is loð,  
 2 K. þurh.  
 and <sup>3</sup> þuruh lupere wrenches unwurp. 364 3 K. omits.  
 And hokede honden make þen mon  
 is hewit to lesen.  
 Ler þu þe neuer  
 ouer mukil to leþen ; 368  
 ac loke þine <sup>4</sup> nexte,  
 4 K. þinne.  
 he is ate nede god ;  
 and frendchipe <sup>5</sup> o werlde 5 K. frendschipe.  
 fairest to wurchen, 372  
 wid pouere and wid riche,  
 wid alle men i-liche,  
 þanne maist þu sikerliche  
 seli sittin, 376  
 and faren ouer londe,  
 hwar so bet þi wille.  
 . . . . .  
 . . . . . 380

## 29.

¶ þus quad Alured :  
 Werldes welþe

|  |   |     |
|--|---|-----|
| shall turn to<br>naught.   | schulle bi-cumen to nouhte.<br>And vyches cunnes madmes.<br>to mixe schulen i-Multen.   | 384 |
| Our life shall last<br>but little while.   | And vre owe lif.<br>lutel hwile ileste.   |     |
| Though one man<br>wielded all the<br>world, and all the<br>joy that dwells<br>therein, he could<br>not therewith<br>keep his life. | for þeyh o mon.<br>wolde al þe worlde. <i>from</i><br>And al þe wunne.<br>þe þar-inne wunyeþ.<br>Ne myhte he þar-myde his lif.<br>none hwile holde.<br>Ac al he schal for-leten.<br>on a litel stunde.  | 388 |
| Our bliss shall<br>turn to bale,<br>unless we work<br>the will of Christ.  | And schal vre blisse:<br>to balewe us iwurþe.<br>Bute if we wurchep.<br>wyllen cristes.<br>Nu bipenche we þanne vs sulue.<br>vre lif to leden.<br>so crist vs gynneþ lere.<br>þanne mawe we wenen.<br>þat he wule vs wrpie.<br>for so seyde salomon. þe wise. | 396 |
|  | þe mon þat her wel deþ.<br>he cumeþ þar he lyen foþ.<br>on his lyues ende.<br>he hit schal a-vynde.   | 400 |
|  |   | 404 |
| The man who<br>does well here<br>obtains reward at<br>his life's end.  |   | 408 |
|  |   |     |
|  | þus queþ Alured.<br>Ne gabbe þu ne schotte.<br>ne chid þu wyþ none sotte.<br>ne myd manyes cunnes tales.<br>ne chid þu wiþ nenne dwales.<br>Ne neuer þu ne bi-gynne.<br>to telle pine typinges.   | 412 |
| Chide not with a<br>fool.  |   |     |
| Tell no tidings  |   | 416 |



|  |   |     |
|--|---|-----|
| at a free man's table.   | At nones fremannes borde.<br>ne haue þu to vale worde.  |     |
| With few words a wise man can compass much.                      | Mid fewe worde. wismon<br>fele biluken wel con.   | 420 |
| A fool's bolt is soon shot.                                      | And sottes bolt is sone i-scohte.<br>for-þi ich holde hine for dote.<br>þat sayþ al his wille.<br>þanne he scholde beon stille. | 424 |
| Often does tongue break bones.                                   | For ofte tunge brekeþ bon.<br>þeyh heo seolf nabbe non.   |     |
| 23.  |   |     |
| If thou hast a child, while it is little teach it men's manners. | þus queþ Alured.<br>Wis child is fader blisse.  | 428 |
|  | If hit so bi-tydeþ<br>þat þu bern ibidest.<br>þe hwile hit is lutel.  |     |
|  | ler him mon-þewes.  | 432 |
|  | þanne hit is *wexynde.<br>hit schal wende þar-to.<br>þe betere hit schal iwurþe<br>euer buuen eorþe.                            | 436 |
| If thou lettest him have his own will,                           | Ac if þu him lest welde.<br>werende on worlde.<br>lude and stille.  |     |
|  | his owene wille.  | 440 |
|  | hwanne cumeþ ealde.<br>ne myht þu hyne awelde.<br>þanne deþ hit sone.   |     |
| when he comes to age   | þat þe biþ vnyqueme.<br>Ofer-howeþ þin ibod.  | 444 |
| he will cause thee sorrow.                                       | and makeþ þe ofte sory-mod.<br>Betere þe were.  |     |
|  | iboren þat he nere.   | 448 |
| Better is child unborn than unbuxom (disobedient).               | for betere is child vnborn.<br>þane vnbusum.  |     |

at neuere nones monnis bord ;  
 ne hawe þu to fele word.  
 þe wise mon mid fewe word  
 can fele biluken ;  
*and* sottis bold is sone i-scoten.  
 For-þi ich telle him for a dote,  
 þad<sup>1</sup> sait al is y-wille,  
 þanne he sulde ben stille :  
 for ofte tunke brekit bon,  
*and* nauid hire selwe non.

420

1 K. þat.

424

## 14.

¶ þus quad Alfred :  
 Wis child is fadiris blisse.  
 Gif it so bitidit  
 þat þu chil[d] weldest,  
 þe wile þat hit is litil  
 þu lere him monnis þewis ;  
 þanne hit is woxin,  
 he sal wenne þerto ;  
 þanne sal þe child  
 þas þe bet worþen.<sup>2</sup>  
 Ac gif þu les him welden  
 al his owene wille,  
 þanne he comit to helde,  
 sore it sal him rewen ;  
*and* he sal banne þat wigt<sup>3</sup>  
 þat him first tagte.  
 þanne sal þi child  
 þi forbod ouer-gangin.  
 Beter þe were<sup>4</sup> child  
 þat þu ne hauest ;  
 for betere is child vnborn  
 þenne vnþeten.

428

432

436 2 K. wurþen.

440

3 K. &amp; W. widd.

444

4 W. þere.

448

He that spares  
the rod and lets a  
young child rule,  
when the child  
grows old he  
shall rue it sore.

þe mon þe spareþ yeorde.

and yonge childe.

452

and let hit arixlye.

þat he hit areche ne may.

þat him schal on ealde!

• sore reowe. Amen.

456

Expliciunt dicta Regis Aluredi.

[End of Text I.]



. . . . .  
 . . . . .  
 . . . . .  
 . . . . .  
 . . . . .  
 . . . . .  
 . . . . .

452

456

## 15.

¶ þus quad Alfred :

Drunken *and* vndrunkin

eþer is wisdomes wel god,

þarf no mon drinkin þe lasse,

þan he be wid-ale wis ;

ac [gif]<sup>1</sup> he drinkit*and* desiet þere a morge,

so þat he for drunken

desiende werchet,

he sal ligen long anicht,

litol sal he sclepen ;

him sugh sorege to,

so deð þe salit on fleas,

suket<sup>2</sup> þu is liche,

so dot liche blod ;

*and* his morge sclepsal ben muchil estin,<sup>3</sup>

werse þe swo on euen

yuele haued y-dronken.

460 To drink or not  
to drink, either is  
with wisdom  
good.

1 K. [ef].

464 He that sots of a  
morning

468 shall sleep but  
little at night.

2 K. sukit.

472

3 K. muchil lestin,  
W. umchilestin.  
It shall be worse  
for him who gets  
drunk at night.

476

## 18.

¶ þus quad Alvered :<sup>4</sup>

Wurþu neuere so wod,

ne so desi of þi mod,

þad euere sige þi frend

al þat þe likit,

ne alle þe þonkes<sup>5</sup>

4 K. Alured.

Be not so mad  
as to tell thy  
friend all thy  
thoughts.

480

5 K. þonches.

|  |   |     |
|--|---|-----|
|  | pat þu poeh hauist ;                          |     |
| Relatives often quarrel together.  | for ofte sibbie men                           | 484 |
|  | foken hem bituenen,                           |     |
|  | and ef it so bilimpit                         |     |
| 1 K. lo[op]e.  | lo[p]e <sup>1</sup> þat ge wurpen,            |     |
| If thou and thy friend fall out, then thy enemy knows what thy friend knew before. | þanne wot þi fend                             | 488 |
|  | þad her wiste þi frend.                       |     |
|  | Betere þe bicomē                              |     |
|  | þi word were helden,                          |     |
| 2 W. þam ne.   | for þanne <sup>2</sup> mud mamelit            | 492 |
|  | more þanne hit solde,                         |     |
|  | þanne sculen his heren                        |     |
| 3 K. iheren.   | ef it i-herin. <sup>3</sup>                   |     |
| 22.  |   |     |
|  | ¶ þus quad Alfreuerd :                        | 496 |
| If thou gainest a true friend,   | Gif þu frend bi-gete                          |     |
|  | mid þi fre bigete,                            |     |
|  | loke þat þu him þeine                         |     |
| 4 W. þe uues. take pains to keep up his friendship.                                | mid alle þeuues <sup>4</sup> pines,           | 500 |
|  | loke þat he þe be mide                        |     |
|  | bi-foren and bi-hinden,                       |     |
| 5 K. bet.  | þe bett <sup>5</sup> he sal þe reden          |     |
|  | at alle þine neden.                           | 504 |
|  | And on him þu maist þe tresten,               |     |
| 6 Read yif. 7 K. trog þe.  | þif <sup>6</sup> is troyþe <sup>7</sup> degh. |     |
| If thou hast a friend to-day and drivest him away to-morrow,                       | Ac gif þu hauist a frend to day,              |     |
|  | and to moreuin drinist him auei,              | 508 |
|  | þenne bes þu one,                             |     |
|  | al so þu her were ;                           |     |
|  | and þanne is þi fe for-loren,                 |     |
|  | and þi frend boþen.                           | 512 |
| it were better for thee never to have had one.                                     | Betere þe bicomē frend                        |     |
|  | þat þu newedest.                              |     |

## 24.

¶ þus quad Alured :

Gif þu hauist duge,  
and drich[t]en þe senden,  
ne þeng þu neuere þi lif  
to narruliche leden,  
ne þine faires  
to faste holden.

For wer hachte is hid,  
þer is armþe i-noch ;  
and siker ich it te saige,  
letet gif þe liket,<sup>1</sup>  
swich mon mai after þe þi god welden,  
ofte<sup>2</sup> binnen þine burie  
bliþe wenden,  
þad he ne wele heren  
mid muþe<sup>3</sup> monegen ;  
ac euere<sup>4</sup> him of-þinket,  
þen he þe þenked.<sup>5</sup>

516 If thou hast  
wealth

do not be nig-  
gardly with it, or  
thy riches will  
prove no better  
than poverty.

520

524

1 K. licket.  
Remember that  
another may  
enjoy thy wealth  
2 K. oft.  
after thee,  
and despise  
thee whenever he  
thinks of thee.

528

3 W. ennþe.

4 W. eversere.

532 5 K. þenced.

## 27.

¶ þus quad Alvred :<sup>6</sup>

Elde cumid to tune,  
mid fele unkeþe costes ;  
and doþ<sup>7</sup> þe man to helden,  
þat him selwe ne mai he him noch welden.  
Hit makit him wel vnmeke,  
and binimit him is migte.<sup>8</sup>  
Gif<sup>9</sup> it swo bitided,<sup>10</sup>  
þat þu her so longe abidist,  
and þu in þine held<sup>11</sup> werldes,  
welþe weldest,  
þi dugeþe gin<sup>12</sup> þu delen  
þine dere frend,  
hwile þine dages dugen,  
and þu þe selwen liue mowe.

6 K. Alfred.

Age brings with  
it many strange  
habits.

536 7 W. doþe.

It makes a man  
weak and  
impatient.

8 W. & K. miste.

540 9 W. gif.  
10 K. betided.

11 K. helde.  
Be liberal to thy  
friends in thy  
life time,

544 12 W. dugeþe giv.  
so that thy  
name may live  
among them.

Put no trust in  
those that are to  
come after you,

Haue þu none leue  
to þe þad after þe bileued,  
to sone ne to douter,  
ne to none of þine foster.

548

for he that is  
absent is soon  
forgotten.

For fewe frend we sculen finden,  
þanne we henne funden :  
for he þat is ute bi-loken,  
he is inne sone for-geten.

552

28.

If poverty over-  
take thee,

¶ þus quad Alured :  
Gif þu i pin helde best  
welþes bi-delid,  
*and* þu ne cunne þe leden  
mid none cunnes listis,

556

together with the  
infirmities of old  
age,

ne þu ne moge mid strenghe  
þe selwen steren,

560

yet thank God for  
giving thee life  
and daylight, and  
for all the mirth  
that He has made  
for man,

þanne þanke þi louerd  
of alle is loue,  
*and* of alle þine owene liue,  
*and* of þe dagis licht,  
*and* of alle murþe  
þad he for mon makede.  
*And* hweder so þu hwendes,

564

1 K. at en.  
and ever say,  
happen what will,  
God's will be  
done.

sei þu aten<sup>1</sup> ende,  
wrþe þad i-wurþe,  
i-wurþe Godes wille.

572

30.

Son, sit down by  
me, and I will  
instruct thee in  
true manners.

¶ þus quad Alured :  
Sone min swo leue,  
site me nu bisides,  
*and* hich þe wile sagen  
soþe þewes.

576

2 K. fele, W. fela.

Sone min, ich fele<sup>2</sup>

3 W. & K. hert.

þad min hew<sup>3</sup> falewidþ,

- and min white is wan,*  
*and min herte woc,*  
*mine dagis arren nei done,*  
*and we sulen unc to-delen ;*  
*wenden ich me sal*  
*to pis opir werlde,*  
*and þu salt bileuen,*  
*in alle mine welpe.*  
*Sone min,<sup>1</sup> ich þe bidde,*  
*þu ard mi barin dere,*  
*þad þu þi folck be fader,*  
*and for louerd ;*  
*fader be þu wid child,*  
*and be þu wudewis<sup>2</sup> frend,*  
*þe arme gume þu froueren,*  
*and þe woke gume þu coueren,*  
*þe wronke gume<sup>3</sup> þu rigtin<sup>4</sup>*  
*mid alle þine migtin ;<sup>5</sup>*  
*and let þe sune mid lawe,*  
*and lowien þe sulen Drigtin<sup>6</sup>*  
*and ower alle opir þinke*  
*God be þe ful minde,*  
*and bide þad he þe rede*  
*at alle þine dedis,*  
*þe bet sal he<sup>7</sup> þe filsten*  
*to don al þine wille.*
- 580 My complexion  
 becomes pale,  
 my heart is weak,  
  
 584 and we must part  
 from one another ;  
  
 thou shalt have all  
 my wealth.  
  
 588 1 K. mine.  
  
 Be a father to  
 thy people,  
  
 592  
  
 2 K. wuidewis.  
 and the widow's  
 friend.  
  
 596 3 W. givve.  
 4 W. & K. ristin.  
 5 W. & K. mistin.  
 Act with equity.  
  
 6 W. Drijten.  
  
 600 Be mindful of  
 God above all  
 things ;  
  
 pray to Him for  
 counsel, and He  
 will aid thee.  
  
 604 7 W. omits.

## 31.

- ¶ þus quad Alured :  
 Sone min so dere,  
 do so ich þe lere ;  
 be þu wis on þi word,  
 and war o þine speche,  
 þenne sulen<sup>8</sup> þe lowien  
 leden alle.  
 þe gunge mon<sup>9</sup> do þu lawe,
- 608  
  
 Be wise of word  
 and wary of  
 speech, then all  
 shall love thee.  
 8 K. sullen.  
  
 612 Give law to the  
 young.  
 9 K. men.

Let the old man  
have his land.

1 *Read yif.*

2 *Read metes.*

þad helde lat is lond hawen.

Drunken mon þif<sup>1</sup> þu mestes,<sup>2</sup>

in weis oþer in stretes,

616

Avoid the  
drunken man.

þu gef him þe weie reme

and let him ford gliden.

3 W. & K. mist.

þenne migt<sup>3</sup> þu þi lond

4 K. mid.

mit<sup>4</sup> frendchipe helden.

620

5 ? buge.

6 W. fot, K. sot.

Avoid an abusive  
fool.

Sone, þu best bus<sup>5</sup> þe sot<sup>6</sup>

of bismare word,

and bet him siwen þer-mide,

7 W. givve.

þad him ginne<sup>7</sup> to smerten.

624

And baren, ich þe bidde,

8 *Read yif.*

þif<sup>8</sup> þu on benche sitthest,

Rise and give  
place to the  
hoary head,

and þu þen beuir hore sixst

þe bi-foren stonden,

628

9 K. sette.

buch þe from þi sete,<sup>9</sup>

and invite him  
to take thy seat;

and bide him sone þer-to,

þanne welle he sawin

632

sone one his worde,

wel worþe þe wid,

þad þe first taite.

sit beside him,  
and learn wisdom  
from him.

Sete þanne seipin

10 K. bisiden hem,

besiden him<sup>10</sup> seluen,

636

11 W. & K. mist.

for of him þu migt<sup>11</sup> leren

12 K. listis.

listes<sup>12</sup> and fele þeues,

13 W. & K. mist.

þe baldure þu migt<sup>13</sup> ben ;

640

[ne] for-lere þu his reides,

We may out-ride,  
14 K. man,  
but not out-wit  
the old man.

for þe helder mon<sup>14</sup> me mai of-riden,

betere þenne of-reden.

32.

¶ þus quad Alured :

Sone min so dere,

644

ches þu neuere to fere

þen lupere lusninde mon,

Choose not a  
deceitful man  
as a friend,  
for he will do  
thee harm.

for<sup>15</sup> he þe wile<sup>16</sup> wrake don.

15 K. fore.  
16 W. will.

From þe wode þu nicht <sup>1</sup> te faren  
 wid willis *and* wid armes ;  
 ac þanne þu hid lest wenest,  
 þe <sup>2</sup> lufere þe biswiket.  
 þe bicche bitit ille,  
 þan he berke stille ;  
 so deit þe lusninde lufere mon,  
 ofte þen he darit <sup>3</sup> don,  
 þan he be wiþuten stille,  
 he bit wipinin <sup>4</sup> hille,  
*and* al he bi-fulit his frend,  
 þen he him vnfoldit.

648 1 K. mitht.

The false one will  
 betray thee when  
 thou least  
 expectest.

2 W. þu.

652 The barkless  
bitch bites ill.

So acts the  
 false man,  
 3 K. dar it.

656

4 K. wipinen.  
 and befouls his  
 friend.

## 33.

¶ þus quad Alured :  
 Lewe sone dere,  
 ne ches þu <sup>5</sup> neuere to fere  
 þen hokerfule lese mon,  
 for he þe wole gile don ;  
 he wole stelin þin haite <sup>6</sup> *and* keren,  
*and* listeliche on-suerren ;  
 so longe <sup>7</sup> he uole <sup>8</sup> be bi,  
 he uole <sup>9</sup> brinhin on *and* tuenti  
 to nout, for soþe <sup>10</sup> ich tellit þe :  
*and* oþer he wole lipen *and* hokerful ben,  
 puru hoker *and* lesing þe aloped  
 alle men þat hen y-cnowed.  
 Ac nim <sup>11</sup> þe to þe a stable mon,  
 þat word *and* dede bi-sette con,  
*and* multeplien <sup>12</sup> heure god,  
 a sug fere þe his help in mod. <sup>13</sup>

660

5 K. þe.  
 Choose not a  
 scornful false  
 friend,

664

6 P allite.  
 for he will steal  
 thy goods and  
 deny the theft.

7 W. longer.  
 8 W. nole.

668

9 W. nole.

10 K. sothe.

672

Take to thee a  
 steadfast man,  
 11 W. min.  
 that is wise in  
 word and deed.  
 He will prove a  
 12 K. multiplen.  
 true friend in  
 13 P niad.  
 need.

676

## 34.

¶ þus quad Alured :  
 Leue sone dere,  
 ne ches þu neuere to fere

Choose never as  
 a mate

|   |   |     |
|---|---|-----|
| a little man,<br>or a long one.<br>1 <i>Read yif.</i>   | littele mon, ne long, ne red,<br>þif <sup>1</sup> þu wld don after mi red. <i>Ms. þif, 6-11. 31</i>   | 680 |
| The little man<br>will carry himself<br>very high,<br>2 K. & W. teir.   | ¶ þe luttele mon he his so rei,<br>ne mai non him wonin nei ;<br>so word he wole him seluen bere, <sup>2</sup> <i>ben 111</i>   | 684 |
| 3 K. is.<br>4 K. & W. beir.   | þat his <sup>3</sup> louird maister he wolde tere; <sup>4</sup> <i>ten 111</i><br>bute he mote himseluen pruden,<br>he wole maken fule luden ;  |     |
| 5 K. chide.<br>and will chide<br>and fight,<br>6 <i>Read yif.</i><br>and will never<br>be satisfied.  | he wole grennen, cocken, <i>and</i> chiden, <sup>5</sup><br><i>and</i> hewere faren mid vnluden.<br>þif <sup>6</sup> þu me wld i-leuen,<br>ne mai me neuer him quemen.  | 688 |
| The lanky man<br>is languid—his<br>heart is stony.  | ¶ þe lonke mon is leþe bei,<br>selde comid is herte rei ;<br>he hauit stoni herte,<br>no þing him ne smertep ;  | 692 |
| 7 K. biford.<br>He is afraid of a<br>stick or a stone.<br>8 <i>Read yif.</i><br>If he falls into a<br>fen, he cries<br>lustily for help.<br>9 <i>Read yif.</i><br>10 K. slitte.<br>But if he falls<br>into a ditch he is<br>dead for certain.<br>11 W. & K. quet. | bi ford <sup>7</sup> dages he is aferd,<br>of sticke <i>and</i> ston in huge werd.<br>þif <sup>8</sup> he fallit in þe fen,<br>he þewit ut after men ;<br>þif <sup>9</sup> he slit <sup>10</sup> in-to a dige,<br>he is ded witerliche.               | 696 |
| 12 W. uvil.<br>13 W. & K. red.<br>The red man is a<br>bully, thief, and<br>whoremonger ;<br>a shrew, and a<br>king of mischief.   | ¶ þe rede mon he is a quede, <sup>11</sup><br>for he wole þe þin iwil <sup>12</sup> rede ; <sup>13</sup><br>he is cocker, þef, <i>and</i> horeling,<br>scolde, of wrechedome he is king.<br>Hic ne sige nout bi þan,<br>þat moni ne ben gentile man ; | 704 |
| 14 K. lere.<br>Nevertheless he<br>may be a<br>gentleman.  | þuru þis lore <sup>14</sup> <i>and</i> genteleri,<br>he amendit huge companie.  | 708 |



## XVI.

## An Orison of our Lord.

[*Jesus Coll. MS. 29, leaf 265.*]

## Tractatus quidam.

Louerd crist ich þe grete.

þu art so mylde and swete.

From heouene louerd þu hider come.

And of þe swete mayde þu fleys nóme.

And hw hit ferde mon may esche.

þi goddede wes ihud in fleysse.

Of þe mayde þu were ibore.

God *and* mon so wel icóre.

þo þu hire to cóme. heo mayde wes.

And mayde heo wes after wemmeles.

Ihesuc ich þe gréte. as ich er seyde.

þu were ibore louerd of þe swete mayde.

þu vnderuenge al vre wówe.

Wip-vte sunne. þat riht wule knowe.

As oþer childre. þu eodest and speke.

Hunger and þurst. þu þoledest eke.

Buhsun and poure þu were iwis.

Forbysne þu vs yeue. and nouht amys.

Ihesuc ich þe grete cryst louerd Min.

þat for vs þoledest so swiþe muchel pyn.

Wunderliche þurh wacche. and fast.<sup>1</sup>

þi swete lychome þu teonedest.

Lord Jesus, thou  
didst become  
man.

4

of the Virgin  
thou wast born.

8

12

Thou didst take  
all our woes.

16

Thou wast buxom,  
and didst give us  
good example.

20

For us thou didst  
suffer pain.

<sup>1</sup> A later hand has added *inge*, and to the next line *vor to þe us bringe*.

[leaf 265 b.]  
Thou didst teach  
us to do good and  
forsake evil.

God to donne and vuel to by-leue.  
Ful gode vorbysne þu vs yeue. 24  
No more luue ne may mon cheosen.  
þane deþ to þolyen. for oþer to alesen.

Thou didst suffer  
many bloody  
wounds.

Thesuc ich þe grete. þat were þar harde ibunde.  
Wiþ scourges þu þoledest mony blodi wunde. 28  
Bi-vore þe heþene men þu stode.  
Naked and bylaued myd blode.

Buffets didst  
thou endure,

Buffetes þu þoledest inowe.  
Bi-spat þu were and al myd wowe. 32

and didst wear  
the crown of  
thorns.

Mid on red mantel þu were by-weued  
Crune of þornes. þu heuedest on heued. 36  
Ne myhte þe mixes. þo wurse þe don.  
Bute a-mong þeoues. on rode an-hon.  
Al þu þol[e]dest for vre sake.  
Al þe seorewe. þat heo þe myhte make.

The wretches  
hung thee on  
the rood.

Thesu crist þat so luedest mon.  
Ich þe grete al so ich best con. 40  
þat þoledest. þat pi swete lich.  
Of heþene to-dreued wes sullych.

Thy hands and  
feet were  
pierced through  
with three nails.  
The spear pierced  
thy side.

Ipurled weren myd nayles þreo  
Honden and fet. faste to þe treo. 44  
þat cold iren þu þoledest in pi syde.  
Of þe spere kene to þin heorte glyde.  
As þu þoledest þeos fyf wunde.  
Of seorewe and sunne. wite vs myd isunde. 48

Thesuc ich þe grete. And þat is wel ryht.  
And þarto to don. boþe mayn and myht.  
For þe muchel þoleburne. and þar-to don boþe mayn  
and myht.

Archiv 88, 372.

þat þu schawedest mon-kunne. þo þu þoledest deþ. 52  
After alle þe pyne. þat þe runnen a blode.  
þoledest louerd crist. þat me þe dude on rode.  
Hwo so hit ileueþ myd gode wille.  
Ne may nouht þe feond. his saule a-spille. 56

Whoso believeth  
on thee shall not  
[leaf 266]  
be injured by  
fiends.

Ihesuc ich þe gréte so wysslych.  
 As þu dep þoledest myldelich.  
 Ich þe bidde louerd þurh þe ilke rode.  
 þar þu myd blodie wunde stode.  
 On þine werkes. so my lif leade.  
 And so do by þine rede.  
 þat my saule habbe lysse.  
 þat myn ende come to eche blysse. Amen.

I beseech thee  
 by thy cross and  
 passion that I  
 may follow  
 thy example,

60

so that I may  
 come to eternal  
 bliss.

64

## XVII.

## The Duty of Christians.

[*Jesus Coll. MS. 29, leaf 266.*]

## Tractatus quidam.

þeo soþe luue a-mong vs beo.  
 wyþ-vten euch endyngē.  
 And crist vs lete wel i-þeo.  
 and yue vs his blessyngē.  
 And yeue vs þat we moten fleo.  
 euer sunegyngē.  
 And þene feond and al his gleo.  
 and al his twyelingē.  
 Vte we wurpi þene louerd god.  
 þat hider vs brouhte.  
 He wes wip vs swiþe edmod.  
 þar he vs wrouhte.  
 And eft he wes ihonge on rode.  
 for helpe þene vor-wrouhte.  
 Mid his fleysse and myd his blod.  
 he vs alle bouhte.  
 Iblessed beo such eþerling.  
 vs mylce þat he wolde.  
 He is vre beste king.  
 we ouhte beon hym holde.

Let true love be  
 amongst us for  
 ever

and may Christ  
 speed and bless  
 us.

4

May he enable us  
 to flee sin and  
 the devil.

8

Let us honour  
 our Lord who  
 suffered on the  
 Cross,

12

and redeemed us  
 with his flesh  
 and blood.

16

He is our best  
 king, and we  
 ought to be true  
 to him.

20

He is our Creator  
and we are his  
offspring.

And we beoþ alle. his of-sprung.  
iknowe we hit scholde.  
For he scop vs and alle þing.  
of þar eorþe molde.

24

He has ordained  
the whole of our  
life.

Crist vs haueþ of eorþe iwrouht.  
to eorþe he wule vs sende.  
Mid his deþe we weren ibouht  
from þe feondes bende.

28

He hit haueþ al bi-þouht.  
þe frumþe to þon ende.  
How we beoþ hider ibrouht.  
and hwider we schulle wende.

32

If we are  
righteous

If we beoþ ryhtwise.  
and luuyep vre dryhte.

And doþ his seruyse.

myd al vre myhte.

36

we need not fear  
day nor night.

Ne þarf vs neuer a-gryse.  
bi daye ne bi nyhte.

We shall shine  
in Paradise.

We schulle in paradys[e].  
schynen swiþe bryhte.

40

Hence we must  
all go.  
[leaf 266 b.]

ÞIs world is neyh þan ende.  
þe deþ neyep blyue.

Heonne we schullen wende.

ne may non her bi-leue.

44

The doom is near  
at hand.

þe dom. is vs neyh hende.  
yef we vs leteþ schryue.

Crist vs wile sende.

to þon eche lyue.

48

Let us observe  
Christ's behests.

Vte we holde þat ilche bod.  
þat crist vs wile theche.

He yef vs liþ and deþ anfoþ.

he is vre leache.

52

He is our leech.

Let us ever be  
meek in word  
and deed.

Vre euch beo wiþ oþer edmod.  
on werke and of speche.

Elles vre louerd god.

on vs wulle don wreche.

56

Mid gode beode myd gode þonk.

we schule to criste grede.

And bidde mylce of vre wrong.

of vre gydihede.

60

Of vre sunnen þat beoþ wel strong.

of vre fule dede.

Hwenne cumeþ he vs among.

and wile vs myd him lede.

64

Vre louerd crist vs wule téo.

to heouene myd iwisse.

If we wulleþ vuel fleo.

ne þurue [we] þat mysse.

68

Wel is him þat schal þer beo.

he may þer habbe lyse.

He may þer. euer crist iseo.

and ioye inouh. and blysse.

72

Þer wurþ day buten nyhte.

ne þarf þar no mon syche.

Hwer forþ<sup>1</sup> griþ wyþ-vten fihþ.

wel god, is heoueneriche.

76

þer wurþ soþ wip-vten vuriht.

and euer hit wurþ ilyche.

þer wurþ euenyng. carle<sup>2</sup> and cnyht.

poure men and riche.

80

Þe<sup>3</sup> soþe luue is heom among

and mylce and ryhtwisnesse.

Riht bi-leue and clene þonk.

and sibbe and edmodnesse.

84

Ne wurþ þer varyht ne wrong.

ne wreþþe ne idelnesse.

þer wurþ ioye and mury song.

wip-vte swikelnesse.

88

Let us pray to  
God for mercy  
upon our  
misdeeds.

Then will Christ  
lead us to heaven,

where we shall  
ever have joy  
and bliss.

There is day  
without night,

peace without  
fight,

truth without  
unright.

The churl and  
the knight shall  
be equal, as  
well as poor  
men and rich.

There shall be  
joy and merry  
song.

<sup>1</sup> ? Per wurþ.

<sup>2</sup> MS. clare.

<sup>3</sup> MS. Ve.

If we desire to  
enter that rich  
abode,

If we wulleþ þider in.

to þare riche wunynge.

Idelschipe. and luþer iwyn.

and wrappe and hatynge.

92

Prude and onde and feondes gyn.

and vyche sunegyng.

we must forsake  
all our sins before  
our end-day,

We mote for-sake. er vre fyn.

and do þer-of [mendinge]<sup>1</sup>

96

We schulde among vs habben ay.

soþe luue and sibbe.

and be earnest  
in fulfilling  
Christ's law.

We schulde abute cristes lay.

beon yearnfulle. and clybbe.

100

We schulde luuye alle way.

for we beoþ alle isybbe.

[leaf 267]

And vs ibidde. nyht and day.

hwihles þat we libbe.

104

Have true love  
one to another.

Þe soþe luue is god and mylde.

*Archir 88, 372.*

nys heo nowiht sturne.

This love is  
neither proud  
nor wild nor  
covetous.

Nis heo nouþer prut ne wilde.

nele heo non ayhte yrne.

108

þat folk worþ eft wroþe i-spild.

þe nule to hire turne.

Ihesuc seynte Marie child.

heom wule his riche werne.

112

True love is not  
envious.

Þe soþe luue is al rihtwis.

*Archir 88, 372.*

ne kepeþ heo non onde.

Mid þan folke þat riht wis is.

he wile ay at-stonde.

116

May our Lord  
Christ Almighty  
lead us to  
heaven's bliss.

Vre louerd crist þat almyhti is.

alese vs of his bonde.

And lede vs in-to heouene blys.

and sette vs on his ryht honde. Amen. 120

<sup>1</sup> In a later hand.

## XVIII.

The Shires and Hundreds of  
England.[*Jesus Coll. MS. 29, leaf 267.*]

Her bigynneþ þe syren. and þe hundredes of engelonde.

Engle lond is. eyhte hundred Myle long. from penwyp steorte. þat is fyftene Mylen by-yonde Mihhales steowe. on cornwale. fort þat cume. to katenes. þe breade of Engle londe is. þreo hundred myle brod. from Dewyes steowe. to Doueran. On engle londe syndon. two and þrytti schire. summe more and summe lasse. And þreottene byscopryche. And two erchebiscopryche. þat is alles. vyftene byscopryche. On is þe erchebiscophryche of Kanterbury. Oþe þe leod byscopryche. 9 on Rouecestre. þe pridde on lundene. þe feorþe. on Norþwych. þe fyfte. on Cicestre. þe sexte. on wyncestre. þe seouepþe on saresbury. þis byspryche wes hwylen. two byspriche. þeo oþer stól. wes at remmesbury. And þe oþer at schireburne. Ac eadward king. bitauhte þeos 14 two. Heremon biscop. And he myd þes kinges leaue Adylegade. þa twa noman. and makede enne. at saresburi. þe cyhteope. on excestre. þis wes ek two byspriche. Oþer on cornwale. and þe stol wes at seynte Germane. and þe oþer stol. at Bridyport. Ac leofrych biscop. hit makede to one. myd eadwardes kynges leaue. And sette hit to excestre. þe Nyeþe. on Bapun. Ac þes 21 stol. wes at welle. \*And Baþe wes Abbodryche. And on willames daye þe yonger kynges. wes þat Abboddie by-numen. And imaked þer Bisscop stol. þurh

England is 800 miles long from Penwith point to Calthness.

The breadth is 800 miles from Dewistow to Dover.

There are 32 shires, 18 bishoprics, and two archbishoprics.

Salisbury was formerly two bishoprics,

but made one by Heremon.

Exeter was formerly two,

but made one by Leofric.

[\* leaf 267 b.]

Lincoln was  
formerly three  
bishoprics.

- 25 iohan. þe teoupe on wirecestre. þe eollette on hereforde.  
þe tweolfte. on lycchesfeld. þe preotteope. on lyncholne.  
Ac þis wes hwile. þreo bisscop-riche. for-þi her-to hereþ  
.viii. store schire. and on half schire .xiii. on Dunholme.  
xv. on Euerwich. þis wes .v. bispriche. On þe erche-  
30 bisscop-riche. Oper. on oper half þes wateres .iiij. on  
Rypun .iiij. on hwytebi .v. at beuerley. Her beoþ .xv.  
bispryche.

There are 32  
shires.

- Swo we biforan queþen .xxxij. schiren. syndan. on  
Sengelonde. And Norþhumbre<sup>1</sup> is wip-vtan. And  
loðen. and westmara-lond. and Cumberlond. And  
36 Cornwale. On Cornwale syndan .vii. lutle schire.  
And scotlaund. And Brutlaund. And wyht. þes

They are divided  
into three laws.

1. West Saxon.
  2. Dane Law.
  3. Mercian Law.
1. West Saxon  
has nine shires.

- .xxxij. schire syndon. to-delede on þreo lawan. On is  
west-sexene lawe. Oper Dene lawe. þe þrydde Mercena  
lawe. To west-sexene lawe<sup>1</sup> bi-lympeþ .ix. schiren.  
Kent supsexe. superay. Bearruc schire. wiltone schire.  
On wiltone schire. syndon .xlviii. hundred hida. sup-  
43 hampton. schire. sumerseth schire. Dorset schire.

2. Dane Law has  
15 shires.

- Deuena sch[i]re. To Dene lawe. bilympeþ. xv. schire.  
Everwich schire. Snotingham. Deoreby schire. Leycestre  
schire. Lyncolne schire. Hertford schire. Bokingham  
schire. supfolk. Norþfolc. Bedeford. sch[i]re .xii. hun-  
dred hyda. Eastsexe. Grauntebrugge schire. xxv. hun-  
49 dred hida. Huntyndune schire<sup>2</sup> viij. hundred hida. and  
half hundred. Norhamtone schire .xxxij. hundred.  
hida. Middelsex. To Mercene lawe<sup>3</sup> bilimpeþ .viij.  
schiren. Gloucestre schire<sup>3</sup> xxxiiij. hundred hida.  
wyricestre schire<sup>3</sup> .xij. hundred hida. Hereford schire<sup>3</sup>

3. Mercian Law  
has eight shires.

- 54 xij. hundred hida. warewik schire<sup>3</sup> xij. hundred hida.  
Oxeneford schire<sup>3</sup> xxiiij. \*hundred hida. Slobschire<sup>3</sup>  
xxiiij. hundred hida. Chestre schire<sup>3</sup> .xij. hundred  
hida. Stafford schire .v. hundred hida. þis is vnder al<sup>3</sup>  
xxvi. þusend hida. and on half hundred.

[\* leaf 268.]



# The xi Pains of Hell.

[*Jesus Coll. MS. 29, leaf 271, col. 2.*]

Ici comencent les vnze peynes  
de enfern. les queus seynt pool v[ist]

**P**lest uus oyer vne demaunde.  
Ke li deable fist estraunge.

De vn cheytif pecchéur.<sup>1</sup>

Ke hors fu mys de grant tristur.

De mort en vie resuscité

Par la voluté de Dé.

Vnsely gost hwat dostu here.

þu were in helle myne vere.

Hwo haueþ helle dure vnloke.

þat þu ert of pyne ibroke.

Dvnke respund le mort a lu

En le secle v il fu.

Cunte en ordre e cunte. & dist.

Les .xi. peynes ke seynt pol vist.

Des autres ke il an senty

Vn sul mot ne menty.

Wiltu ihere me sathan.

Hw ich am of helle igan.

Wrmes habbeþ my fleys ifreten.

And Mine freond me habbeþ foryeten.

Ich mon wes. as þu wel wost.

And nv ich á wrecche gost. *Archiv 88, 372.*

In helle ich habbe yare ibeo.

þat mon may on myn hewe iseo.

The pains of  
hell which St  
Paul saw.

4 Satan asks a  
sinner who was  
raised from the  
dead :

8 Wretched sprite,  
what dost thou  
here ?

Who hath  
unlocked hell's  
door and let  
thee out ?

12

The answer of the  
sprite to Satan.

16

20 Worms have  
gnawed my flesh.  
My friends have  
forgotten me.  
I was once a man,  
now am I a  
[leaf 271 b, col. 1.]  
wretched ghost.  
Any one may see  
that I have been  
in hell.

24

<sup>1</sup> The accents used in the French lines are not in the MS.

Of me mon may forbysne taken.  
 þat wile his sunnes for-saken.  
 To wroþere hele he wes ibore.  
 þat for sunnes is for-lore. 28

For þe mon þat her wrcheþ swo.  
 þat his saule to helle gó.

In hell are more  
 pains than there  
 are birds flying  
 under heaven.

In mo pyne he schal beo.  
 þan foweles vnder heouene fleo. 32

There are *burn-  
 ing trees* upon  
 which are hanged  
 the souls of those  
 who would never  
 go to church in  
 this life.

Erest þer beoþ bernynde treon.

I

No mon ne may herre iseon.

þer þe saulen beoþ an-hón.  
 þat her habbeþ sunnes i-don. 36

And nolden neuer to chireche gon.

For-þi hi polieþ þer such won.

Thicker they  
 hang than do the  
 bees in their hive.

þickure hi hongef þer ouer al.  
 þan don been in wynterstal. 40

There is an *oven*  
 heated, at which  
 stand seven  
 devils who toss  
 the guilty souls  
 into the furnace.

Seppen þer is on ouen ihat.

II

Seoue deoulen þar stondeþ at.

And þe saulen vnder-fop.

And heom in-to þe fure doþ. 44

þinges þer beoþ al abuten.

þat mon auhte muchel duten.

There is *snow,  
 ice, clotted blood,  
 snakes, adders,  
 that fiercely*  
 sting.

Snov. and is. and lyured blod.

Snaken. and neddren. stingef for wod. 48

Of þat fur heo doþ heom þer.

*Archib 88, 372.*

And eft also hi weren er.

Hwich saule. þe þer cumeþ to.

No rest have the  
 guilty souls.

Naueþ heo neuer reste ne ro. 52

Heo wolde deye. ac heo ne may.

[leaf 271 b, col. 2.]

Ac þer heom tyd beon alne way.

Such pains shall  
 the lascivious,

Swich pyne heo þolie schal.

þat wes of his fleyssse to gal. 56

And nolde leten his fleyssses wil.

Ac folewede al þat wes vnskil.

the rearer of  
 unright laws,

And þer heo þolyeþ swich wondrawen.

þat her arereden vnryhte lawen. 60

þider cumeþ þe saulen ilome.

þat her demde false domes.

Mo saulen. þolieþ þer swich wo.

þene fysses swimme oþer fueles go.

Heo gredeþ lude and wepeþ sore.

Ac bóte. ne tyd heom neuer more.

A hwel of stele is furþer mo.

And berneþ lihte and turneþ o.

A þusend spoken beoþ þer-on.

And pykes ouer al idon.

þer schule þe saulen beo to-drawe.

þat her arereden vnryhte lawe.

Mo saulen þolieþ þer sucche wowe.

þane be floþre in þe snowe.

Fvrþer þer is a water wallinde hot.

þat is. deop. and long. and brod.

Blakkure þan þe swarte pich.

And stynkeþ so for-holde lych.

Of vych a wrm þat atter bereþ.

Oþer hit stingeþ oþer hit tereþ

Ifulled is þat fule pool

þat euer is hot. and neuer cool.

Bisydes stondeþ an feondes trume.

And wayteþ hwenne þe saules cume.

Heo hire a-warieþ al aþrep.

Al so wulues doþ þe scep.

Hwenne þe feondes heom for-leteþ.

Snaken and neddren heom imeteþ.

And dreyeþ heom in-to a wel.

þer heo polyeþ al vn-sel.

Hwenne heo habbeþ so i-don.

Eft hit beoþ heom al fornnon.

Ne may he segge. waylawei.

þat so schule pynen nyht. and day.

Summe me may þer iseon.

þat stondeþ vp to heore kneon.

and false judges  
suffer.

More souls suffer  
there than there  
are fishes in the  
sea.

Further there  
is a wheel of  
steel, with a  
thousand spokes  
covered with  
spikes.

Upon this are  
broken the rearers  
of unjust laws.

More souls suffer  
there than there  
are flakes in a  
fall of snow.

Further there is a  
boiling-hot lake,  
deep, long, and  
broad, blacker  
than pitch.

This pool is full  
of venomous  
serpents.

A troop of fiends  
stand about the  
pool, and seize  
the wicked like  
wolves do sheep.

[leaf 272, col. 1.]

## III

## IV

64

68

72

76

80

84

88

92

96

others up to  
their thighs;  
some up to their  
eyebrows,  
others up to  
their teeth.

*And summe to heore myd-peyh.  
And summe to heore vuere breyh.  
And summe riht to heore theþ.  
As he her his sunnes dep.*

100

Backbiters shall  
stand up to their  
knees.

*Bakbiteres weren þeo.  
þat stondeþ vp to heore kneo.*

Whores and  
whoremongers  
shall stand up  
to their neck.

*þat wes heore oþer copynere.*

Wedlock breakers  
shall stand up  
to their mouth.

*Stondeþ vp to heore swere.*

104

*And heo þat her wedlac brekeþ.*

*To heore muþe þe flod takeþ.*

He who is glad  
of another's harm  
up to his arm.

*He þat is glad of oþres harme.*

*Stondeþ vp in-to þan arme.*

108

Those that spake  
wickedly in  
church, up to  
their mouth.

*þat spek in chirche. þat nes no god.*

*To his muþe takeþ þe flod.*

He who betrayed  
his kinsfolk shall  
have the flood  
up to his eyes.

*þat wreyeþ his sibbe. oþer him fled.*

*Abuuen his eyen. þe flod geþ.*

112

He who works  
his wicked will  
shall be quite  
covered.

*þat doþ his wil þat nys noht ryht.*

*Of him ne may me iseo nowiht.*

*Hwo is wis bi me beo war.*

*þat his saule ne cume þar.*

116

*For þeyh þe Middenerd ago.*

*Heore pyne ilesteþ .o.*

[col. 2.]

Further is a *well*  
deep fen, full  
of woosers and  
women.

*U*vrþur. is a ful deop fen.

V

*Ful of wowares. and of wymmen.*

120

It is dark and  
stinking with  
brimstone.

*þe stude is þustrore. þene þe nyht.*

*For þer. ne cumeþ neuer lyht.*

*And stinkeþ fulre þane þe hund.*

*For Brunston walleþ at þe grund.*

124

Ten thousand  
fiends gnaw the  
tongues in two,  
and draw out the  
brains of those  
who were lovers  
of usury.

*Ten þusend feondes. and wel mo.*

*þar freteþ heore tunge a two.*

*And dreyeþ vt heore brayn.*

*Vor heo weren of gaele vayn.*

128

*Such is heore pyne þer.*

*Vor heo weren gaelers her.*

The women are  
placed further on,

*þenne beoþ þe wymmen furþer i-don.*

*þat nowiht nabbeþ heom up-on.*

132

Heom me drepeþ myd þe piche.

As we brede wiþ þe spiche.

Neddren heore breosten sukeþ.

*And* snakes heore eyen lukeþ.

Helle hundes gnaweþ heore feet.

*And* four feondes heom stondeþ at.

For heo heore mayden-hod lure.

Er heo come to chireche dure.

*And* furduden heore istreon.

*þat* hit ne moste ifulled beon.

Heo hit wurpen hundes oþer swin.

For-þi hi þolieþ þar such pyn.

**U**vrþer þer beoþ wimmen. *and* wapmen bo. VI  
*þat* feondes dreȝeþ al a two.

Hwenne hi beoþ so to-drawen.<sup>1</sup>

Gripes freteþ heore Mawen.

Half heo doþ in o fur.

*And* half in-to a froren mur.

*And* heore ineward vych del.

Ne beo þe þarm ne so smel.

Eft heo werpeþ. al in al.

*And* wurchep to þat ilke gal.

Vuele heo beoþ ipyned ynouh.

*þat* her duden wiþ heom woh.

Oþer reueden wrecches heore lond.

*And* brohten heom to muchel scond.

He ne funde fader ne freond hom by.

For-þi me drof hom of londe awy.

Of heom hi token vnriht mol.

For-þi hi drayeþ myd such sol.

**U**vrþer þer is o wateres flod.  
*þat* is ymeynd al wiþ blod.

A þusen[d] saulen þer beoþ bi.

Sore of-purst *and* ful hungri.

In fure hi berneþ al<sup>2</sup> away.

<sup>1</sup> MS. to-drayen.

<sup>2</sup> Or aa.

where they are  
 basted with  
 pitch.

Adders suck their  
 breasts.

136 Snakes close up  
 their eyes.

Hounds gnaw  
 their feet.

Four devils  
 stand by.

140 These women  
 were unchaste,

and destroyed  
 their offspring  
 and gave it to  
 hounds or swine.

144

Further on, men  
 and women are  
 drawn in two by  
 fiends.

148 Vultures gnaw  
 their maws,  
 half they put  
 in the fire,  
 [leaf 272 b, col. 1.]  
 and half in a  
 frozen fen.

152 Also their in-  
 wards, be the  
 guts never so  
 small, are cast  
 therein.

156

These gully ones  
 robbed the poor  
 and ill-treated the  
 fatherless and  
 friendless.

160

## VII

164 Further there is  
 a stream all  
 mixed with  
 blood.

It contains  
 1000 hungry and  
 thirsty souls;

in fire they burn  
 away night and  
 day.

|   |  |      |
|---|--|------|
|   | <i>And so doþ þat water nyht and day.</i>      | 168  |
|   | <i>Ne moten heo biden neuer o sope.</i>        |      |
|   | <i>Nabben heo neuer so muche hope.</i>         |      |
| <i>These wretches<br/>broke the behests<br/>of holy Church.</i>   | <i>Such pine hi habbeþ imet.</i>               |      |
|   | <i>þat breken þe hesten þat weren iset.</i>    | 172  |
|   | <i>In holy chirche ouer al.</i>                |      |
|   | <i>For-þi hi pleyeþ myd such bal.</i>          |      |
| <i>Further on there<br/>are old men<br/>living amongst<br/>stinging adders<br/>that gnaw their<br/>flesh to the bone.</i>       | <i>Vvrþer þer beoþ olde men.</i>               | VIII |
|   | <i>þat among neddren. habbeþ heore den.</i>    | 176  |
|   | <i>Heom heo to-stynges vychon.</i>             |      |
|   | <i>And freteþ heore fleys. to þe bon.</i>      |      |
| <i>Adders suck<br/>their brains.<br/>[col. 2.]</i>  | <i>And neddren sukeþ heore brayn</i>           |      |
|   | <i>And creopeþ vt. and in ayeyn.</i>           | 180  |
|   | <i>Summe beoþ fur-brend. and summe ifrore.</i> |      |
|   | <i>And alle þe bones beoþ to-drore.</i>        |      |
| <i>After being<br/>fretted to pieces,<br/>they become<br/>whole again,<br/>so as to undergo<br/>all that torture<br/>again.</i> | <i>Hwenne hi beoþ ifrete vychon.</i>           |      |
|   | <i>Eft hi beoþ al in on.</i>                   | 184  |
|   | <i>Noht for to wenden heom from.</i>           |      |
|   | <i>Ac for eft þolie þat wrecchedom.</i>        |      |
|   | <i>Heo woneþ and groneþ day and nyht.</i>      |      |
| <i>No help shall<br/>they have,<br/>for they would<br/>not do shrift<br/>while on earth.</i>                                    | <i>Ac hit ne helpeþ heom nowiht.</i>           | 188  |
|   | <i>For heo nolden beon ischriuen.</i>          |      |
|   | <i>þe hwile þat hi mosten lyuen.</i>           |      |
| <i>Four devils<br/>stand by and<br/>torture them.</i>   | <i>Four deofle heom stondeþ bi.</i>            |      |
|   | <i>þat pyneþ heom ful revly.</i>               | 192  |
|   | <i>Vnsely men. hwi neren hi war.</i>           |      |
|   | <i>þe hwile þat hi lyueden her.</i>            |      |
| <i>They would do<br/>no good thing<br/>for Christ.</i>  | <i>Hwi nolden heo don. for him no god.</i>     |      |
|   | <i>þat heom lesede wyþ his blod.</i>           | 196  |
|   | <i>And yef vs. hus. and lond. and wif.</i>     |      |
|   | <i>And wit and wisdom. and lōye. and lyf.</i>  |      |
|   | <i>And al þat wes in worlde god.</i>           |      |
|   | <i>And non of heom. hit ne vnderstod.</i>      | 200  |
| <i>They would have<br/>no pity on the<br/>poor.</i>   | <i>Heo nolden noht. þenche þer-on.</i>         |      |
|   | <i>Ne poure wrecches no god don.</i>           |      |
|   | <i>Heo wenden. hit scholde lesten .o.</i>      |      |

For-þi heo beoþ in suche wo.  
 Preostes heste. ne godes lay.  
 Ne heolden hi noht bi heore day.  
 Ac trichurs. *and* lyeres. and les:  
 þat weren her. wo is ham þes.  
 Ne wenden heo neuer-more beon ded  
 For þat wes. þes feondes red.  
 Ac euer as heo lyueden lengur.  
 So here pynen were strengur.  
 Heo beoþ iput. in þilke trume.  
 þat ne leuede nouht in godes sone.  
 Ne þat *ihesuc* wes iboren.  
 Of þat Mayde þat wes icoren.  
 For to nymen þat holy streon.  
 Wel wes him. þat hit moste i-seon.

**I**N helle is á deop gayhol.  
 þar-vnder is a ful hot pol.  
 Ten þusend deoffen. *and* wel mo.  
 þer doþ þe wrecche saulen wo.  
 þat nymeþ eaules *and* heom to-tereþ.  
 Nis þer non. þat heom at-dareþ.  
 Ho stondeþ. þu-strur þane þe nyht.  
 þeo þat demde iesu crist.  
 Nis non oþer pine so strong.  
 As þe stunch. þat heom is among.  
 An heyh to-fore þan heuene king.  
 Of heom ne spekeþ me noþing.  
 Ne dar no seynt heom bidde fore.  
 For-þi heo beoþ euer fur-lore.  
**V**urþer. þer his on oþer put.  
 þat ne cumeþ neuer vndut.  
 Sooue duren þer beoþ on.  
 þe saulen for to under-fon.  
 Lyhtliche me may cume þer-inne.  
 Ac vp neuer for none gynne.  
 To so deop hit is wel nyh.

204

Priest's behest  
 nor God's law  
 would they keep,

but were traitors  
 and liars, and  
 false.

208

[leaf 273, col. 1.]

212

The longer they  
 live, the more  
 torment shall  
 they endure.  
 Unbelievers shall  
 be put in this  
 troop, for they  
 believed not on  
 the Son of God.

216

## IX

220

In hell is a deep  
 pool, and there-  
 under is a hot  
 pool.

10,000 devils and  
 more, torment  
 the souls of the  
 damned with  
 awls.

224

These are they  
 who doomed  
 Christ to death.

228

232

No saint in  
 heaven dare  
 intercede for  
 them.

Further there is  
 another pit with  
 seven doors.

236

It is as deep as  
 heaven is from  
 earth.

## X

|  |   |                         |
|--|---|-------------------------|
| [leaf 273, col. 2.]  | As heouene is from þe eorþe heyh.   | 240                     |
| Souls fall therein<br>thicker than<br>leaves from trees.   | þer-inne goþ soulen. þikkure inouh.<br>þan leues fallen of þe bouh.<br>þe put is hot at helle grunde.   |                         |
| Therein are<br>hungry hounds,<br>more in number<br>than fowls under<br>heaven,   | þar-inne is monyon hungri hund.<br>Mo hundes þer-inne beoþ.<br>þane foweles vnder heouene fleoþ.  | 244                     |
| and the lion that<br>Christ conquered<br>by his holy<br>passion.   | And þe lyun þat wes so strong.<br>þat al þe worlde vnderfong.<br>Er þat he was ibrouht a-dun.<br>Wiþ cristes holy passyun.  | 248                     |
| Thereunder is an<br>iron wall<br>full of souls that<br>were here<br>beheaded or<br>hanged,   | þer-vnder is of iren a wal.<br>þat is of saulen ifuld al.<br>On heom is mony yrene beond.<br>þat is hatture þene þe brond.<br>þer-inne beoþ þe saulen i-don.<br>þat weren biheaureded oþer an-hon.<br>Oþer þat so hedden isped.<br>þat léyen hedden in þeouene bed.<br>Oþer weren Mansed bi nome.<br>For-þi heo habbeþ godes grome.<br>Ich wile segge eu a soþ.<br>Hwo so hit halt. god hit him doþ.<br>Hit is iwriten on þe bok.<br>For witnesse þer-of ich tok.<br>þeyh on hundred heueden iseten.<br>Seoþpe kaym wes bi-yeten.<br>And nyht and day heueden iwaked.<br>And tep and tunge. of stel imaked.<br>And tolden of helle pyne ó : | XI<br>252<br>256<br>260 |
| or were thieves,<br>or were excom-<br>municated.   |   |                         |
| It is written,<br>that though a<br>hundred men,<br>with teeth and<br>tongues of steel,<br>had sat talking<br>from the birth of<br>Cain until now,<br>yet they would<br>have left untold<br>a thousand pains<br>and more. |   | 264                     |
| [leaf 273 b.]  | Yet þer beoþ a þusend mo.<br>Hwo se is wis beo ywar.<br>þat his saule ne cume þar.<br>Vor þeyh hi greden euer-mo<br>Ne helph heom wurþ o slo.<br>Ac bidde we crist þat is vs buue.  | 268<br>272              |
| Their cry for<br>help shall not be<br>worth a sloe.  |   |                         |



For his swete moder luue.  
 Leue vs suche werkes wurchē.  
*And* so anuren holy chireche.  
 Hwar-þurh we beon iborewe.  
*And* ibrouht vt of kare *and* seorewe.  
 Ki ces .xi. peynes escryuera.  
 Bon Auenture. ly auendra.  
 Hwo so wrot þes pynen elleuene.  
 His soule mote cumme te heuene.  
*And* pleye þer myd engles bryhte.  
 þer heo beoþ in heuene lyhte.  
*And* nabbe he neuer godes grome.  
 For .Hug'. is his rihte nome  
*And* he is curteys and hendy.  
 þi. god him lete wel endy.

276

May Christ help  
 us to forsake sin,  
 and to honour  
 holy Church,  
 so that we may  
 be saved.

280

284

May his soul  
 come to heaven  
 who wrote of  
 these 11 pains.

And may he play  
 with angels  
 bright in heaven's  
 light, and never  
 have God's wrath.

288

Hugh is his  
 name,  
 and he is  
 courteous and  
 urbane.  
 May his ending  
 be good!

Amen——eN.

Expliciunt .xj. pene. Inferni. quas vidit Beatus  
 Paulus.

*This poem is also contained  
in MS. Laud 421 fol. 65.*

# Long Life.

*\* is printed by Zupitza,  
Anglia I, 410.*

[Cotton MS. Caligula A ix, leaf 246.] Cf. Anglia 2, 70

— 3, 67.

<sup>1</sup> MS. Non.

**M**ON<sup>1</sup> mai longe liues wene:  
Ac ofte him lieð þe wrench.

Feir weder turneð ofte into reine:

An wunderliche hit makeð his blench.

4

þaruore mon þu þe bi-þench:

Al schal falewi þi grene:

<sup>2</sup> So in MS.

Weilawei nis kin<sup>2</sup> ne quene:

þat ne schal drinche of deapes drench.

8

Mon er þu falle of þi bench.

þine sunne þu aquench.

Nis non so strong ne sterch ne kene.

þat mai ago deapes wiper-blech.

12

<sup>3</sup> So in MS.

þung and olde, brihet<sup>3</sup> and schene.

Alle he riueþ in one stretch.

Fox and ferlich is his wren[c]h.

Ne mai no mon þar-to-geines.

16

Weilawei þreting ne bene.

Mede. liste: ne leches drench.

Mon let sunne *and* lustes þine.

Wel þu do *and* wel þu þench.

20

Do bi salemones rede.

Mon *and* þenne þu schald wel do.

Do ase he þe tahte and seide.

þat þin endinge þe bringeþ to.

24

þenne ne schal þu neuer mis-do.

Ac sore þu miȝt þe adrede.

<sup>4</sup> So in MS.

Weilawei shuc<sup>4</sup> weneð to lede.

Long lif: and blisse under-fo.

28

Ac deþ luteþ in his scho,

Him stilliche to for-do.

# Long Life.

[*Jesus Coll. MS. 29, leaf 252, back.*]

Mon may longe lyues wene. } *cf. Provbs 4*  
 Ac ofte him lyep þe wrench. } *Alfred p. 112*

Many ween to  
 lead a long life,  
 but death comes  
 upon them  
 suddenly.

Feyr weder turnep ofte in-to reyne.

And wunderliche makeþ his blench.

4

þar-vore mon. þu þe byþench.

Al schal falwy þi grene.

Waylaway. nys king ne quene.

All must drink of  
 death's drink.

þat ne schal drynke of deþes drench.

8

Mon er þu falle of þi bench.

þyne sunne þu aquench.

Nis non so strong. ne sterk. ne kene.

þat may a-go deþes wyþer-blech.

12

[leaf 253]

Yung and olde. briht and schene.

Alle he ryueþ on o streng.

Sudden is death's  
 coming;

Fox and ferlych is his wrench.

Ne may no mon þar-to-yeynes.

16

prayers nor  
 threats can turn  
 him aside.

Waylaway þreting ne bene.

Mede. liste. ne leches drench.

Mon let sunne and lustes þine.

Wel þu do *and* wel þu þench.

20

Do bi salomones rede.

Mon. *and* þenne þu schalt wel do.

Follow Solomon's  
 advice and think  
 of thy last day.

Do as he þe tauhte and seyde.

þat þin endinge þe bringep to.

24

þenne ne schaltu neuer mys-do.

Ac sore þu myht þe adrede.

Waylaway such wenep to lede.

Long lif. and blysse vnder-fo.

28

Though we think  
 to lead a long  
 life, yet death  
 lurks in our  
 shoes.

Ac deþ luteþ in his scho.

Hym stilliche. to for-do.

Mon hwi nultu þe bi-enowe.  
 Mon hwi nultu þe bi-seo. 32  
 Of fole fulþe þu art isowe.  
 Wormes fode þu schald beo.  
 Her nauestu blisse daies þreo.  
 Ac þi lif al þu last ine wowe. 36  
 Weilawei. deþ þe schal adun þrowe.  
 þer þu wenest heȝest to steo.  
 Ine deð schal þi lif endi.  
 And ine wop al þi gleo. 40

World and weole þe bi-swikeð  
 Iwis heo beoð þin ifo.  
 3ef þe world wið weole þe slikeð.  
 [leaf 246, back] þat is for to do þe wo. 44  
 þare-fore let lust ouer-go.  
 And eft-ȝones hit þe likeð  
 Weilawei sore he him biswikeð  
 þat for on stunde oþer two. 48  
 Wurchep him pine euer-mo.  
 Mon ne do þu nowt swo.

## XXI.

## An Orison of our Lady.

[Cotton MS. Caligulu A ix, leaf 246, back.]

**O**N hire is al mi lif ilong!  
 Of hwam ich wule singe  
 And herien hire þer-among!  
 Heo gon us bote bringe 4  
 Of helle pine þat is strong!  
 Heo brohte us blisse þat is long  
 Al þurh hire chilðinge.  
 Ich bidde hire one mi song. 8

- Mon hwi nultu þe bi-knowe.  
 Mon hwi nultu þe bi-seo. 32  
 Of fule fulþe þu art isowe.  
 Wurmes fode. þu schalt beo. Worms' food shall  
 we all become.  
 Her nauestu blisse dayes þre.  
 Ac þi lif al þu last in wowe. 36  
 Weylawey deþ þe schal a-dun þrowe.  
 þer þu wenest heyust to steo.  
 In deþ schal þi lyf endi.  
 And in wop al þi gleo. 40
- World and weole. þe bi-swikeþ.  
 I-wis heo beoþ þine ifo. World and weal  
 deceive us—of a  
 truth they are our  
 foes.  
 If þe world wiþ weole þe slykeþ  
 þat is for to do þe wo. 44  
 þare-fore. let lust ouer-go.  
 And eft hit þe likeþ.  
 Weylawey. sore he him bi-swikeþ.  
 þat for one stunde oþer two. 48  
 Wurcheþ him pyne. euer-mo.  
 Mon. ne do þu nouht swo. [leaf 253, back]  
 Do not for a  
 little bliss earn  
 everlasting pain.

## XXI.

*Worshipful*  
*5 w*  
*(Sidenote)*  
**An Orison of our Lady.**

[Jesus Coll. MS. 29, leaf 253, back.]

- O**N hire is al my lif ilong.  
 Of hwam ich wille synge.  
 And heryen hire þer-á-mong.  
 Heo gon vs bote brynge. 4  
 Of helle pyne þat is strong.  
 Heo brouhte vs blysse þat is long.  
 Al þureh hire childþinge.  
 Ich bidde hire on my song. 8
- An orison of our  
 Lady.  
 I will sing of her  
 who brought  
 deliverance to us,  
 through her  
 childbearing.

Heo 3eoue us god endinge.  
 þah we don wrong.

þu art hele and lif and liht.  
 And helpest al mon-kunne. 12  
 þu us hauest ful wel idi3t.  
 þu 3eue us weole and wunne.  
 þu brohtest dai and eve ni3t.  
 Heo bro3te woht, þu bro3test ri3t. 16  
 þu almesse and heo sunne.  
 Bi-sih to me lauedi bri3t.  
 Hwenne ich schal wende heonne.  
 So wel þu miht. 20

Al þis world schal ago.  
 Wið seorhe and wið sore.  
 And al þis lif we schule for-go.  
 Ne of-þunche hit us so sore. 24  
 þis world nis butent<sup>1</sup> ure ifo.  
 þarfore ich þenche hirne at-go.  
 And do bi godes lore.  
 þis liues blisse nis wurð a slo. 28  
 Ich bidde god þin ore.  
 Nu and eue-re-mo.

To longe ich habbe sot i-beo.  
 Wel sore ich me adrede. 32  
 Iluued ich habbe gomen and gleo.  
 And prude and feire wede.  
 Al þat is dweole wel i seo.  
 þarfore ich þenche sunne fleo. 36  
 And alle mine sot dede.  
 Ich bidde hire to me bi-seo.  
 And helpe me and rede :  
 þat is so freo. 40

Heo yeue us god endyng.  
 þauh we don wrong.

þv eart hele. and lyf. and liht.  
 And helpst al mon-kunne.  
 þu vs hauest ful wel i-diht.  
 þv yeue vs weole and wunne.  
 þu brouhtest day. and. Eue Nyht.  
 He brouhte wo þu brouhtest ryht.  
 þu almesse and heo sunne.  
 Bi-syh to me leuedi bryht.  
 Hwenne ich schal wende heonne.<sup>b</sup>  
 So wel þu Myht.

Al þes world schal a-go.

And al þis lyf [we] schulleþ for-go.  
 Ne of-þinche hit vs so sore.  
 þis world nys bute vre i-fo.  
 þar-fore ich þenche hire at-go.  
 And do bi godes lore.  
 þis lyues blysse. nys wurþ al so.  
 Ich bidde god þin ore.  
 Nu and euer-mo.

To longe Ich habbe soth ibeo

. . . . .  
 . . . . .  
 . . . . .  
 . . . . .

[The rest of this song is missing.]

. . . . .  
 . . . . .  
 . . . . .  
 . . . . .

BEST.

11

12 Thou helpst  
 all mankind:  
 thou broughtest  
 day and Eve  
 night.

16 She brought woe,  
 but thou right.

20

This world shall  
 pass away.

24 Be not sorry  
 therefor—the  
 world is our foe.

28 This world's  
 bliss is worthless.

32 I have been a  
 fool too long.

I have loved  
 games and glee.

36 All is phantasy  
 that I see about  
 me.

I will forsake my  
 sins, and pray  
 Mary to help me.

40

Agult ich habbe weilawei.  
 Sunful ich am an wrecche.  
 Awrec þe nu on me leuedi.  
 Er deþ me honne fecche. 44  
 Do nim þe wreche ich am redi.  
 Oper let me liuen and amendi.  
 þat no feond me ne drecche.  
 For mine sunnes ich am sori. 48  
 Of þis world ich ne recche.  
 Leuedi, merci. Amen.

## XXII.

## Doomsday.

[Cotton MS. Caligula A ix, leaf 246, back.]

Hwenne ich þenche of domes-dai.  
 Ful sore ime adrede.  
 þer schal after his [werk] :  
 euch mon fongen mede. 4  
 Ich habbe crist agult.  
 wið þoʒtes and wið dede.  
 Lauerd crist godes sone.  
 wat is me to rede. 8  
 [leaf 247]  
 þat fur schal kumen in þis world :  
 On one sune-niʒte.  
 For-bernen al þis middelerd :  
 so crist hit wolde diʒte. 12  
 Boþe in þe water and in þat lond :  
 þe flures þat beoþ brihte.  
 Iherd beo þu lauerd :  
 so muchel beþ þine mihte. 16  
 þe engles in þe dai-red :  
 bleweð heore beme.



. . . . .  
 . . . . .  
 . . . . .  
 . . . . .  
 . . . . .  
 . . . . .  
 . . . . .  
 . . . . .  
 . . . . .  
 . . . . .

44 Take vengeance  
upon me, Lady,  
in this life.

Let me live and  
amend my life.

48

---

XXII.

**Doomsday.**

[*Jesus Coll. MS. 29, leaf 255.*]

**Incipit de die iudicii.**

**H**wenne ich þenche of domes-day.  
ful sore ich may adrede.

When I think of  
Doomsday I am  
sore afraid,

þer schal after his werk  
vych mon fongen mede.

4

Ich habbe crist agult.  
wiþ þouhtes and wyþ dede.

for I have often  
sinned.

Louerd crist godes sune.  
hwat is me to rede.

8

þat fur schal cumen in þis world.  
on one sone-nyhte.

Fire shall burn  
the world.

Vor-bernen al þis Middelerd.  
so crist hit wolde dihte.

12

Boþe in watere. and in þe londe.  
þe flures þat beoþ brihte.

It shall consume  
everything.

I-herd beo þu louerd.  
so muchel beoþ þine Mihte.

16

þe engles in þe daye-rewe.  
bloweþ heore béme.

Angels shall  
announce the

þenne comeþ ure lauerd : crist  
his domes for to deme. 20

Ne helpeð hit noht þenne :  
to wepen ne to remen.  
þat haueð lutel idon :  
þat godd were icweme 24

From þat adam was ischapen :  
to comen domes-dai.  
Moni of pisse riche.  
þat wereden foh *and* grei. 28

An rideþ uppe stede  
*and* uppen palefrai.  
Heo schulen atte dome.  
suggen weilawei. 32

Ne schulen heo nowðer fize  
mid schelde ne mid spere.  
Mid helme ne mid brunie.  
ne mid non oþer gere. 36  
Ne schal þer nomon oþer.  
mid wise wordes were.  
Bute heore almesdede.  
heore ernde schal bere. 40

Heo schulen iseon þe lauedi.  
þat ihesu crist of-kende.  
Bi-tweonen hire armes.  
sweteliche he wende. 44  
þe wile þat we mihte.  
to lute <sup>1</sup> we hire sende.  
þat madeþe þe cwed  
so fule he us blende. 48

<sup>1</sup> Looks like  
*lute* in MS.

Heo schul iseon þene king  
þat al þis world wrohte.

- þenne cumeþ vre louerd. crist.  
 his domes for to deme.  
 Ne helpeþ hit nouht þenne.  
 to wepen ne to remen.  
 þat haueþ lutel i-don.  
 þat god were i-queme.
- 20 doom by the  
 blowing of  
 trumpets.
- 24
- From þat Adam wes i-schafen.  
 to come domes-day.  
 Monye of þisse riche.  
 þat werede fouh and grey.  
 And ryden vppe stede  
 and uppon palefrey.  
 Heo schulleþ at þe dome.  
 suggen weylawey.
- 28 The rich that  
 were sumptuously  
 clothed in this  
 life shall then say  
 alas! alas!
- 32
- Ne schulleþ heo nouþer vyhte.  
 myd schelde. ne myd spére.  
 Mid helme ne myd brunye.  
 ne myd non oþer gere.  
 Ne schal þer no mon oþer.  
 myd wise wordes were.  
 Bute heore almes-dede.  
 heore erynde schal bére.
- No earthly  
 weapons shall  
 avail them.
- 36
- Almadeeds alone  
 shall help them.
- 40
- Heo schulleþ i-seon þe lauedi.  
 þat ihesu crist of-kende.  
 Bi-twene hire armes.  
 sweteliche he wende.  
 þe hwile þat we Mihte.  
 to lute we hire sende.  
 þat makede þe qued.  
 so fule he vs blende.
- They shall see  
 there the mother  
 of Christ.
- 44
- [leaf 255, back]
- 48
- Heo schule iseon þene kyng.  
 þat al þis world wrouhte.
- They shall see  
 Christ too who  
 suffered on the  
 cross.

|                               |    |
|-------------------------------|----|
| An uppon þe rode.             |    |
| Mid stronge pine abohte.      | 52 |
| Adam <i>and</i> his ofspring. |    |
| in helle he heom sohte.       |    |
| To bidden his milce.          |    |
| to late we beod bi-þohte.     | 56 |
| Ðer stondeþ þe rihtwise.      |    |
| on his riht honde.            |    |
| An þe sunfule                 |    |
| so ateliche heo stondeþ.      | 60 |
| Mid heore sunnen iwriten.     |    |
| þat is so muchel schonde.     |    |
| þer hit schulen alle iseon.   |    |
| al þat her weren a londe.     | 64 |
| 1 MS. þið.                    |    |
| Wið <sup>1</sup> þe rihtwise  |    |
| he spekeþ wordes swete.       |    |
| Comeþ her mine freond.        |    |
| oure sunnes for to lete.      | 68 |
| In mine fader boure.          |    |
| ow is imaked sete.            |    |
| þer ow schulen engles.        |    |
| ful sweteliche grete.         | 72 |
| 2 MS. þið.                    |    |
| Wið <sup>2</sup> þe sunfule.  |    |
| also 3e mahen ihere.          |    |
| Goð awariede gostes,          |    |
| feondes ifere.                | 76 |
| In-to berninde fur.           |    |
| of blisse 3e beoþ skere.      |    |
| For 3e owre sunnen.           |    |
| of þisse worlde bere.         | 80 |
| Bidde we ure lauedi.          |    |
| swetest alre þinge.           |    |

- And vppe on þe rode.  
 myd stronge pyne abouhte. 52  
 Adam and his ofsprung.  
 in helle he heom souhte.  
 To bidden his Milce.  
 to late we beoþ biþouhte. 56
- þer stondeþ þe ryh[t]wise.  
 on his riht honde.  
 And þe sunfule.  
 so atelyche stondeþ.<sup>1</sup> 60  
 Mid heore sunnen iwryten.  
 þat is so muchel<sup>2</sup> schonde.  
 þer hit schullen y-seon. alle.  
 þat er weren a londe. 64
- Wyþ þe rihtwise.  
 he spekeþ wordes swete.  
 Cumeþ her myne freond.  
 eure sunnes for to lete. 68  
 In myne fader bure.  
 ou ys imaked sête.  
 þer ou schulen engles.  
 ful sweteliche grête. 72
- Wyþ þe sunfule.  
 al so we mawen y-hére.  
 Goþ awaryede gostes.  
 feondes yuere. 76  
 In-to bernynde fur.  
 of lisse ye beoþ skere.  
 For ye oure sunnen.  
 of þisse worlde bere.<sup>3</sup> 80
- Bidde we vre lauedy.  
 swettust alle þinge.

The righteous  
 shall stand on the  
 right hand, the  
 wicked on the  
 left.

The righteous  
 shall hear joyful  
 words.

The sinful shall  
 be bidden to go  
 into hell.

Let us pray our  
 lady to bear our

<sup>1</sup> A later hand adds : on þe lufthonde.

<sup>2</sup> MS. muchas.

<sup>3</sup> MS. beten. A later hand has added : nolde here.

þat heo ure erende beore.  
 to þen heuonkinge. 84  
 For his holi nome  
 and for hire herendinge.  
 þat heo ure sawle.  
 to heouerige bringe. 88

## XXIII.

## D e a t h .

[Cotton MS. Caligula A ix, leaf 247.]

Thereð of one þinge.  
 þat 3e ohen of þenche.  
 3e þat werieð riche schrud.  
 and sitteð on oure benche. 4  
 þah me kneoli ou bi-uore.  
 and mid win schenche.  
 From þe dreorie deað.  
 ne mai nomon at-blenche. 8  
 3e þat sittet i-schrud  
 wið skarlet and wið palle.  
 Wel soþe tipinge  
 Ich ou wile telle. 12  
 þe feond þencheð iwis.  
 þe sawle forto cwelle.  
 Ase we hit findeþ iwriten.  
 in þe goddspelle. 16  
 Ah of one þinge.  
 we schule nime gome.  
 þat we weren poure.  
 þa we hider come. 20  
 We hit hereð iwis.  
 swiþe ofte and i-lome.  
 þe sawle and þe licome.  
 selde heo beoþ isome. 24

Summary

[leaf 247, back]

þat heo vre erende bere.  
 to þan heouene kinge.  
 or his holy nome.  
 and for hire erendynge.  
 þat he vre saule.  
 to heueryche brynge.

petition to the  
 King of heaven.  
 84

88

## XXIII.

## Death.

[Jesus Coll. MS. 29, leaf 255, back.]

*Wor cithen hure*  
*SW*  
*Saiche seche in "dew"*

Therē of one þinge.  
 þat ye owen of þenche.  
 Ye þat weryē þat riche schrud.  
 and sytþe on eure benche.  
 þah me kneoly ou by-uore.  
 and myd wyn schenche.  
 From þe dreorye deþ.  
 ne may no mon at-blenche.  
 Ye þat sytþe i-schrud.  
 myd skarlet and myd palle.  
 Wel soþe tyþinge.  
 ich ou wile telle.  
 þe feond þencheþ iwis.  
 þe saule for to quelle.  
 As we hit fyndeþ iwryten.  
 in þe god-spelle.  
 Ah of one þinge.  
 we schulle nymen gome.  
 þat we weren poure.  
 þo we hider come.  
 We hit ihereþ iwis.  
 swiþe ofte and ilóme.  
 þe saule and þe lycome.  
 selde heo beoþ isome.

Ye rich ones can-  
 not hope to  
 escape: Death.  
 4

8

Ye that sit in  
 scarlet and pall,  
 I tell you, the  
 fiend thinks to  
 kill the soul.

12

16

Remember that  
 we had nothing  
 when we were  
 born.

20

[leaf 256]

The soul and  
 body are seldom  
 at one.  
 24

- H**wenne þat child bid iboren.  
*and on eorþe i-falle.*  
**N**olde ich ȝeuen enne peni.  
 for his weden alle. 28  
**A**h seoððen moni mon.  
 biȝet bores *and* halle.  
**F**or-hwi þe wrecche sawle  
 schal in-to pine ualle. 32
- Þ**enche we on þe laste dai.  
 þat we schule heonne fare.  
**V**t of pisse worlde.  
 wið pine *and* wið kare. 36  
**A**l so we hider comen.  
 naked *and* bare.  
 And of<sup>1</sup> ure sunnen.  
 ȝeuen ondsweare. 40
- N**abbe no mon so muchel.  
 al hit wolle agon.  
**H**is lond *and* his hus  
*and* his hom. 44  
**Þ**e sorie soule.  
 makeþ hire mon!  
**I**wis ne mai at-blenche  
 ure neauer non. 48
- Þ**enne þe latemest dai.  
 deþ haueð ibrouhit.  
**B**i-nimeð ure speche.  
 ure siht *and* ure þoht. 52  
**A**nd in euche lime  
 deþ us hafð þurh-soht.  
**Þ**enne beoð ure blisse.  
 al iturnd to noht. 56

<sup>1</sup> MS. of.



Hwenne þat chyld biþ iboren.  
and on eorþe ifalle.

Nolde ich yeuen enne peny.  
for his weden alle.

Ah seopþen mony mon  
by-yet bures and halle.

For-þi [þe] wrecche saule  
schal in-to pyne falle.

28 I wouldn't give a  
penny for all the  
clothes of a new-  
born child.

Afterwards many  
a man gets  
towers and hall,  
but his soul shall  
pay for it.

32

Þenche we on þe laste day.  
þat we schulle heonne fare.

Vt of þisse worlde.

wiþ pyne and wiþ kare.

Al so we hider comen.

naked and bare.

And of vre sunnen

yeuen onsware.

We must go  
hence with pain  
and care, and  
render account  
of our sins.

36

Nabbe no mon so muchel.

al hit wile á-gon.

His lond and his ayhte.

his hus. and his hom.

þe sorye saule.

makeþ hire mon.

Iwis ne may at-blenche

vre neuer nón.

We can take  
nothing with us  
out of the world.

44

Þenne þe latemeste day.

deþ haueþ ibrouht.

Bi-nymeþ vre speche.

vre syhte. and pouht.

And in vyche lyme.

deþ vs haueþ þureh-souht.

þenne beoþ vre blisse.

al i-turnd to nouht.

At our last day  
our bliss shall be  
turned to nought.

52

56

: *Read to-dorene*

**N**e miȝte no tunge tellen.  
 þat euer wes iboren.  
 þe stronge pine of helle.  
 þah he hedde isworen. 60  
 Er þe sawle *and* þe bodi  
 a two beon to-drehen.<sup>1</sup>  
 Bute crist þat lesede his folc.  
 þat þer wes for-loren. 64

**A**non so þe sawle.  
 bið ifaren ut.  
**M**e nimeð þe licome.  
*and* preoneð in a clut. 68  
 þat wes so modi *and* so strong.  
*and* so swiþe prud.  
 And wes iwoned to werien.  
 moni a feir schrud. 72

**N**u lið þe clei-clot.  
 al so þe ston.  
 And his freondes striueð.  
 to gripen his i-won. 76  
 þe sorie sowle  
 makeð hire mon.  
 Of alle hire erure freond.  
 nu nafð heo non. 80

Þenne saið þe sawle.  
 wið sorie chere.  
 Awai þu wrecche fole bali,  
 nu þu list on bere. 84  
 Ich schal habben for þe  
 fendes to ifere.  
 Awai þat þu euere.  
 to monne ischape were. 88

Ne myhte no tunge telle.  
 þat euer wes ibore.  
 þe stronge pyne of helle.  
 þauh he hedde iswore.  
 Er þe saule and þet body  
 a two beon to-drore.  
 Bute crist þat lesede his folk.  
 þat þer wes for-loren.

No tongue can  
 tell the pain of  
 hell.

60

64

Anón so þe saule.  
 biþ i-faren vt.  
 Me nymeth þe lycome.  
 and preoneth in a clut.  
 þat wes so modý and so strong.  
 and so swyþe prud.  
 And wes iwuned to weryan.  
 mony a veyr schrud.

As soon as the  
 soul is gone the  
 body is sewn  
 in a clout,  
 though it once  
 wore fine clothes.

68

72

Nv liþ þe cley-clot.  
 al so þe ston.  
 And his freondes stryueþ.  
 to gripen his iwon.  
 þe sorie saule.  
 makeþ hyre mon.  
 Of alle hire erore freond.  
 nv naueþ heo non.

The dead man's  
 friends strive to  
 grasp his wealth.

76

80

Þenne seyþ þe saule.  
 wiþ sorie chere.  
 Away þu wrecche fole baly.  
 nv þu lyst on bere.  
 Ich schal habbe for þe.  
 feondes to i-vere.  
 Away þat þu eure.  
 to monne ischape were.

Then the soul  
 shall curse the  
 body, and shall  
 say, For thee I  
 have fiends as  
 fellows.

84

[leaf 256, back]

88

Ne schaltu neauer sitten.  
 on bolstre ne on benche.  
 Ne neuer in none halle.  
*per* me uin schencheð. 92

For pine fule sunnen.  
*and* for pin uni-wrenche.  
 Hi schal wrecche sawle  
 to ateliche stenche. 96

Hwer beoð alle pine frond.  
*pat* faire þe bihete.  
*And* feire þe igretten.  
 bi weies *and* bi strete. 100  
 Nu heo wolleð wrecche.  
 alle þe for-lete.  
 Nolden he hore-stonkes  
 non nu þe imete. 104

Hwer beoð pine dihsches.  
 midd pine swete sonde.  
 Hwer beoþ pine nappes.  
*pat* þe glideþ to honde. 108  
 Hwer is þi bred *and* pin ale.  
 þi tunne *and* pine stonde.  
 Nu þu schalt in þe putte.  
 wunie wid þe wonde. 112

Of me þu heuedest miȝte.  
 to don al pine wille.  
 Euer þu were abuten.  
 us bo for to spille. 116  
 Nu þu schalt wrecche  
 liggen ful stille.  
 And ich schal pine gultes.  
 abuggen ful ille. 120

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Ne schaltu neuer sytten.<br>on bolstre ne on benche.    | Thou shalt never<br>again sit on<br>cushion or on<br>bench. |
| Ne neuer in none halle.<br>par me wyn schenche.         | 92  |
| For pine fule sunnen.<br>and for pin vnywrenche.        |   |
| Hy schal pi wrecche saule.<br>to atelyche stenche.      | 96  |
| Hwer beoþ alle pine freond.<br>pat fayre þe bi-hehte.   | Where are all thy<br>friends?                               |
| And feyre þe igretten.<br>bi weyes and bi strete.       | 100   |
| Nv heo wulleþ wrecche.<br>alle þe forlete.              | They have all<br>forsaken thee.                             |
| Nolden heo non herestonkes.<br>nv þe imete.             | 104   |
| Hwer beoþ pine disches.<br>myd pine swete sonde.        | Where are thy<br>dishes and thy<br>sweet messes?            |
| Hwer beoþ pine nappes.<br>pat þe glyde to honde.        | 108   |
| Hwer is þi bred and þin ale.<br>þi tunne and þi stonde. | Where thy bread<br>and thy ale?                             |
| Na þu schalt in þe putte.<br>wunye myd þe wonde.        | 112   |
| Ofte þu heuedest Mihte.<br>to don al pine wille.        | Thou once hadst<br>power to follow<br>thy will,             |
| Euer þu were abuten.<br>vs bo uor to spille.            | 116   |
| Nv þu schalt wrecche.<br>liggen ful styлле.             | now thou shalt<br>lie full still.                           |
| And ich schal pine gultes.<br>abuggen ful ille.         | 120   |

- H**wi noldest þu mid crist.  
 maken us isahte.  
**M**asse leten singe  
 of *þat* he *þe* bi-tahte. 124  
**E**uer þu were abuten  
 to echen þin ahte.  
**F**or-þi we beoð an ende  
 boþe bi-pahte. 128  
  
**Y**elde<sup>1</sup> wole me for *þe*  
 masse lete singe.  
**O**þer in holi chirche.  
 don ei offringe. 132  
**M**e wule for þin ahte  
 make striuinge.  
**A**nd pute *þe* wið-uten.  
 of alle þine þinge. 136  
  
**L**i awariede bali  
*þat* neauer þu ne arise.  
**H**wenne ich þenche *þe* uppon:  
 ful sore me mai agrise. 140  
**F**or ich schal bernen in fur.  
*and* chiuerin in ise.  
**A**nd euer beon in pinen  
 a feole kunne wise. 144  
  
**N**u schal þin halle.  
 Mid spade beon iwrozt.  
**A**nd þu schald þerinne.  
 wrecche beon ibrozt. 148  
**N**u schulen þine weden.  
 Alle beon isozt.  
**M**e wule swopen þin hus  
*and* ut mid *þe* swift. 152

The initial letter may be Y, Þ, or W, which are all of one shape in this MS. There is a dot over the y and w to dis-

- H**wi noldestu myd criste.  
 maken vs isauhte.  
 Massen lete syngē.  
 of þat he þe bitauhte. 124  
 Euer þu were abuten.  
 to echen þin ayhte.  
 For-þi we beoþ an ende.  
 boþe bi-pauhte. 128
- Selde wule me for þe.  
 masse lete singe.  
 Oper in holy chireche.  
 don ey offringe. 132  
 Me wule for þin ayhte.  
 maken stryuyngē.  
 And pute þe wiþ-vten.  
 of alle þine þinge. 136
- L**y awariede bodi.  
 þat neuer þu naryse.  
 Hwenne ich þenche [þe] vp-on.  
 ful sore me may agryse. 140  
 For ich schal bernē in fur.  
 and chyueren in yse.  
 And euer beon in pynen.  
 a feole kunne wise. 144
- N**v schal þin halle.  
 myd spade beon i-wrouht.  
 And þu schalt þer-inne.  
 wrecche beon ibrouht. 148  
 Nu schulle þine weden.  
 alle beon isouht.  
 Me wule swopen þin hus.  
 and vt myd þe swofte. 152
- Why wouldst thou not make us reconciled to Christ?  
 Thou wast ever striving to increase thy wealth, therefore we are deceived.  
 Seldom will they sing mass for thee, or make offering in holy church.  
 Through thee I shall burn in fire and shiver in ice.  
 Thy hall shall be made, with a spade, in the earth.

[leaf 257]

tinguish them from þ, but it is not used with the large initial letters.

þi bur is sone ibuld.  
 þat þu schald wunien inne.  
 þe rof þe firste.  
 schal ligge opine chinne. 156  
 Nu þe sculen wormes.  
 wunien wið-inne.  
 Ne mai me heom vt driuen :  
 wið nones kunnes ginne. 160

Nu is afered of þe.  
 þi mei *and* þi mowe.  
 Alle heo wereð þe weden.  
 þat er weren þin owe. 164  
 And þu schald nu in eorþe.  
 liggen ful lohe.  
 Wai hwi noldestu er.  
 of þisse beon icnowe.<sup>1</sup> 168

<sup>1</sup> MS. iouowe.

Nu schal for-rotien  
 þine teð *and* þi tunge.  
 þi mahe *and* þi milte.  
 þi liure *and* þi lunge. 172  
 And þi prote-bolle  
 þat þu mide sunge.  
 And þu schal in þe putte  
 faste beon iprunge. 176

Hwer beoð þine weines  
 þat þe leoue were.  
 Of alle þine riche weden  
 nu þu ard al skere. 180  
 Beo þu in þe putte  
 wormes ifere.  
 Hit bið sone of þe  
 al so þu neauer nere. 184



**Pi** bur is sone ibuld.

pat þu schalt wunyen inne.

þe rof and þe virste.

schal ligge on þine chynne.

156

Nu þe schulle wurmes

wunyen wiþ-inne.

Ne may me heom vt dryuen.

myd nones kunnes gynne.

160

**Nv** is aferd of þe.

þi mey and þi mowe. *þi me and*

Alle heo wereþ þe weden.

þat er weren þin owe.

164

And þu schalt nv in eorþe.

liggen ful lowe.

Way hwi noldestu her.

of pisse beon iknowe.

168

**Nv** schal for-rotyen.

þine teþ and þi tunge.

þi Mawe and þi Milte.

þi lyure. and þi lunge.

172

And þi þrotebolle.

þat þu Mide sunge.

And þu schalt in þe putte.

vaste beon iþrunge.

176

**Hwer** beoþ þine þeynes.

pat þe leoue were.

Of alle þine riche weden.

nv þu art al skere.

180

Beo þu in þe putte.

wrmes ifére.

Hit hiþ sone of þe.

al so þu neuer nere.

184

Thy bower shall  
soon be built, and  
worms shall live  
within thee.

All thy kin shall  
be afraid of thee.

Thy limbs shall  
all rot away.

What shall  
become of thy  
servants and of  
thy rich weeds?

Al þat ich hatede  
 hit þuhte þe ful god.  
 þat makede þe qued þat  
 þat þe bi-stod. 188  
 Heuedest þu þi wille.  
 þu were al wod.  
 And ich am wrecche sawle  
 ful sori-mo l. 192

<sup>1</sup> So in MS.

Nu þu schald bileuen,  
 and icht <sup>1</sup> mot fare nede.  
 For alle þine gultes  
 fongon ischal mede. 196  
 þat is hunger and chele  
 and furberninge glede.  
 And so me wule sathanas  
 ful ateliche brede. 200

<sup>2</sup> Read þar.

Ich am sori inoh.  
 bi dai and bi niht.  
 Ischal to þeostre stude.  
 þer neauer ne kumeð liht. 204  
 þat <sup>2</sup> ischal i-mete  
 moni a ful wiht.  
 Ne schal ich neauer i-seo  
 crist þat is so briht. 208

In ful a bitter bað  
 bapen ich schal naked.  
 Of pisch and of bruneston  
 wallinde is makend. 212  
 þer is sathanas þe cwed  
 redi wið his rake.  
 And swo he me wule for-swolehen  
 þe fur-berinde drake. 216

Al þat ich hatede.

hit þuhte þe ful god.

þat makede þe qued: *wile*

þat þe bi-stod.

188

Heuedestu þi wille.

þu were al wod.

And ich am wrecche saule.

ful sori-mod.

192

Nv þu schalt by-leuen.

and ich mot fare nede.

For alle þine gultes.

fongen i schal mede.

196

þat is hunger and chele

and fur-bernynde glede.

And so me wule sathanas.

ful atelyche brede. *re. 2*

200

Ich am sori i-nouh.

bi day and bi nyht

Ich schal to þestre stude.

þer neuer ne cumeþ liht.

204

þer ich schal imete

mony o ful wiht.

Ne schal ich neuer i-seo.

crist þat is so bryht.

208

In a bytter baþ.

ich schal baþe naked.

Of pych and of brunston.

wallynde is i-maked.

212

þer is sathanas þe qued.

redi wyþ his rake.

And so me wile for-swolewe

þe furbernynde drake.

216

All that I hated  
appeared good to  
thee.

For all thy sins I  
shall be requited

with hunger,  
cold, and burning  
glead, and Satan  
will roast me.

I shall go where  
light never comes,

there I shall see  
many a foul  
wight.

In a bitter bath  
shall I bathe—a  
bath of pitch and  
brimstone made  
boiling hot.

[leaf 257, back]  
Satan shall be  
there ready with  
his rake, and the  
fire-burning  
dragon will  
swallow me up.

þah al þat fur in þis world  
 to-gedere were ibroht.  
 Aȝeines þare hete  
 nere hit al noht. 220  
 Wo is him aliue  
 þat þer-inne is ibroht.  
 Awai þas ilke pine.  
 þu hauest me bi-soht. 224

[leaf 248, back]

Hwo isehe þene cwed,  
 hu lodlich he beo.  
 Hornes on his heaued.  
 hornes on his cneo. 228  
 Nis no þing aliue  
 þat so ateliche beo.  
 Wo is heom ine helle!  
 þet hine schule i-seo. 232

He ȝeoneþ mid his muþe  
 and stareþ mid his eȝe.  
 Of his neose-þurles  
 cumeð þe rede leie. 236  
 þat fur springeþ him vt.  
 of eueruche Breȝe.  
 He moste deie for care.  
 hwase hine iseȝe. 240

Also beoð his eȝe-puttes  
 ase a bruþen led.  
 þat fur springeþ him of  
 wunderliche red. 244  
 Ne mai no tunge telle  
 hu lodlich is þe cwed.  
 Hwase lokede him on  
 for care he miȝte beo dead. 248

þah al þat fur in þis world.  
to-gedere were ibrouht.

Against the fire  
of hell all earthly  
fire is nought.

Ayeynes þare hete.  
nere hit al nouht.

220

Wo is hym alyue.  
þat þer-inne is ibrouht.

Away. þeos ilke pyne.  
þu hauest me by-souht.

224

Hwo iseye þene qued.  
hw lodlich heo beo.

Hornes on his heued.  
hornes. on his kneo.

228

The devil has  
horns on his head  
and knees.

Nis no þing alyue.  
þat so atelich beo.  
Wo is heom in helle.  
þat hine schulleþ i-seo.

232

He yoneþ myd his muþe.  
and stareþ myd his eye.

Of his neosturles cumeþ.  
þe rede leye.

236

He yawns with  
his mouth and  
stares with his  
eyes; out of his  
nostrils come the  
red gleams; out  
of every eyebrow  
comes fire.

þat fur springeþ him vt.  
of eueryche breye.

He moste deye for kare.  
hwo so hine iseye.

240

Al so beoþ his eye-puttes  
as a [colput dup ant gret].<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> In a later hand.

þat fur springeþ him of.  
wunderliche red.

244

His eye-pits are  
as deep and as  
great as a coal-  
pit.

Ne may no tunge telle.  
hw lodlich is þe qued.

Hwo so lokede him on.  
for kare he Mihte beo ded.

248

Holde we us clene  
 ut of hordom.  
 Masse leten singen,  
 and almes-dede don. 252  
 And wið hali chirche  
 maken us i-som ;  
 þenne<sup>1</sup> mohe we cwemen  
 crist at þe dom. 256  
 Þe king þat al þis world scheop  
 þurh his holi miȝte.  
 Bi-wite vre sawle  
 from þan fule wiȝte. 260  
 And lete us hatie þat woh  
 and luuie þat riȝte.  
 And bringe ure sawle  
 to heoueriche liȝte. AMEN. 264

<sup>1</sup> MS. Wenne

## XXIV.

## Ten abuses.

[Cotton MS. Caligula A ix, leaf 248, back.]

Hwan þu sixst on leode.  
 King þat is wilful.  
 And domesmon niminde.  
 Proest þat is wilde. 4  
 Bischoþ slou.  
 Old mon lechur.  
 ȝunch mon lieȝer.  
 Wimmon schomeles. 8  
 Child un-þeaud.  
 þral vn-buxsum.  
 Aþeling briþeling.  
 Lond wið-ute laȝe. 12  
 Al so seide bede !  
 Wo þere þeode.

Holde we vs clene.

vt of hordom.

Masses leten singe.

and almes-dede don.

And wip holy chireche.

maken vs i-som.

penne muwe we quemen.

crist at þe dom.

Þe kyng þat al þis world scop.

purh his holy Mihte.

Biwite vre saule.

from þan vuele wihte.

And lete vs hatye þat wouh.

and luuye þat ryhte.

And bringe vre saule.

to heoueriche lyhte. Amen.

252 Let us sing mass  
and do almes-  
deeds and be in  
concord with  
holy Church.

256

May God preserve  
us from the devil  
and bring us to  
the light of  
heaven's  
kingdom.

260

264

#### XXIV.

### Ten abuses.

[*Jesus Coll. MS. 29, leaf 257, back.*]

Hwan þu sixst on <sup>1</sup> leode.

<sup>1</sup> MS. vn.

King þat is wilful.

And Domes-mon nymynde.

Preost þat is wilde.

Biscop slouh.

Oldmon lechur.

Yongmon lyere.

Wymmon schomeles.

Child vnpewed.

þral vnbuhsun.

Apelyng. bryþeling.

Lond wip-vten lawe.

Al so seyde Bede.

Wo þere þeode.

Ten abuses of  
this world :

1. in the king ;

2. in the judge ;

4 3. in the clergy ;

4. in old men ;

5. in young men ;

8 6. in women ;

7. in children ;

8. in servants ;

9. in the nobility ;

12 10. in a lawless  
land.

## XXV.

## A lutel soth Sermun.

[Cotton MS. Caligula A ix, leaf 248, back.]

**H**erknied alle gode men  
 And stille sitteþ adun.  
 And ich eou wule tellen  
 a lutel sermun.<sup>1</sup> 4  
 Wel we witen alle.  
 þag ich eou noȝt ne telle:  
 Hu adam vre vorme fader.  
 adun vel in-to helle. 8  
 Schomeliche he uor-les  
 þe blisse þat he hedde.  
 To ȝiuernesse and prude.  
 none neode he nedde. 12  
 He nom þen appel of þe tre.  
 þat him for-bode was.  
 So reusful dede idon  
 neuer non nas. 16  
 He made him in-to helle falle.  
 And efter him his children alle.  
 þer he was fort ure drihte.  
 Hine bohte mid his mihte. 20  
 He hine alesede mid his blode.  
 þat he sc[h]jedde<sup>2</sup> up-on þe rode.  
 To deþe he ȝef him for us alle.  
 þo we weren so stronge at-falle 24  
 Alle bac-biteres.  
 wendet to helle.  
 Robberes. and reueres.  
 and þe monquelle. 28  
 Lechurs. and horlinges.  
 þider sculen wende.

<sup>1</sup> The A written above the line in a later hand.



## XXV.

## A lutel soth Sermun.

[*Jesus Coll. MS. 29, leaf 258.*]

**H**erkneþ alle gode men  
and styлле sitteþ a-dun.

And ich ou wile tellen  
a lutel soþ sermun.

Wel we wuten alle.

þey ich ou nouht ne telle.

Hw Adam vre vorme fader.

a-dun feel in-to helle.

Schomeliche he forles.

þe blisse þat he hedde.

To yuernesse and prude.

none neode he nedde.

He nom þan appel of þe treo.

þat him forbode was.

So reupful dede idon.

neuer non nas.

He made him in-to helle falle.

And after him his children alle.

þer he wes fort vre drihte.

Hyne bouhte myd his myhte.

He hine alesede myd his blode.

þat he schedde vp-on þe rode.

To deþe he yef him for vs alle.

þo we weren so strong at-falle.

Alle bakbytares.

heo wendeþ to helle.

Robbares. and reuares.

and þe Monquelle.

Lechurs. and horlyngs.

þider schulleþ wende.

Hearken, all ye  
good men. Sit  
still, and I will  
tell you a true  
sermon.

4

We all know  
how Adam fell  
from bliss.

8

12

He took the  
forbidden fruit.

16

He fell into hell ;

there he remained  
until Christ  
brought him out.

20

24

All backbiters,  
robbers, thieves,  
and men-killers  
shall go to hell.

28

Also lechers and  
whoremongers,

And þer heo sculen wunien.  
 euere buten ende. 32  
 Alle þeos false chepmen.  
 þe feond heom wule habbe.  
 Bachares. *and* brueres.  
 for alle men heo gabbe. 36  
 Loȝe heo holdet hore galun.  
 mid berme heo hine fullep.  
 And euer of þe purse.  
 þat seluer heo tullep. 40  
 Boþe heo makeþ feble.  
 heore bred. *and* heore ale.  
 Habben heo þat seluer!  
 ne tellet heo neuer tale. 44  
 Godemen for godes luue.  
 bileueþ suche sunne.  
 For atten ende hit bi-nimeþ  
 heueriche wunne. 48  
 Alle prestes wifes.  
 ich wot heo beoþ for-lore.  
 þes persones ich wene!  
 ne beoþ heo noȝt for-bore. 52  
 Ne þeos prude zungemen.  
 þat luuiþ malekin.  
 And þeos prude maidenen.  
 þat luuiþ Ianekin. 56  
 At chirche. *and* at cheping.  
 hwanne heo to-gadere come.  
 Heo runeþ to-gaderes.  
*and* spekeþ of derne luue. 60  
 Hwenne heo to chirche comeþ.  
 to þe haliday.  
 Eueruch wile his leof iseon.  
 þer ȝef<sup>1</sup> he may. 64  
 Heo bi-holdeþ wadekin.  
 mid swiþe gled eye.

[leaf 249]

<sup>1</sup> MS. ȝeþ

|                               |   |
|-------------------------------|---|
| And þer heo schulle wunye.    |   |
| euer buten ende.              | 32  |
| Alle þeos false chapmen.      | false chapmen,  |
| þe feond heom wule habbe.     |   |
| Bakares and breowares.        | bakers and  |
| for alle men heo gabbe.       | 36 brewers, who<br>give bad measure.  |
| Lowe heo holdeþ heore galun.  |   |
| Mid beorme heo hine fulleþ.   |   |
| And euer of þe purse.         |   |
| þat seoluer heo tulleþ.       | 40 <i>entice</i>  |
| Boþe heo makeþ feble.         |   |
| heore bred and heore ale.     |   |
| Habbe heo þat seoluer.        |   |
| ne telleþ heo neuer tale.     | 44 They make bad<br>bread and ale,<br>nor care they so<br>long as they get<br>the silver.                   |
| Gode men for godes luue.      |   |
| bileueþ sucche sunne.         |   |
| For at þen ende hit bi-nymeþ. |   |
| heueriche wunne.              | 48  |
| Alle preostes wives.          |   |
| ich wot heo beoþ for-lore.    | All priests' wives<br>shall be damned.  |
| þes persones ich wene.        |   |
| ne beoþ heo nouht for-bore.   | 52  |
| Ne þeos prude yongemen.       |   |
| þat luuyþ Malekyn.            | Those proud<br>young men that<br>love Malkin, and<br>those maidens<br>that love Jankin,<br>[leaf 258, back] |
| And þeos prude maydenes.      |   |
| þat luuyþ ianekyn.            | 56  |
| At chireche and at chepyng.   |   |
| hwanne heo to-gadere côme.    |   |
| Heo runeþ to-gaderes.         |   |
| and spekeþ of derne luue.     | 60  |
| Hwenne heo to chirche cumeþ.  |   |
| to þon holy daye.             | come together at<br>church and<br>market to talk of<br>illicit love.  |
| Euervych wile his leof i-seo. |   |
| þer yef he may.               | 64  |
| Heo biholdeþ watekin.         |   |
| Mid swiþe gled eye.           |   |

|                                     |     |
|-------------------------------------|-----|
| Atom his hire <i>pater noster</i> . |     |
| biloken in hire teye.               | 68  |
| Masses <i>and</i> matines.          |     |
| ne kepeþ heo nouht.                 |     |
| . . . . .                           | 72  |
| Robin wule Gilot.                   |     |
| leden to þen ale.                   |     |
| And sitten þer to-gederes.          |     |
| <i>and</i> tellen heore tale.       | 76  |
| He mai quiten hire ale.             |     |
| <i>and</i> soþen do þat gome.       |     |
| An eue to go mid him.               |     |
| ne þu[n]chet hire no schome.        | 80  |
| Hire sire <i>and</i> hire dame.     |     |
| preteþ hire to bete.                |     |
| Nule heo for-go Robin.              |     |
| for al heore prete.                 | 84  |
| Euer heo wile hire schere.          |     |
| ne com hire nomon neh.              |     |
| Fort þat hire wombe.                |     |
| up arise an heh.                    | 88  |
| Godemen for godes luue.             |     |
| bi-leueþ eoure sunne.               |     |
| For aten ende hit bi-nimeþ.         |     |
| heueriche wunne.                    | 92  |
| Bidde we seinte marie.              |     |
| for hire milde mode.                |     |
| For þe teres þat heo wep.           |     |
| for hire sone blode.                | 96  |
| Al so wis so he god his.            |     |
| for hire erdinge.                   |     |
| To þe blisse of heuene.             |     |
| he us alle bringe.                  | 100 |

- At hom is hire pater noster.  
 biloken in hire teye. 68  
 Masses and Matynes.  
 ne kepeþ heo nouht.  
 For wilekyn and watekyn.  
 beoþ in hire þouht. 72  
 Robyn wule Gilothe.  
 leden to þan ale.  
 And sitten þer to-gederes.  
 and tellen heore tale. 76  
 He may quyten hire ale.  
 and seoppe don þat gome.  
 An eue to go myd him.  
 ne pincheþ hire no schome. 80  
 Hire syre and hire dame.  
 þreteþ hire to bête.  
 Nule heo fur-go Robyn.  
 for al heore préte. 84  
 Euer heo wule hire skere. *dox. l. 11. 12*  
 ne com hire no mon neyh.  
 Forte þat hire wombe.  
 vp aryse an heyh. 88  
 Godemen for godes luue.  
 bi-leueþ oure sunne.  
 For at þon ende hit bi-nymeþ.  
 heoueryche wunne. 92  
 Bidde we seynte Marie.  
 for hire Milde mode.  
 For þe theres þat heo weop.  
 for hire sune blode. 96  
 Al so wis. so he god is.  
 for hire erendynge.  
 To þe blysse of heouene.  
 he vs alle brynge. Amen. 100

The maidens take  
 no thought of  
 masses and  
 matins, for their  
 thoughts are all  
 of Wilkin and  
 Watkin.

Robin will take  
 Gilot to the ale-  
 house to do their  
 talking.

He will pay for  
 her ale, and then  
 she will go with  
 him in the  
 evening.

She will not forgo  
 her Robin, though  
 her parents  
 threaten to beat  
 her.

Good men, for  
 God's love forsake  
 your sins.

Let us pray to  
 Mary to intercede  
 for us.

that God may  
 bring us to  
 heaven's bliss.

## XXVI.

## Will and Wit.

[Cotton MS. Caligula A ix, leaf 246, back.]

When will pre-  
valls over wit  
then are will and  
wit forlorn.

A hasty will  
shows no wit.

Will without wit  
leads to sorrow.

Hwenne so wil wit ofer-stieð.  
þenne is wil and wit for-lore.

Hwenne so wil his hete hieð.

þer nis nowiht wit icore.

4

Ofte wil to georþe sieð.

Bute ȝif wit him wite to-fore.

Ac hwenne so wil to wene wrieð.

þe o fo of wisdom is to-tore

8

## XXVII.

## A Prayer to our Lady.

[Additional MS. 27,909.]

Lady St Mary,  
mother and maid,  
help me.  
I repent me of  
my worthless  
life.

Leuedi sainte marie moder and meide.

þu wisie me nuþe for ich eom eirede. *Archie 88,372 (and ann.)*

vnnut lif to longe ich lede.

hwanne ich me bipenche! wel sore ich me a-drede. 4

I am bound with  
many sins—day  
and night I try  
to go hence to  
be with God in  
bliss.

Ich eom i-bunde sore mid wel feole seonne.

mid smale and mid grete mid wel feole cunne.

dai and nicht ich fundie to wendende heonne.

wielde Godd an heuene to hwucchere wunne. *Archie 88,372.*

Sleep hath taken  
up more than  
half my life;  
sore I bewail my  
sloth.

Slep me hað mi lif forstole richt half oðer more.

awai to late ich was iwar. nu hit me reoweð sore

inne slepe ne wende ich endie nocht þech ich slepe  
euremore.

hwao se lifeð þat wakerur beo þenþ of mine sore. 12

Too long sleeps  
he that never  
shall awake.  
Whoso thought  
on his ending-  
day,

Al to longe slepð þe mann þat neure nele awakie.

hwo se understant wel his ende-dai wel ȝeorne he mot  
spakie

to donde sunne awei fram him *and* fele almesse makie. earnestly would  
 3if him ne schal hwanne he forð want: his brei gurdel he hasten to put  
 quakie. away sin. 16

Slep me hað mi lif forstole er ich me bisehe. Sleep hath con-  
 þat ich wel a3itte nu bi suhðe of min ehe. sumed my life ere  
 mi brune her is hwit bicume. ich not for hwucche leihe. I became aware.  
*and* mi tohte rude iturnd al in-to oðre dehe. My bright com-  
 20 plexion is turned  
 all to another  
 colour.

Ifurn ich habbe isunehed mid worke *and* mid worde. Of yore I have  
 hwile in mine bedde *and* hwile atte borde. sinned in word  
 ofte win idrunke *and* selde of þe forde. 23 and deed.  
 Of the wine I  
 have drunk oft;  
 but seldom of  
 the stream.  
 muchel ich habbe ispened: to lite ich habbe an horde. Too little have I  
 laid in hoard;

Hord þat ich telle. is almesse-dede. that is, in alme-  
 3ieue þe hungrie mete *and* te nakede iwede. deed, in feeding  
 the hungry,  
 rede þe redliese þat is wið-ute rede. and clothing the  
 naked, &c.  
 luue god almichti *and* of him habbe drede. 28

Ifurn ich habbe isune3et mid wurken *and* midd muðe. Of yore I have  
*and* mid alle mine lime siððe ich sunehi cuðe. sinned with all  
 my limbs.  
*and* wel feole sunne ido þe me ofþincheð nuðe. I repent me now,  
*and* swo me hadde ifurn ido 3if hit me crist i-3uðe. 32 and would have  
 done before had  
 Christ granted it.

Moder ful of milce ibidde mi mod wende. Mother of mercy,  
 læte me steowi mi flesch *and* mine fo schiende. enable me to  
 subdue my flesh,  
 edmodnesse luue to mine lifes ende. and confound my  
 foes, and to love  
 God and man.  
 luue to gode *and* te mann ic bidde þat tu me sende. 36

Leuedi sainte marie understond nu seonne mine. Bear my errand  
 ber min erende wel to deore sune þine. to thy Son,  
 that he shield us  
 from hell-pains.  
 hwas fle[s]ch *and* blod ihal3ed is of bred. of water of wine.  
 þat us ischulde he eure: fram alle helle pine. 40

Inne mete *and* inne drinke ic habbe ibeo ouerdede. I have sinned in  
 meat and drink,  
*and* inne wel sittende schon in pruttere iwede. and in fine  
 clothes.  
 hwanne ich ihurde of gode speke. ne hedd ich hwat me I have taken little  
 heed to listen to  
 good things.  
 sede. Since I shall  
 reckon thereof,  
 I may well be  
 sore afraid.  
 hwan ich hier-of rekeni schal: wel sore me mei drede 43

## XXVIII.

## A Song to the Virgin.

[Egerton MS. 613, leaf 2.]

Archiv 88, 372.

Lady, pray to thy  
Son for me,

that I may come  
to thee,

Thou art the best  
counsel of the  
sorrowful;

and thou art rest  
to the weary,

Besech thy Son  
that we may come  
to him,

All this world  
was forlorn  
until our Lord  
was born.

The dark night  
departed and the  
day of salvation  
came,

In thee is the well  
of virtue.

Of on þat is so fayr and briȝt.

*velud maris stella.*

Briȝter þan þe day-is liȝt.

*parens et puella.*

Ic crie to þe þou se to me.

Leuedy preye þi sone for me.

*tam pia.*

þat ic mote come to þe!

*maria.*

Of kare conseil þou ert best.

*felix fecundata.*

Of alle wery þou ert rest.

*mater honorata.*

Bi-sek him wiz milde mod.

þat for ous alle sad is blod.

*in cruce.*

þat we moten komen til him.

*In luce.*

Al þis world was for-lore.

*eua peccatrix.*

Tyl our lord was y-bore!

*de te genitrice.*

With aue it went a-way.

puster nyth and comet þe day

*salutis*

þe wells springet hut of þe!

*uirtutis.*

4

8

12

16

20

24



|   |    |   |
|---|----|---|
| Leuedi flour of alle þing.<br><i>rosa sine spina.</i>                         | 28 | Thou, O Lady, the<br>thornless rose,                                  |
| þu bere ihesu heuene king.<br><i>gratia diuina.</i>                           |    | didst bear<br>heaven's King—  |
| Of alle þu berst þe pris.<br>Leuedi quene of parays.<br><i>electa.</i>        | 32 | thou art Queen<br>of Paradise.  |
| Mayde milde. Moder.<br><i>es effecta.</i>                                     | 36 |   |
| Wel he wot he is þi sone.<br><i>uentre quem portasti.</i>                     |    | Well does Jesus<br>know that he is<br>thy Son.                        |
| He wyl nout werne þe þi bone.<br><i>paruum quem lactasti.</i>                 | 40 | He will not refuse<br>thee thy requests.                              |
| So hende and so god he his.<br>He hauet brout ous to blis.<br><i>superni.</i> |    | He has brought<br>us to bliss, and<br>closed the foul pit<br>of hell. |
| þat hauez hi-dut þe foule put.<br><i>infern.</i>                              | 44 |   |
| <i>Explicit cantus iste.</i>  |    |   |

## XXIX.

## A Prayer to the Virgin.

[Egerton MS. 613, leaf 2.]

|  |   |  |   |
|--|---|--|---|
| [I]blessed beo þu lauedi ful of houene. Blisse.<br>swete flur of parais moder of milder[t]nisse.<br>þu praie ihesu crist þi sone þat he me i-wisse.<br>ware a londe al swo iho beo þat he me ne i-misse. |   | Lady, full of<br>heaven's bliss,<br>pray thy Son to<br>direct my path<br>wherever I may<br>be. | 4 |
| Of þe faire lauedi min oreisun ich wile bi-ginnen.<br>þi deore swete sunnes loue. þu lere me to winnen.<br>wel ofte ich sike and sorwe make ne mai ich neuere<br>blinnen                                 |   | Teach me to win<br>thy dear Son's<br>love.   |   |
| bote þu pruh þin milde mod bringe me out of sunne.   | 8 | I am oft in<br>sorrow, and I<br>shall never cease<br>until thou bring<br>me out of sin.        |   |

My fleſh is foul,  
the world is falſe,  
look thou that I  
fall not into ſin.  
Shield me from  
the pain of hell,  
and bring me into  
ineffable bliſs.

Ofte ihc ſeke merci pin ſwete name ich calle  
mi flehs is foul þis world is falſ þu loke þat ich ne falle.  
Lauedi freo þu ſchild me fram þe pine of helle. 11  
And ſend me in-to þat bliſſe þat tunge ne mai tellen.

Full oft I call  
upon thee—thy  
help alone will be  
of ſervice to me.

Mine werkes lauedi heo makieþ me ful won.  
wel ofte ich clepie and calle þu iher me forþan.  
Bote ic chabbe þe help of þe oper i ne kan.  
help þu me ful wel þu miſt<sup>1</sup> þu helpeſt mani a man. 16

All my hope is  
upon thee—let me  
never loſe thine  
eternal light.

Iblessed beo þu lauedi ſo fair and ſo briht.  
Al min hope is uppon þe bi dai and bi nicht.  
helpe þruh pin milde mod for wel wel þu miſt<sup>2</sup>  
þat ich neuere for feondes ſake fur-go pin eche liht. 20

Queen of heaven,  
I pray thy Son's  
mercy: I repent  
me of my ſins.

[leaf 2, back]

I have thee oft  
forſaken, but I  
will never more  
truſt in ſende's  
lore.

Briht and ſcene quen of houene ich bidde pin ſunnes  
hore  
þe ſunnes þat ich habbe i-eyn heo rewweþ<sup>3</sup> me ful ſore  
wel ofte ich chabbe þe fur-ſaken. þe wil ich neuer eft  
more.  
Lauedi for þine ſake treuþen feondes lore. 24

Lady, ſo fair and  
gracious, pray  
thy Son that I  
may come to  
Paradiſe, there to  
live for ever.

Iblessed beo þu lauedi ſo feir and ſo hende.  
þu praie iheſu criſt þi ſone. þat he me i-ſende.  
whare a londe alſwo ich beo er ich honne wende<sup>4</sup>  
þat ich mote in parais wonien wi-puten ende. 28

Queen of the Stars,  
lead and ſteer me  
in this world, ſo  
that at my ending  
day I may have  
no fear of ſende.

Bricht and ſcene quen of ſtorre ſo me liht and lere  
in þis falſe fikele world ſo me led and ſteore.  
þat ich at min ende-dai ne habbe non feond to fere.  
iheſu mit ti ſwate blod þu bohteſt ful me deore. 32

Jesus, Son of  
Mary, hear thy  
mother's petition,  
to thee I dare not  
cry.—Let me not  
at doomsday be  
banished from  
thy preſence.

Theſu ſeinte marie ſone þu iher pin moder bone  
to þe ne dar i clepien noht to hire ich make min mene.  
þu do þat ich for hire ſake beo imaked ſo clene 35  
þat ich noht at dai of dome beo flemed of þin exſene.

<sup>1</sup> Read *miht*.    <sup>2</sup> Read *miht*.    <sup>3</sup> Or *reþþeþ*.    <sup>4</sup> MS. *þende*.

## XXX.

*A Song on the Passion. Archr 88, 372.*[*Egerton MS. 613, leaf 1, back.*]

Somer is comen *and* winter gon,  
 þis day biginniz to longe,  
*and* þis foules euerichon  
 Ioye hem wit songe ;  
 So stronge kare me bint,  
 al wit Ioye þat is funde  
           in londe,  
 Al for a child  
 þat is so milde  
           of honde.

þat child þat is so milde *and* wlong,  
           *and* eke of grete munde,  
 þoþe in boskes *and* in bank,  
           isout me hauet astunde.  
 Ifunde he heuede me,  
 for an appel of a tre,  
           ibunde ;  
 [H]e brac þe bond  
 þat was so strong,  
           wit wunde.

Summer is come,  
 winter is gone,

*and* the birds sing  
 joyfully.

4

Great grief pos-  
 sesses me, not-  
 withstanding all  
 this joy, on ac-  
 count of a gentle  
 child.

8

12      That child has  
           sought me out in  
           woodlands and  
           hills.

16      He found me  
           bound on account  
           of an apple taken  
           from a tree.

20      He brake the bond  
           that was so strong  
           with his wounds.

That child did  
humble himself  
for me—for me he  
was sold to the  
Jews.

They knew him  
not, and said, Let  
us nail him upon  
a tree.

But first we will  
put him to shame.

Jesus is the child's  
name, king of all  
lands;

they made game  
of this king, and  
smote him upon  
the tree;

they gave him  
five wounds:

and they gave  
him a cup of  
bitter drink.

Unless he had  
suffered on the  
rood, neither  
castle, tower, nor  
hall could have  
saved us from  
boiling in hell  
deep.

Mary, that stood  
there, let fall tears  
of blood.

þat child þat was so wilde *and* wlong

to me a-lute lowe,  
fram me to giwes he was sold,

ne cupen hey him nout cnowe  
do we, sayden he,  
naile we him opon a tre  
alowe;

Ac arst we  
sullen scumi him  
abrowe.

Thesu is þe childes name,  
king of al[le] londe;  
of þe king he meden game  
*and* smiten him wit honde

to fonden him; opon a tre  
he ȝeuen him wundes to *and* pre  
mi[d] honden,

of bitter drunk  
he senden him  
asonde.

det he nom ho rode tre,  
þe lif of us alle;  
[ne miitte] it nowtt oper be,

bote we scolden walle;  
*and* wallen in helle dep  
nere neuere so swet  
wit alle.

ne miitte us  
sauī castel, tur,  
ne halle.

Mayde *and* Moder þat astod,  
marie ful of grace,  
[O hu let þe teres al of blod]  
uallen in þe place;

24

28

32

36

40

44

48

52

þe trace ran of he blod  
 changedere fles *and* blod  
*and* face.

he was to-drawe  
 so dur islawe  
 in chace.

det he nam, þe suete man,  
 wel heye oþon þe rode ;  
 he wes hure sunnes euerichon  
 mid is swete blode ;  
 mid fiodē he lute adun  
*and* brace<sup>1</sup> þe ȝates of þat prisun  
 þat stode,  
*and* ches hem out  
 þat þere were  
 gode.

he ros him ene þe þridde day,  
*and* sette him on is trone,  
 he wule come a domes day  
 to demus euerichic one.  
 grone he may *and* wepen ay,  
 þe man þat deiēt wit-oute lay,  
 alone.

grante ous, crist,  
 wit þin uprist  
 to gone.<sup>2</sup> Amen.

<sup>1</sup> Read *brac*.

<sup>2</sup> MS. *gene*.

56 The blood ran  
 down, and  
 changed was flesh,  
 bone, and face.

60 Jesus was drawn  
 asunder, as deer  
 slain in the chace.

64 High upon the  
 rood the sweet  
 man suffered, and  
 washed our sins  
 away with his  
 sweet blood.

68 With the flood he  
 came down and  
 brake the gates of  
 hell, and took out  
 the righteous.

72 He rose on the  
 third day, and sat  
 on his throne;

on doomsday he  
 will come to  
 judge us all.

76 Groan and weep  
 may he that dies  
 in sin.

80 Grant us, O Christ,  
 to ascend as thou  
 didst.

## XXXI.

## The Ten Commandments.

[*Cambr. Univ. Libr. MS. Ff. 6. 15, leaf 21; before 1300.*]<sup>1</sup> De .x. *preceptis in lingua materna.*

Printed in 'A Catalogue of the Manuscripts preserved in the  
Library of the University of Cambridge,' vol. ii. p. 522.

þu falt hauen na god buten An.

Idel adh ne fwere þu Nan.

þe halidayes þu fhalt pieme.

ffader and moder þu fhalt queme.

4

Loke þat tu ne fla na man.

Leccherie do þu nan.

Be na þef. ne þeuef fere.

ffalf witneffe þu ne bere.

8

þierne<sup>2</sup> þu nout þin nethtebure huf.

Noch þat hif is. ne his spus.

<sup>1</sup> In the left margin of the MS.<sup>2</sup> Printed þreune. 'Non concupisces rem proximi tui' in the Latin version opposite the English.

## APPENDIX I.

[*Harleian MS. 3093, leaf 36, col. 2.*]

INCIPIT LIBER FISILOGUS A THETBALDO ITALICO  
COMPOSITUS.

**T**Res leo naturas *et* tres habet inde figuras.  
 Quas ego *christe* tibi *ter* seno carmine<sup>1</sup> scripsi.  
 [Altera diuini memorant animalia libri<sup>2</sup>]  
 De quibus apposui quæ rursus<sup>3</sup> mistica noui. 4  
 Temptans diuersis si possem scribere metris.  
*Et* numero nostrum<sup>4</sup> complent simul addita soldum.  
 Nam leo stans fortis super alta cacumina montis.  
 Qualicunque uia uallis descendit ad ima. 8  
 Si uenatorem per notum sentit hodorem<sup>5</sup>  
 Cauda cuncta linit quæ pes uestigia figit.  
 Quatinus inde<sup>6</sup> suum non possit querere lustrum.  
 Qui<sup>7</sup> quociens dormit nunquam sua lumina claudit. 12  
 Natus non uigilat dum sol se tercio girat.  
*Sed* dans rugitum pater eius suscitât illum.  
*Tunc* quasi uiuescit tunc sensus quinque capescit.  
 Sic tibi qui celsi resides in culmine cæli. 16  
 Cum libuit tandem terrenam uisere partem.  
 Vt genus humanum releuares crimine lapsum.  
 Non penitus notum fuit ulli demoniorum.  
 Viscera MARIE tibi *christe* fuisse cubile. 20  
*Et* qui te genuit triduum post surgere fecit<sup>8</sup>  
 Cum mortis uindex<sup>9</sup> crucis mortem<sup>10</sup> ipse subires.  
 Tu nos custodis tu<sup>11</sup> nullo tempore dormis.  
 Peruigil ut pastor ne demat de grege raptor. 24

Ad. = Additional MS. 10,415. Ar. = Arundel MS. 243.

<sup>1</sup> That is, in the thrice six or eighteen lines, 7—24. Some copies wrongly read *biseno*. <sup>2</sup> From Ad.

<sup>3</sup> Ad. rursus *que*. Ar. *que* prorsus. <sup>4</sup> Ar. *nostrum*.

<sup>5</sup> Ad. odorem. <sup>6</sup> Ar. ille. <sup>7</sup> Ad. Et. <sup>8</sup> Ad. fecit.

<sup>9</sup> MS. uindex. <sup>10</sup> MS. mortem crucis. Ad. crucis mortem

<sup>11</sup> Ar. qui. Ad. quod.

- E**sse ferunt aquilam<sup>1</sup> super omne uolatile primam.<sup>2</sup>  
 Quae sic se renouat quando senecta grauat.  
 Fons ubi sit quaerit qui nunquam surgere desit.  
 It super hunc caelo fitque propinqua deo. 28  
 [Tunc sibi sol ambas accendit feruidus alas.  
 Et minuit grandes a[ll]leuiatque graues.]<sup>3</sup>  
 Tunc quoque caligo consumitur igne propinquo :  
 Quam confert oculis uita uetusta suis. 32  
 Mox ruit et fo[n]tis liquidis se mergit in undis  
 Vtque cadit nido sic noua fit<sup>4</sup> subito.  
 Est autem rostrum quo carpitur esca retortum.  
 Vix ualet ex aliquo sumere pauca cibo. 36  
 Sed feriens petram uel mordens ut solet escam  
 Atterit obliquum sic capit inde cibum.  
 Est homo peccatis quae sunt ab origine matris.  
 Qualis adest aquila sed renouatur ita. 40  
 Nubes transco[n]dit solisque incendia sentit.  
 Mundum cum pompis despiciendo suis.  
 Fit nouus in christo ter mersus gurgite uiuo.<sup>5</sup>  
 De se sum uiuus fons ait<sup>6</sup> ille pius. 44  
 Obterit<sup>7</sup> obliquum per uerba precancia rostrum.<sup>8</sup>  
 Quod christus petra [sit]<sup>9</sup> firmat apostolus id.  
 Iam nouus est panem<sup>10</sup> super omnia mella suauem.<sup>10</sup>  
 Panis id est christus. fit sine morte cibus. 48

## DE SERPENTE .

- I**am senex serpens nouus esse gaudet.  
 Atque ieiunans macie perhorret.  
 Pellis effeta tremit. ossa neruis.  
 Sola manent his.<sup>11</sup> 52  
 Querit angustum lapidis foramen.  
 Vix mouens sese ueniens quae tandem.  
 Inde pertransit spoliat quae carnem.  
 Pelle uetusta. 56  
 Quoslibet riuos repetens aquarum.  
 Vt sitim perdat uomit ante uirus.  
 In aquis ergo minus hunc timebo.  
 Absque ueneno. 60  
 Si uirum quumquam sine ueste spectat.  
 Longius serpens ut ab igne cessat.

<sup>1</sup> Ad. aquilas.<sup>2</sup> Ad. primas.<sup>3</sup> From Ad.<sup>4</sup> MS. sit. Ad. fit.<sup>5</sup> Ar. sacro.<sup>6</sup> Ar. Desersum uiuus fons fluit.<sup>7</sup> Ad. & Ar. Os terit.<sup>8</sup> Ad. christum. Ar. crestum.<sup>9</sup> From Ad.<sup>10</sup> MS. panis . . . suauis ; Ad. & Ar. panem . . . suauem.<sup>11</sup> MS. manetic.



|   |                            |
|---|----------------------------|
| At uidens illum qui fert amictum.                 |                            |
| Surgit in ipsum. <sup>1</sup>                     | 64                         |
| Quem uir ut uincit sequiturque multum.            |                            |
| Negligit corpus facit inde scutum.                |                            |
| Verticis uero tenet usque curam.                  |                            |
| Ne moriatur.                                      | 68                         |
| Fonte qui sacro semel es nouatus.                 |                            |
| Denuo pecca[n]s silicernus extas.                 |                            |
| ErGo sis semper imitator anguis.                  |                            |
| Cum ueterascis.                                   | 72                         |
| Sit cibus parcus minuantur artus.                 |                            |
| Vnde non mandis miseros iuuabis.                  |                            |
| Penitens desle dominoque semper <sup>2</sup>      |                            |
| dic miserere.                                     | 76                         |
| Signat hunc callem lapidis foramen.               |                            |
| Signat et christum petra nam per ipsum.           |                            |
| Fit nouus quisque capit atque <sup>3</sup> uitam. |                            |
| Fine carentem.                                    | 80                         |
| Cuius ad celsum uenie[n]do templum.               |                            |
| Vt hibas sacrum beatumque uerbum.                 | [leaf 86, back,<br>col. 2] |
| Euomas primum quod habes nocium.                  |                            |
| Corde uenenum.                                    | 84                         |
| Corde sunt iræ magis angue nigræ.                 |                            |
| Et velud <sup>4</sup> matres odium creantes.      |                            |
| Corde sunt rixæ inuidiæque nigræ.                 |                            |
| Non bene amicæ.                                   | 88                         |
| Corde conceptis furiis superbis.                  |                            |
| Et quoequales <sup>5</sup> superos que tempnis.   |                            |
| Plena sunt istis aliis que multis.                |                            |
| Corde uenenis.                                    | 92                         |
| His quidem purus quasi ueste nudus.               |                            |
| Dæmones anguis tipicus fugabis.                   |                            |
| Noctis ut cæcas reprimit tenebras.                |                            |
| Orbita solis.                                     | 96                         |
| Sed tamen multas paciēre pugnas.                  |                            |
| Atque dum uiues in agone fies.                    |                            |
| Vnde serpentes imitare prudens.                   |                            |
| Verticis auctor.                                  | 100                        |
| Vis nouus uitam sine fine dignam.                 |                            |
| Semper illesum caput est habendum.                |                            |
| Hoc caput dico quod habes in ipso.                |                            |
| Principe christo.                                 | 104                        |

<sup>1</sup> Ad. illum.<sup>2</sup> Ad. sepe.<sup>3</sup> Ad. inde.<sup>4</sup> MS. Velud et. Ad. Et uelut.<sup>5</sup> Ad. coequales.

## DE FORMICA

**E**xemplum nobis prebet formica laboris.  
 Quando suo solitum portat in ore cibum.  
 Inque suis factis res monstrat spirituales.  
 Quas quia iudeus non amat inde reus. 108  
 Vt valeat brumæ fieri secunda future.  
 Est calor. interea non requiescit ea.  
 Nosque laboremus fratres dum tempus habemus.  
 Securi fieri tempore iudicii. 112  
 Hæc frumenta legit. si comperit ordea spernit.  
 Ipse nouam legem colligo non ueterem.  
 Sed ne de pluuiis aspersum germinet udis.  
 Aut ea ne pereat esse quod hinc nequeat. 116  
 Granum quod legit prudens formica bipartit.  
 Hoc est quod binas lex habet una uias.  
 Quæ terrena sonat simul et celestia monstrat.  
 Nunc mentem pascit et modo corpus alit. 120  
 Nos utinam repleat famis ut formido recedat.  
 Tempore iudicii quod simile<sup>1</sup> est hiemi.

## DE VULPE;

**P**lena dolis multis uocitatur subdola uulpis.  
 Hanc amat<sup>2</sup> agricola quod rapit altilia. 124  
 Si[n]<sup>3</sup> habet illa famem. que desunt inuenit artem.  
 Qua sibi cracantes prendere possit aues.  
 In terram scissam se tendit namque supinam.  
 Et quasi mortua sit flamina nulla trahit. 128  
 Cornix aut ater coruus putat esse cadauer.  
 Insidet ut comedat. morsibus excoriat.  
 Illa leuis surgit subitoque uolatile sumit.  
 Dentibus et tristem reddit edendo uicem. 132  
 Inde tenet duplam quam prodest nosse figuram.  
 Nunc zabulo similis par aliquando uiris.  
 Mortuus est uere quod<sup>4</sup> mortem fecit habere.  
 Nos et dissimulat quod mala non faciat. 136  
 Cuius edit carnem qui rem facit omnis inanem.  
 Hoc est peccatum quodlibet atque malum.  
 Quem quasi deglutit cum secum ad tartara ducit.  
 Dæmon ab insidiis. uulpeculæ est similis. 140  
 Et cum fraude uiri sunt uulpis nomine digni.  
 Quales hoc omnes tempore sunt homines.  
 Herodesque fuit. qui christum querere iussit.  
 Credere se simulans prendere dissimulans. 144

[leaf 87]

<sup>1</sup> MS. similæ.<sup>2</sup> Ar. odit.<sup>3</sup> Ad. Sin.<sup>4</sup> Ad. qui.

## DE CERUO

**C**eruus habere duas naturas atque figuras.  
 Dicitur a phisio cum docet inde logo.  
 Nam quamuis grandes cum narribus extrahat angues.  
 De caueis terre de latebris ue petræ. 148  
 Quos uorat et tetro mox feruescente ueneno.  
 Estuat ad liquidas pergerè fontis aquas  
 Quas cum forte bibit his plenus toxica uincit.  
 Se iuuenemque facit cornua quando iacit. 152  
 Nos quoque cum prisci serpentis fraude reuicti.  
 Virus contrahimus urimur et facibus  
 Hoc est luxuria quæ fert odium uel et iram.  
 Aut etiam nimia eris auaricia. 156  
 Ad fontem uiuum debemus currere christum.  
 Qui cum nos udat sumpta uenena fugat.  
 Et sumus his dempti<sup>1</sup> iuuenes factique superni.<sup>2</sup>  
 Quæ quasi cornua sunt cum miseros feriunt. 160  
 Cornua sunt homini quæ portant uertice cerui.  
 Sed non dedecori inde uidentur heri.  
 Si fluuios tranant par nant pariterque peragunt.  
 Longius et pergunt pascua quando petunt. 164  
 Portant suspensum gradientes ordine mentum.  
 Alter in alterius clunibus impositus.  
 Hunc retinent usum si sint uel in agmine centum.  
 Sed qui precedit fessus ad ima redit. 168  
 Sic se uertentes cuncti mutuoque fere[n]tes.  
 Nunquam deficiunt atque uiam peragunt.  
 Per tales mores alienos ferre labores. [leaf 87, col. 2]  
 Cum pietate monent atque iunare docent. 172  
 Sic lex est christi nobis complenda magistri.  
 Cuius qui faciet pascua repperiet.<sup>3</sup>

## DE ARANEA

**V**ermis araneus exiguus.  
 Plurima fila net assiduus. 176  
 Texere que studet artifex.  
 Retia sunt ea musca tibi.  
 Vt uolitans capiaris ibi.  
 Dulcis et utilis esca sibi. 180  
 Huic placet illud opus tenue.  
 Sed sibi nil ualet ut fragile.  
 Quælibet aura trahit patulum.  
 Rumpitur et cadit in nichilum. 184

<sup>1</sup> Ad. demptis.<sup>2</sup> Ad. superbis.<sup>3</sup> MS. repperiet.

Hos sequitur homo uerniculos.  
 Decipiendo suos socios.  
 Quos comedit faciens miseros.  
*Et placet inde sibi nimium.* 188  
*Quando nocere potest alium.*  
*Ille tamen mala quique facit.*  
*Cum moritur. quasi tela cadit.*  
*Quo modo dictus araneus it.* 192

## DE BALENA

**E**st super omne pecus quod uiuit in æquore cætus.  
 Monstrum grande satis cum super extat aquis.  
 Prospiciens illum montem putat esse marinum.  
*Aut quod in oceano insula sit medio.* 196  
*Hic si quando famem quam fert sepiissime grandem.*  
*Alleu[i]are uelit ca[l]lidus? os aperit.<sup>1</sup>*  
*Vnde uelud florum se flatus reddit hodorum.*  
*Ad se pisciculos<sup>2</sup> ut tra[h]at exiguos.* 200  
*Exiguos tantum quoniam comprehe[n]dere magnvm.*  
*Perfectumque nequit. sed nec in ore premit.*  
*Piscis pisciculos claudit degluti[t] et illos.*  
*Non sic non sic iam sorbuit ille ionam.* 204  
*Si sit tempestas cum uenit uel uenit estas.*  
*Et pelagus fundum turbidat omne suum.*  
*Continuo summas se tollit cætus ad undas.*  
*Est promunctorium ce[r]nere non modicum.<sup>3</sup>* 208  
*Huic religare citam pro tempestate carinam.*  
*Nautæ festinant. ut que foras saliant.*  
*Accendant uigilem quem nauis portitat ignem.*  
 [leaf 87, back] *Vt cale se faciant<sup>4</sup> aut comedenda quoquant* 212  
*Utque focum sentit tunc se fugiendo remergit.*  
*Vnde prius<sup>5</sup> uenit sicque carina perit.*  
*Uiribus est zabulus quasi cetus corpore magnus.*  
*Vt mon[s]trant magni quos facit ille magi.* 216  
*Mentes cunctorum qui sunt ubicunque uiuorum.*  
*Esurit atque sitit quosque potest perimit.*  
*Sed modicos fidei trahit in dulcedine uerbi.*  
*Namque fide firmos non trahit ille uiros.* 220  
*In quo confidit quisquis uel spem sibi ponit.*  
*Ad stigma rapitur quam male decipitur.*

<sup>1</sup> MS. asperit.      <sup>2</sup> MS. pisciculos.      <sup>3</sup> MS. moduum.  
<sup>4</sup> MS. faciunt.      <sup>5</sup> MS. primum.      Ad. prius.

## DE SIRENIS

**S**irenæ sunt monstra maris resonancia multis<sup>1</sup>  
*Vocibus et modulis cantus formancia multis* 224  
*Ad quas incaute ueniunt sepiissime naute.*  
*Quæ faciunt sompnum nimia dulcedine uocum*  
*Et modo naufragium modo dant mortale periculum.*  
*Quo qui fugerunt hii tales esse tulerunt.* 228  
*Ex umbilico sunt ut pulcherrima uirgo.*  
*Quod que facit monstrum uolucres sunt inde deorsum.*

## DE HONOCENTAURIS

**E**st honocentauris eadem natura biformis.  
*In quibus est asinus humano corpore mixtus.* 232  
*Quam plures homines si[c]<sup>2</sup> sunt in more bifformes.*  
*Vnum dicentes aliud tibi mox facientes.*  
*Qui foris ut fantur sic intus non operantur.*  
*Vtpote sunt multi qui de uirtute locuti.* 236  
*Clunibus indulgent his o quam pulpita fulgent.*

## DE HELEPHANTE

**C**orpore tam grandes apud indos sunt elepha[n]tes.  
*Vt bene firmares montibus esse pares.*  
*Hii simul incedunt ut oues cum pascua querunt.* 240  
*Aduersi coeunt cum sibi conueniunt.*  
*Atque semel pariunt quamuis tot tempora uiuunt.*  
*Hoc est ter centum nec faciunt geminum.*  
*Ast unum generans et per duo tempora gestans.* 244  
*Cum facit<sup>3</sup> in magna ne cadat extat aqua.*  
*Non habet ut surgat. quia nunquam crura recuruat.*  
*Si qua forte ruit. hoc genitrix timuit.<sup>4</sup>*  
*Cum uult pausare. uel somno se recreare.* 248  
*Incumbit ligno corporis exiguo.*  
*Quam notat atque secat uenator et obice uelat.*  
*Clamque sedens spectat dum requiem repetat.*  
*Ille uelud quondam securus ad a[r]boris umbram.* 252  
*Cum uenit incumbit cumque ruente ruit.*  
*Sin homo non aderit gemit et tum denique barrit.*  
*Tunc unus currit. qui releuare cupit.*  
*Sed nequit et satagit complorans his quoque barrit.* 256  
*Multi uel magni tunc ueniunt alii.*  
*Cum nequeunt omnes contendunt mittere uoces.*

[leaf 27, back,  
col. 2]

<sup>1</sup> *magnis* is written above this word.

<sup>2</sup> Ad. sic.

<sup>3</sup> Ar. parit.

<sup>4</sup> Ad. metuit.

Ad quas fit subitus paruulus ac minimus.  
 Cuius et est mirum promuscida subleuat illum. 260  
 Et sic predictas effugit insidias.  
 Deque pilis huius si sit sub domate fumus.  
 Serpentes cedunt quæque uenena gerunt.  
 Sic homo primus adam per lignum cum cecidit iam. 264  
 Quem moyses uoluit tollere nec potuit.  
 Post hunc prophete uoluerunt, nec potuere.  
 Ipsorum precibus uenit, ad hunc dominus.  
 Qui cum sit paruus quoniam deus est homo factus. 268  
 Sic releuauit eum in comedendo reum.  
 Cuius hodor plenus de uerbis scilicet eius.  
 Si cui rite uenit inde beatus erit.  
 Omne quod est uicium fugiet de corde per ipsum. 272  
 Causa de hinc læti nulla nocebit ei.

## DE TVRTVRE

**T**urtur inane, nescit amare.  
 Nam semel uni. Nupta marito.  
 Semper adibit [cum simul ipso].<sup>1</sup> 276  
 Nocte dieque iuncta manebit.  
 Absque marito. Nemo uidebit.  
 Sed uiduata. Si caret ipso.  
 Non tamen ultra. Nubet amico. 280  
 Sola uolabit. Sola sedebit.  
 Et quasi uiuum, Corde tenebit.  
 Opperiensque. Casta manebit.  
 Sic anima extat.<sup>2</sup> Queque fidelis. 284  
 Facta uirili. Federe felix.  
 Namque maritus. Est sibi christus.  
 Cum sua de se. Pectora replet.  
 Et bene uiuens. Semper adheret. 288  
 Non alienum. Querit amicum.  
 Quamlibet orcus Sumserit illum.  
 Quem superesse. Credit in æthre.  
 Inde futurum. Spectat eundem. 292  
 Ut microcosmum. Iudicet omnem.

## DE PANTHERA.

**E**st quadrupes panter quo non<sup>3</sup> pulcrior alter.  
 Qui niger ex albo conspergitur orbiculato. 296  
 Diuersis pastus uenatibus et saciatus.  
 Se recipit, dormitque cauo, prostratus in antro.  
 Post triduum surgit, tum uero denique rugit.

<sup>1</sup> From a printed copy.    <sup>2</sup> MS. est.    <sup>3</sup> MS. non est.

|  |     |           |
|--|-----|-----------|
| <i>Exit hodor talis de gutture tamque suavis.</i>        |     | [leaf 39] |
| <i>Qui uirtute sua superat uel aromata multa.</i>        | 300 |           |
| <i>Ad quem mox tendit quæ uocem belua sentit.</i>        |     |           |
| <i>Ac sectatur cum nimia dulcedine plenum.</i>           |     |           |
| <i>Sic faciunt omnes. soli panthéra dracones.</i>        |     |           |
| <i>Cum sonat aut fugiunt aut segnes corpore fiunt.</i>   | 304 |           |
| <i>In caueisque latent. ipso nec tempore parent.</i>     |     |           |
| <i>Est autem christus panther per mistica dictus.</i>    |     |           |
| <i>Qui superest homines forma collatus ad omnes.</i>     |     |           |
| <i>Et satur ille fuit quia quot uult tot sibi sumit.</i> | 308 |           |
| <i>Et somnum cepit cum nos moriendo redemit.</i>         |     |           |
| <i>Rugitum misit postquam de morte reuixit.</i>          |     |           |
| <i>Celos ascendens ubi regnat cum patre presens.</i>     |     |           |
| <i>Quem gentes cuncte sunt sic credendo secute.</i>      | 312 |           |
| <i>Aut fugit atque latet nec ab ipso tempore paret.</i>  |     |           |
| <i>Serpens antiquus qui nobis est inimicus.</i>          |     |           |
| <i>Namque palam nullos licet audet fallere multos.</i>   |     |           |
| <i>Quos cum defendat qui secla per omnia regnat.</i>     | 316 |           |
| <i>Carminе finito sit laus et gloria christo.</i>        |     |           |
| <i>Cui sinon alii placeant hec metra tebaldi.</i>        |     |           |

## EXPLICIT LIBER PHISIOLOGI

*Archiv 88, 373.*

## APPENDIX II.

### The III Pains of Hell.

*by John Audelay.*

[Douce MS. 302, fol. 17, col. 1.]

Incipit narracio quo michel duxit paulum ad infernum: Interogandum est quis primus rogauit vt anime haberent requiem In infernum, i. e. paulus apostolus et michael archangelus: Dies dominicus est dies electus.

#### I.

Sunday is God's  
own day.

Michael and St  
Paul visited hell,

and there saw a  
sorrowful sight.

¶ þe sononday is godis oun chosyn day,  
þe wyche angelis in heuen þai worchipyn þore.

Gret sorow *and* dole here 3e may,

Hou mychael *and* poule þay went in fere

To se what payns in hel were þer,

*And* þer þay se a sorouful syzt;

Herkyns to me now moy<sup>1</sup> 3e here

What payns to synful mon þe dyzt.

Be-cause men nel not beleue,

þer-fore hit was godis ounne wyl

þat mekel schuld led poule to hel

To se þe payns, þe gret parel,

þe soþ him-selue he myzt hit preue.

4

8

12

<sup>1</sup> u altered to y?



## II.

¶ To-fore hel ȝatis furst þai se þen  
 Mone an orebil brenyng tre,  
 Hengyng ful of women *and* men,  
 þat was a sorouful syȝt to se ;  
 Sum be þe hed, sum be þe tungus treuly,  
 Sum be þe fyt, sum be þe hond,  
 Sum be þe membirs of here body,  
 þat þai han sunnyd *with-in* herthe leuand.  
 þe angel to poule he sayd þon :—  
 “ þese greuyn god ful greuously  
 With al þe lymys of here body,  
 In lechery, slouþ, *and* glotoné,  
 And dyed in det *and* dedlé syn.”

Before hell-gates  
 were burning  
 trees, upon which  
 were hanging  
 men and women.  
 16

They were hang-  
 ing from the trees  
 by those limbe of  
 their bodies with  
 which they had  
 sinned against  
 God.  
 20

24

## III.

¶ With-yn þe ȝatis, wen þay were passid,  
 A meruelis fournes þer þai se,  
 Mone a synful soule were þer-in cast ;  
 .iiij. flamys o foyre stod on alye,  
 Of dyuers colours wonderfully ;  
 About þat fournes .vij. sorous þer were,  
 Gret snow, gret yse, gret cold greslé,  
 Gret eddyrs, gret stench, gret leyte, gret foyre.  
 þen þe angel sayd to poule treuly :—  
 “ þese were proud men, raueners echon,  
 Extorcioners, monslers, robbid mone one ;  
 Satisfaccion in erþ þai wold do non,  
 And deseredyn treu ayrs vnryȝtfully :

Within the gates  
 they see a furnace  
 in which were  
 seven great sor-  
 rows for the  
 punishment of  
 28

32

36 proud men,  
 robbers, and  
 manslaughterers.

## IV.

¶ Here þai schal haue here payns þer-fore  
 Fore al þe synns þai han don cursidly.  
 Sum wepin, sum waylin, sum gron ful sore,  
 Sum broudun, sum brennen, dissyryn to dye.  
 Hou dredful is hel here may ȝe se,

40

Here is weeping  
 and wailing and  
 groaning full  
 sorely.  
 44

- In þe wyche is heuenes *with-out* gladnes,  
 In þe wyche is sorow of hert *contenualy*,  
 In þe wych of wepyng is gret plenteuesnes :  
 Next Paul saw  
 a burning wheel,  
 revolving a thou-  
 sand times an  
 hour, and therein  
 burn a thousand  
 souls.  
 In þe wyche þer is a brenyng wel, 48  
 A þosand tymys an *our* about doþ ren,  
 Vche day an angel fore smytis him þen,  
 A þousand soulis þer-in þai bren."  
 "Alas," sayd poule, "here is gret deel !" 52

## V.

- ¶ After poule se an orebbil flood,  
 In þe wyche moné deuelis bestis were *in fuyre* ;  
 As feschis *in* þe se about þai 3od,  
 Deuowreng soulis as hit chep were ; 56  
 A brygge was ouer þat gret water,  
 þat soulis passud ouer after here meryt.  
 Moné an euyl moncion was þer ordent  
 As crist *in* þe gospel reherse het 60  
*"Lygate faceculus ad comburandum similis cum  
 similibus"*  
 "Bynd bundels to-geder to be I-brent.  
 Bynd spousebrekers *with* awouters,  
 And ranegates *with* raueners,  
 And cursid leuers *with* here cumpers, 64  
 And cast ham *in* þe fuyre *with-out* end."

## VI.

- ¶ þer poule moné soulis he se  
 þat were dround *in* þat watere ;  
 Sum stod vp to þe kne, 68  
 And sum to þe arnes a lytil laȝghere,  
 And sum to þe lippis moche deppere,  
 And sum to þe brouys oche day were paynd.  
 þen poule sykud *and* wept *with* gret doloure, 72  
 And at þe angel anon he fraynd  
 "What soulis ben þese bene drownyd here."
- Some stood in  
 this flood up to  
 the knee; others  
 up to the arms;  
 some up to the  
 lips;  
 others up to the  
 brows.

"þo þat stodyn vp to þe kne  
 Bakbidit here neȝbore fore enuy,  
*And sklaundird hem in erþ ful falseley,*  
 þat loston here goodis hir lyues y-fere ;

76 Backbiters stood  
 up to their knees.

## VII.

¶ *And þo þat stodin vp to þe armes*  
 Weron spouse-brekers *and* leuyd in lechory ;  
*And þo þat stod vp to þe leppis*  
 Be þe *seruys* of god þai set noȝt by,  
*And* did no reuerens to cristis body,  
 In hole cherche were euer changilyng  
*And* sayd here *prayers* vndeououtly,  
*And* let oþer men of mas hereng,  
 Herefore þai haue passyng payn ;  
*And þo þat stod vp to þe elbow*  
 At here neȝtbors harmes þay low,  
 Ȝif þai ferd wel her hertis hit slow,  
*And* of here losse were glad *and* fayne.

80 Spouse-breakers  
 stood up to their  
 arms.

84 Those that de-  
 spised devotion  
 stood up to their  
 lips.

88 Those that stood  
 up to the elbows  
 were those that  
 laughed at their  
 neighbours'  
 harms and losses.

## VIII.

¶ Holé cherche is a house of *prayer*e,  
 þe ȝat of heuen crist doþ hit calle,  
 To worchip þer-in our saueour ;  
 What-euer þou askis þer haue þou schal,  
 Ȝif þat ȝe bene in chareté alle,  
*And serue ȝour god in loue and* dred,  
 No myschif on þem hit schal falle,  
 In al ȝour werkis wel schul ȝe spede.  
 A synful mon here-of haue mynd  
 In holé cherche noȝyng þou say,  
 Bot *with* hole *prayers* to god ȝe pray ;  
 He grawnt ȝoue grace, boþ nyȝt *and* day,  
 Him to *serue* þat al ȝou send."

92 Holy church is a  
 house of prayer.

96 If ye serve God in  
 love and fear,  
 then no mischief  
 shall befall you.

100

104

## IX.

Saw

Then Paul was a  
place of great  
darkness,  
where wretched  
folk did gnaw  
their own tongues.

These were  
counterfeiters of  
money and men  
who gave false  
measure.

¶ *þen poule wept and sayd, in good soþnes,  
“Wo is him to þese payns ben ordent.”*

*þen he se a plase of gret darknes,  
In þe wyche men and wemen wern in gret turment,  
þat etyn here tongis hereto rent.* 109

*þen þe angel sayd to poule treuly—  
“þese were makers of moné with cursid entent,  
With wrong mokerers false mesurs and vsere,* 112

*þer-fore wo þai etin here tung,  
Fore þai foreswere ham wettanly,  
On cristis passion haue no peté  
To part with þe pore þat were nede,* 116  
*Bot holdun hit fast þai geten with wrong.”*

## X.

Then Paul saw a  
place where were  
many damself  
clothed in black  
and surrounded  
with pitch and  
brimstone, &c.

Snakes and adders  
hung about their  
necks.  
Devils tormented  
them.

These women had  
destroyed their  
offspring.

¶ *þen after poule a plase he se,  
In þe wyche were moné damselfe blake,  
I-clopid in blak al cresly,<sup>1</sup>* 120

*In pych and brymston, fuyre and smoke ;  
Aboute here nekis were nedirs and snake,  
Fore wickid angelus repreuyd hem þer,  
With horns of fyre here heedus to schake,* 124  
*And went about hom with hedus bere,  
And saydon to hom with carful cry,*

*“Cnow 3e now þe sun of god,  
þat azayn bozt þe word* 128  
*þat 3e han greuyd in dede and word,  
And slayn his creatours, 3our childer distrye ?”*

## XI.

¶ *þen poule he askid “what ben þese.”  
þe angel onswerd without tareyng,* 132  
*“Hyle<sup>2</sup> god þese con displese,*

<sup>1</sup> ? grisly<sup>2</sup> ? Holé

*And kept hem not chast to here wedyng,*  
*And slowyn here childer in burp-beryng,*  
*And cast ham to houndis in preué place,*  
*In watirs, in pittis, about drounyng,*  
*And neuer wold shryue hem of þat trespase,*  
*Fore dred of sklawnder and penans doying ;*  
*So þe fynd he con hem blynd,*  
*With disperacion hem schame and schend,*  
*Lest here mysdedis þai wold amend*  
*And brozt hem ta euyl endyng."*

136 They were un-  
 chaste, and cast  
 their children to  
 hounds, or  
 drowned them in  
 ponds or pits.

140

## XII.

¶ þen after poule he se moche more  
 Men and wemen on kamels rydyng,  
 Moch froyt þer was here face be-fore,  
 To ete þer-of was here lykyng,  
 þai myzt not hit touche fore no þyng.  
 þen þe angel to poule con say—  
 " þese brekyn þe tymys of here fastyng,  
 And wold not fast þe good fryday  
 þat crist sofyrd dep̄ apon,  
 Bot wastin here goodis in glotone,  
 Fore fleschelé lust of here body ;  
 Fore þai wold not parte with þe pore nedy  
 þai schil haue hongir and þrust were-euer þai gon."

144 Then Paul saw  
 men and women  
 riding on camels ;  
 much fruit was  
 before their face,  
 but they were not  
 allowed to touch  
 it.

148

These people  
 broke their fasts  
 on Good Friday,

152

and wasted their  
 goods in gluttony.

## XIII.

¶ þen after poule in plase he se,  
 A sorouful syzt, a hore hold mon,  
 Be-twene iiij fyndis in turmentré,  
 And gryd and wept with ful gret mon.  
 þen poule he askid þe angel anon  
 What maner of mon hit myzt be.  
 þe angel answerd him ful sone—  
 " A neelygent mon fore-soþ was he  
 And kept not obedyans he was bound to,

Next Paul saw a  
 hoary old man  
 between four  
 fiends, by whom  
 he was grievously  
 tormented.

160

[fol. 18.]

164 This man was not  
 obedient to God,

nor was he chaste  
of body.

Ne leuyd not chast in his bodé,  
In word, in dede, in þoȝt treuly,  
Bot couetis prude, euer out of charyté ;  
To al payne ent domysday he schal go." 168

## XIV.

Paul wept bitterly at these  
sights.

¶ þen poule he weppid with heue chere.  
þe angel sayd, "why wepis þou soo?  
þou sest not þe gret payn þat beþ here,  
come on, with me now þou schal goo." 172

Then the angel  
led him to a  
black pit,  
sealed with  
seven seals,  
in which were  
sorrow and woe,  
stench, and all  
kinds of pains.

he lad him to þe blak pit þo,  
With vij. selys was selid treuly ;  
þer-in was care, sorow, and wo,  
Stenche and al maner turmentry. 176

The angel opened  
the pit, and out  
arose a stench  
strong enough to  
have slain every  
Christian man.

"Stonde vtir poule," quod þe angel þen.  
Anon he vnseled þe pit þore,  
With a stynche gurd out arore,  
Al þe payne hit passid be-fore ;  
Hit wold haue slayn al crystyn men. 180

## XV.

¶ þen poule he askid þe angel in hye,  
"What pepul in þis pit ben don?" 184

In this pit were  
those who did not  
believe in the  
Virgin Mary, nor  
in Christ's incar-  
nation.

"þese beleuid not in vergyn mary,  
Ne treuly in cristis carnacione ;  
þai beþ vncristynd euerechon,  
And neuer resayuyd cristis body ;  
Al-þo in-to þat pet þay gon,  
Of hem schal neuer be memory  
On him in heuen, to-fore godis son,  
Fore hit is godis wil specialy, 188

Here were also  
hereticks and  
apostates.

Of eretekis schal be no memoré,  
Ne false cristin men, renegatis þat dyed curstly,  
Of hom is no redempcion." 192

## XVI.

¶ *þen* after poule forsoþ he se  
 In a wonderful depe plase,  
 As fro þe erþ to heuen on hy,  
 Vche soule on oþer couchid þer was,  
 For fader *and* moder þai had dispisid alas !  
 Orebil wormys devouryd hem þere.  
*þen* poul he herd a dolful noyse,  
 As layte or þonder þat hit were ;  
*þen* was he ware of a soule anon,  
 Be-twen .iiij. fendes borne he was ;  
 He rored *and* cryd alas ! alas !  
 þat euer his bodé con forth passe  
 With-out schrift housil contricion !

196 Then Paul saw a  
 wonderful deep  
 place where souls  
 were crowded  
 together.

200 These had de-  
 spised their  
 parents.

204 Then Paul heard  
 a doleful sound  
 like thunder,  
 and saw a soul  
 borne between  
 four fiends.

208 This soul died  
 impenitent.

## XVII.

¶ þe angelis of god azayns him criud  
 "Alas wrechid soule what hast þou done ?"  
 In erþ þe fyndis þem veresyf,  
 Dispisid godis laus euerechon,  
 To-fore him þai red his dedis anon,  
 And cast him in-to derkens deppist of alle.  
*Quod* angel to poule "be-leue vche mon  
 As ȝe do in erthe so haue ȝe schal ;  
 He haþ fre choys to do good or elle,  
 Fore vche good dede rewardid schal be  
 In erþ, or ellis on euen on hei,  
 And vche cursid dede ponyschid truly  
 In erþ, in purgatore, or ellis in hel,

212 In earth he de-  
 spised God's laws,

and was therefore  
 cast into the deep-  
 est darkness.

216

220 Each good deed  
 shall be rewarded  
 in earth or else  
 in heaven,  
 and every wicked  
 deed shall be  
 punished in  
 earth, purgatory,  
 or in hell.

## XVIII.

¶ For þis schal be here ponyschyng :—  
 Pride, couetyse, wrat[h], enuy,  
 þese be þe brondis in hel brenyng,  
 Lechore, slouþ, *and* glotery ;  
*þen* disparacion of godis mercy,

224

Despair is the

greatest pain  
in hell.  
They who have  
sinned against the  
Holy Ghost shall  
have this pain.

Of al þe payns in hel hit is most,  
Fore þai soȝt no grace ne no mercy, 228  
Bot synnud aȝayns þe hole gost ;  
þat sin schal neuer fore-ȝeuen be,  
To god hit is most hye trespaece  
To mys-trost his mercy *and* grace ; 232  
So ded þat traytur, false indas,  
*And* dampned him-self perpetually."

## XIX.

Then Paul saw  
angels bearing a  
righteous soul  
to heaven,

¶ Anon poule a ioyful syȝt gon se,  
A ryȝtful soule angelis beryng, 236  
þat oure was rauyschid fro his body,  
Vp taward heuen þai con him bryng.

and a thousand  
angels said,

þen poule herd a voyse, a heuenlé þyng,  
A þousand angelis to-geder holy, 240  
þat said *and* song in his heryng :—

"Blessed soul, be  
glad perpetually."

"Be glad blesful soule perpetually,  
Fore þe wil of þi god þou hast edon."

They bore the  
soul up to our  
Lord.

þai beryn hym vp be-fore oure lord. 244  
þen mychael let him to grèt cumford,  
In ioy *and* blis to haue reward,  
Laudes deo þai song vcheon.

## XX.

¶ þen sayd poule, *with* gret gladnes, 248  
"Wele is ham to euen may go !"

þe angel answerd in good soþnes :—

"þai schul haue wele, *without* wo,

No tongue can  
tell the joys of  
heaven.

No tong con tel, ne hert þynke *per-to* ; 252  
þe lest ioy þat is in paradyse

They are a hun-  
dred thousand  
times more than  
those on earth.

In heuen bene a þousand vnderde mo ;  
Was neuer clerke coup ham deuyse 256  
þe lest ioy to mon god haþ ordend,  
Fore þo ioyis schul neuer sese,  
Bot euer enduyre *and* euer encres,



*And euer leue in rest and pese,  
þat ioy and blis schal neuer haue ende."* 260

## XXI.

¶ þen al þe sorouful soulus in hel,  
þat were *per-in* turmentyng,  
þai crydyn "*holé* archangel Mechael  
Haue mercy on vs in payne bydyng ; 264  
*And þou poul, belouyd with heuen kyng,  
To þat lord for vs þou pray !*"  
þen sayd þe angel loken with sore wepyng,  
"*Prays with poule, ȝif þat ȝe may*  
*Gete ȝou grace of one merce."* 268  
When he had sayd þis word anon,  
þay wept *and* cryd out euerechon :—  
"*A þe sun of dauid in heuen trone,*  
*Haue merce on vs fore þi gret peté !*"

The souls in hell  
cried for mercy to  
Michael and Paul.

The angel bade  
them pray along  
with Paul.

[fol. 18 b.]

Then they all  
cried, "Son of  
David, have  
mercy upon us."

## XXII.

¶ A voyse fro heuen answerd azayn—  
"*What good dedes haue ȝe nov done,*  
*ȝe did me to deþ with passion and payn ;*  
*Hwy aske ȝe me now remyssioun ?*  
*I was crucifid on cros fore ȝou al-on,*  
*With spere and nayles y sched my blood,*  
*Of aysel and gal ȝe ȝeuen me drenkyn,* 280  
*When I was on-þerst hongyng on þe rode ;*  
*And I put my-self to þe deþ fore ȝow,*  
*þat ȝe schul euer haue leuyd with me ;*  
*Bot ȝe were proud, couetyse, ful of enuy,* 284  
*And wold do no good dede, bot cursid treuly,*  
*And false lyers in ȝour lyue as wel ȝe cnow."*

A voice from  
heaven asked  
what good deed  
they had ever  
done to deserve  
mercy.

## XXIII.

¶ þen sore wepyng poul knelid adowne,  
*And al þe angelis in heuen þer,* 288

Then Paul and  
all the angels  
wept, and knelt

down and prayed  
to God's Son for  
mercy.

*And prayd hyle to godis oune sun  
Fore þe soulis in hel sum ryst haue þer.  
Oure lorde he made hem þis honswere,—  
“ þroȝ þe besechyng of myn angelis alle,  
And of poule myn apostil, leue and dere,  
þis special grace graunt ham I schal,  
Fro setter-day at non, y say treuly,  
And al þe fest of þe sununday  
In-to þe fyrst our of monday,  
In reuerens þat ȝe here-fore ham pray,  
þai schal haue rou and rest perpetually.”*

292

Then our Lord  
granted Sunday  
as a day of rest  
perpetually, for  
the souls of the  
damned.

296

## XXIV.

Then all the souls  
in hell thanked  
God for his grace  
and goodness.

¶ *þen al þe soulis in hel, with one steuen,  
þai cryd and sayd with gret gladnes—  
“ þe sun of god, on hi in heuen,  
We bles þi grace and þi goodnes,  
þat þou woldist, of þi worþines,  
Graunt vs þi grace and þi mercy  
Oure gret payns fore-to reles,  
Vche sunday perpetually;  
Here-fore we þonk þe lord of al,  
Wo-so-euer wil halou þis sununday  
Wele and worch it ful, as I ȝoue say,  
With angelis of god in heuen fore ay,  
Ioy and blis þer haue ȝe schal.”*

300

304

308

Whosoever will  
hallow the Sun-  
day, shall have  
joy and blisse in  
heaven.

312

## XXV.

¶ *þen poule askid þe angel anon—  
“ Houe moné payns in hel þer be?”  
þe angel answerd him ful sone—  
“ iij. M̃. a .C. and fourté,  
And hunder men þaȝ þer were truly  
Fro þe bekyny[n]g of wor[l]d<sup>1</sup> ay spekyng,  
And vche a .C. tungis had soþly*

The pains of hell  
are innumerable.

316

þai myȝt not tel þe payns in hel duryng,  
 Fore þai may not be noumbyrd treuly."  
 Here-fore dere breder þat beþ present,  
 þat heren þese payns, þese gret turment,  
 Torne ȝou to god *omnipotent*  
 þat we mow reying with him in heuen perpetually.

320

Dear brethren,  
 that hear these  
 pains of hell, turn  
 to God, so that  
 you may reign  
 with Him in  
 heaven.

324

## XXVI.

¶ Alas ! þat euer one cristyn mon  
 Wil not haue þat mater in mynd !  
 What schame, *and* chenchip, confucion  
 þai schal haue þat seruen þe fynd,  
 þat here mysdedis þai nyl not mend,  
 And fore-sake here synnus *and* be sory,  
 And sen al day what chamful end  
 þay haue þat leuyn here vnryȝtwysly ;  
 To god þis is a he trespass,  
 þat neuer on be oþer ware wil be,  
 And wrap here god wetyngly  
 þat dyud fore hom on rod tre,  
 þai bene acursid syrs in thys case ;

328

Alas ! that any  
 Christian man  
 will not bear in  
 mind what  
 shame and con-  
 fusion those shall  
 have that serve  
 the devil.

332

336 Accursed are  
 those that wit-  
 tingly make God  
 angry.

## XXVII.

¶ Fore hel is not ordend fore ryȝtwyse mon,  
 Bot fore hom þat seruen þe fynd,  
 No more þan is a preson of lyme *and* stone  
 Bot fore hom þe lawis offend.  
 Cursid dedis makis men al day eschend,  
 And þeffys<sup>1</sup> on galous on hye to hyng.  
 þer ryȝtwys men þai han good end,  
 þat seruyn here god in here leuyng.  
 y pray ȝou seris trest wele hereto,  
 Fore he þat leuys here ryȝtwysly,  
 On what deþ euer he dey,  
 His soule neuer paynd schal be,  
 Ne neuer after wit of wo :

340

Hell is ordained  
 only for the  
 wicked,  
 just as a prison is  
 for those who  
 break the laws.

344

348 He that dies  
 righteously shall  
 never be tor-  
 mented in soul.

<sup>1</sup> 'þeuys' originally.

## XXVIII.

|   |   |     |
|---|---|-----|
|   | ¶ Meruel þe not of þis making,                        | 352 |
|   | y me excuse, hit is not I.                            |     |
|   | þus <sup>1</sup> mychael lad powle, be goddis bedyng, |     |
|   | To se in hel þe turmentré,                            |     |
|   | Fore I couþ neuer bot hy folý ;                       | 356 |
| God hath chastised me for my mode of living, and I thank Him for his gracious visitation. | God haþ me chastyst fore my leuyng,                   |     |
|   | I þonke my god my grace treuly                        |     |
|   | Of his gracious vesityng ;                            |     |
| Repent, sir,  | Be-ware <i>serys</i> , I 3ou pray,                    | 360 |
| betimes.  | <i>And 3our mysdedis loke 3e amend</i>                |     |
| All is good that hath good ending.  | Be-tyme, lest 3e be chamyd <i>and</i> schend,         |     |
|   | fore al is good þat haþ good end                      |     |
| Thus counsels you the Blind Awdelay.  | þus counsels 3oue þe blynd audlay. <sup>2</sup>       | 364 |

<sup>1</sup> MS. þ.<sup>2</sup> John Audelay, the blind poet.

## APPENDIX III.

[*Vernon MS. fol. 230, col. 3.*]*Archiv 88, 373.*

**Þe visions of seynt poul wan he was rapt in-to  
paradys.**

[The full stop is that of the MS.]

**L**ustneþ lordynges. leof and dere,  
 3e þat wolen. of þe sonday here :  
 þe sonday. a day hit is  
 þat Angels and Archaungels. Ioyen I.-wis  
 More. in þat ilken day,  
 þen eny oþur., as I. þe say. ;  
 þen wol we. her-ate dwelle :  
 Ho preyed furst rest. for soules in helle,  
 þat is to witen., I. sei þe so,  
 Poul. and Michel., Archaungel bo ;  
 For god of his grete miht  
 þe peynes of helle. put in heore siht :  
 Poul sayh. bi-foren helle-ȝates  
 Brennynge tres. þat neuer slakes ;  
 Mony on. for heore synne þonne  
 Weore I.-pyned. and honged þer-onne,  
 Summe bi hondes. and bi feet þere,  
 Summe bi þe her., summe bi þe ere,  
 Summe bi þe Armes., þat weore longe,  
 And summe þer hengen. bi þe tonge :  
 ¶ He sauȝ a caudren. brennynge at enes,  
 Of diuerse colours. wiþ seue lemes ;  
 And þer weore þei. for heore synne  
 Diuersliche. I.-pynet þer-Inne ;

On Sunday angels  
 rejoice more than  
 on any other day.

4

8

Paul and Michael  
 first obtained a  
 day of rest for  
 souls in hell.

12

Burning trees  
 before hell-gates.

16

20

A cauldron burn-  
 ing at once with  
 various-coloured  
 flames.

24

|   |  |    |
|---|--|----|
| Seven pains were therein :  | And seuen peynes. weoren þer also ,<br>þat duden þe soules. muche wo :   |    |
| 1. Snow, 2. ice,  | ¶ þe furste of snouȝ. , þe secunde of ys ,   |    |
| 3. fire,  | þe þridde fuir. , in alle wys ,  | 28 |
| 4. blood,   | þe Feorþe blod. , as I. þe say ,   |    |
| 5. adders,  | þe Fyfte Eddres. of foul aray ,  |    |
| 6. flames,  | þe sixte leyt. , as mon may þink ,   |    |
| 7. stink.   | ¶ þe seueþe payne. hit was of styngk.  | 32 |
|   | At þat penaunces. were þei in cast ,<br>Synful soules. , and al for-prast ,<br>þe wȝuche þat nolden. , in no chaunce ,<br>For heore synnes. do no penaunce ;     | 36 |
| The souls that were tormented in those furnaces wept and yelled and desired to die.                 | þer weore þei turmented. in þo ledes ,<br>And vche reseyuēd. aftur his deedes :<br>Summe wepten. and ȝelled þenne ,<br>Summe gouleden. , and summe dude brenne ; | 40 |
| [fol. 230 b.]   | þei disireden. euere to dye ,<br>Hit miht not beo. wiþ-uten lyȝe ,<br>For þe soule. , wher so hit go ,<br>Schal neuer dyen. for weole nor wo ;                   | 44 |
| But the soul shall never die wherever it goes.  | þerfore. sore hit is to drede<br>þe places of helle. for wikked-hede :   |    |
| A burning wheel there is in hell.   | In þe wȝuche. þer is a whel brennyngē ,<br>Wiþ muche serwe. euer-lastyngē ;  | 48 |
| Under the wheel there is a thousand horrible pains.   | Vndur þat wheol. is þer þore<br>A þousund grisly peynes. sore ,<br>Fyue tymes. vche day to telle<br>Beo turmented. wiþ þe Angel of helle ;                       | 52 |
|   | In vche of þo. fyue tymes<br>Ben A þousund soules. turmented in pyneȝ :  |    |
| Then there is a wonderful and horrible flood.   | ¶ Aftur þat. sayh he þer he stod<br>A wondur orible. grisly flod ;   | 56 |
| In that flood were devils' beasts, as toads, adders, and snakes, that did gnaw and fret the wicked. | And in þat flod. say he pere<br>Mony deueles bestes. were ;<br>As Fissches þei were. in þat flod þo ,<br>Todus. , Neddres. , Snakes. mony mo ;                   | 60 |

And þe synful soules. in hiȝ  
Eten. and gnowen. wiȝ-outen merci ;

Of hem tok I. no more kep ,  
But as a Lyun. doȝ of a schep

64

Ouer þat watur. he sayȝ ligge  
A wondur long. and an heiȝ brugge ,  
And ouer þat brugge. saf goon þen  
þe soules. of good rihtful men ,

68

Wiȝ-outen harm. of word. or dede ,  
And also wiȝ-outen. eny drede :

¶ þe soules of synnes. , as I. þe telle ,  
Fallen doun þer. in pyne to dwelle ,  
þer to take. and resseyue so

72

The wicked fall  
therefrom into  
hell.

As þei on eorþe. deserueden to ;  
Be-war of þis. , i sei beo-fore ,  
As God seide in þe gospel þore :

76

*Ligate per fasciculos ad comburendum*

Byndeȝ hem in knucchenus. forþi

“To brenne lyk. to licchi ,

Spouse-brekers. wiȝ lechours ,  
Rauisschers. wiȝ rauisschours ,  
Wikked. wiȝ wikked. also ,

80

Spouse-breakers  
and ravishers  
shall go by that  
bridge, and shall  
be cast into hell.

For so schul þei. to-gedere go ;  
For eueri creature. go schal

Bi þat brugge. , sum or Al ,

84

And lasse or more. schal he be deruet  
Er-aftur he haȝ. heer deseruet : ”

**Þ**Er sauh. þe goode mon. poule

In þat pyne. moni diuerse soule ,  
Summe to þe kne. and summe to þe hipes ,  
Summe to þe navel. , summe to þe lippes ;  
And summe he sauȝ bi-suyled. as souwes

88

In this flood some  
were standing up  
to the knee,  
others up to the  
hips, &c.

In þat pyne. vp to þe brouwes ,

92

And þei weore *turmented*. euerlastyngly ;  
þei wept and gouled. and weore sory :

¶ And Poules herte. was so sor ,

Paul wept bitterly on account of the torments he saw in hell.

þat for serwe. he wepte þor, 96  
And of þat Angel. asked he  
Whi summe were þer. in-to þe kne :  
¶ þe Angel seide. to him þen

Michael explains to Paul the meaning of the various pains that St Paul saw in the flood of hell.

“Heo ben Bachbyters. of men, 100  
þat in word. and dede. , as I. þe say,  
Hyndren heor euen cristen. þat þei may ;

¶ And þo. þat to þe nauel. þou se 104  
Spous-breakers. and lechours þei be ,  
þat aftur heore dedes. to vndurstonde  
Nolde no penaunce. take on honde ;

¶ And þo þat weren. up to þe lippes blake, 108  
Stryf. and Iangelyng. in chirche dude make ,  
Vche to oþur. Iangled. wiþ scorn ,  
To heere godus wordus. þei han for-born ;

¶ And þo þat weren. vp to þe briȝes 112  
In þat flod. , Aboue þe eizes ,  
pulke weore glade. of þe mischeef  
Of heore neihȝebors. and of heore greef :”

And Poul wepte. and seide þo ,  
“Muche wo is hem. I-come to, 116  
þat so mony peynes. grymme  
Ben ordeynt to. for heore synne :”

St Paul saw another dark place full of men and women gnawing their own tongues.

¶ Seynt Poul þo. bi-tornd his face 120  
And sayȝ a-noþur. derk place ,  
Moni Men. and wymmen. þer Amongus ,  
þat for-freten. heore owne tonges :

¶ And Poul asked. of him þere 124  
What maner men. þat þei were :  
þe Aungel seide. to him ful sleih ,

They were usurers and unmerciful while here on earth.

“þei vsuden. Ocur. and vsuri, 128  
Merciable. weore þei nouht ,  
þerfore hit schal. be dere a-bouht :”

And Poul sauȝ þenne. a-noþur plas ,  
þat moni peynes. þer-in was ;  
þer he sauh. dispitous þing ,

St Paul saw



- As Blake Maydens. in Blac cloþing ;  
 And þei sodun. euerichon  
 In wellyng pich. and Brumston ;  
 Brennyng dragounz. and serpentis i-fere  
 Hongynge. Aboute heor nekkes were ,  
 Gnawynge hem. to don hem schom ,  
 To tere þe Flesch. from þe bon ;  
 And þer weore. foure Angels to telle  
 þat weoren of þe hous. of helle ,  
 Brennynge hornes. hedde þei on hed ,  
 þei hem *turmented*. and dude hem qued ;  
 Faste þei wente. þis pepul a-boute ,  
 Wiþ moni *turmentes*. grete and stoute ,  
 Seying to hem. as was heore wone ,  
 “ Knoweþ 3e þei seide. godus sone ,  
 þe wʒuche. þat mucche on 3ou þouʒt  
 Al þe world. whon he bouʒt ;  
 For 3e nolde neuer. knowen him  
 3e schullen han here. þeos pynes grym : ”  
**P**oul þis asked. feire and wel ,  
 And þenne onswered. þe Aungel :  
 “ þeos serued not chastité ,  
 Til tyme of heor weddyng. schulde be ,  
 But lyuede. in heore lecherie ,  
 And heled heore children. and dude hem dye ,  
 And ʒaf hem to swyn. or to houndes ,  
 Or drouned hem. In flodes groundes ,  
 And schewed hem. to þe worldus degré  
 As þei maydens. hedden i-be ;  
 And in þis lyf. þei lyueden ʒore ,  
 And duden no penaunce. þerfore ” :  
 ¶ Aftur þis. he sayʒ at ene  
 Men. and. wʒymmen. , moni and lene ;  
 Lene þei weore. , wiþ-uten flesche ,  
 þei soffred harde. and noþing nessche ;  
 Mucche lay bi-foren hem. of Mete
- 132 black maidens in  
boiling pitch  
and brimstone,  
and dragons and  
serpents were  
tearing their flesh  
from the bones.
- 136
- 140 Four angels of  
hell with burning  
horns on their  
heads tormented  
the maidens ;
- 144
- 148
- 152  
for they had  
lived unchaste ;
- 156 they gave their  
young children  
to swine or to  
hounds,
- 160  
and appeared be-  
fore the world  
as maidens.
- 164  
Then Paul saw  
lean men and  
women, with  
much meat lying  
before them,  
which they were  
not able to eat.

- bat hem deynet not. of to ete , 168  
 These were the  
 soules of those  
 who had broken  
 their fasting days.  
 þo weore þeose. þat weore not trewe ,  
 And nolde not faste. þat hem was duwe ,  
 And hedden. of mony metes de-deyn ,  
 But hit weore likerous. be certeyn : 172  
 Then Paul saw an  
 old man tor-  
 mented by four  
 devils,  
**P**En sauþ poul. a serwþful siht ,  
 And he loked þer. forþ riht ;  
 An Old mon sat. þer wepynge  
 Bi-twene four deueles. foul zellynge ; 176  
 ¶ Poul asked. what he was ,  
 And þe Angel, seide in plas ,  
 "He was Neclygent. aþeynes for bod ,  
 And kepte not. þe lawes of God ; 180  
 because he had  
 been unchaste,  
 and proud, and  
 covetous in this  
 life,  
 He nas not chast. of bodi i-souþt ,  
 Ne of herte. , ne of his þouþt ,  
 But euer he was. Couetous ,  
 Proud of herte. and contrarius , 184  
 þer-of nolde he. him not schriue ,  
 Ne do no penaunce. bi his lyue ,  
 þefore he schal. beo pyned ay ,  
 Wip-uten Noubre. til domus-day : 188  
 and died im-  
 penitent.  
**P**Oul wepte. and bi-gon to goule :  
 þe Angel seide. "whi wepustou, poule?  
 3it sayþ þou not. , as I. þe telle ,  
 þe strengest peyne. þat is in helle : " 192  
 ¶ þe Angel him schewed. , wip-uten weoles ,  
 A put a-seled. wip seuen seles ,  
 He bad him stonde bac. for þat þing ,  
 þat he mihte sustene. þat stynek ; 196  
 He opened þe Mouþ. of þat put ,  
 Hit stonk foule. w3on hit was vn-schut ;  
 þe stynek þat com out. of þat plas  
 Passed al þe peynes. and stinkes þer was : 200  
 ¶ þen seide þat Angel. to bi ginne  
 "Hose comeþ. þis put wip-Inne ,  
 Bi-fore God. and vre ladi ,  
 Schal neuer of him. beo no merci : 204  
 No mercy could  
 they ever have  
 who were in this  
 pit ;

**P**oul askede. "w3uche ben þo  
þat schulen. to þis payne go:"

He seide. , "hose leueþ not. in wone  
þat Iesu crist. , Godus sone ,  
Tok Flesch and blod. of þe virgine Marie ,  
And seþþe was boren. of hire bodye ;  
And also þulke. , I. telle hit þe ,  
þat neuer wollen. Baptized be ;  
þulke þat resseyue not. worþily  
þe flesch. and blod. of godus bodi : "

for they were  
unbelievers,  
208

**P**oul loket. forþur þen  
And sau3 ful mony men. and wymmen ,  
Wormes. and serpentis. on hem seeten ,  
Euer as houndes. þei on hem. freeten ;  
So mony soules. þer weore in hold ,  
Vchon on oþur. as schep in fold ;  
Hit was also dep. to nemene  
As from þe eorþe. vp to heuene ;  
Of heore serwyng. was muche wondur ,  
þei made a noyse. as hit weore þundur :

212  
and would not  
receive worthily  
the flesh and  
blood of God's  
body.  
Then Paul saw  
serpents feeding  
like hounds on  
many souls that  
were huddled  
together like  
sheep in fold.  
216

**A**nd þenne poul loket. toward heuene  
And out of eorþe. he herde a steuene ,  
A synful soule. he sau3 comynge  
Among seue deueles. waymentynge ,  
þe w3uche. þat same day forþi

220

224

Then Paul saw a  
sinful soul  
brought to hell  
by seven devils.

Was i-taken. from þe bodi ;  
¶ þe Angels of God. , þat ben vr frendes ,  
Crijeden faste. , to þe Fendes ,  
Seyzinge allas. ! makynge. heore mon ,  
" What hap. þat wrecched soule i-don ? "

228

232

The angels asked  
what he had done.

¶ þe Fendes seiden. verreyment—  
" He hap se3en. his Iuggement ,  
He hap ben muche. mys-Auyset ,  
Godus Comaundemens. he hap dispyset ;  
In eorþe he lyued. in foly ,  
And þer dude he. no remedi ;  
His owne chatre. hap he rad

236

The devile said,  
" He hath despised  
God's command-  
ments."

240

nota.

- þat his synnes were. Inne I.-sprad ;  
 And so forþ. we telle þe  
 His owne-self. þen Iugged he : " 244
- Then the devils  
 cast him into  
 the darkest abyss  
 of hell.* ¶ þen tok þe deueles. and him bounde,  
 And caste hym in-to þe derkeste grounde ,  
 þer as was wepyng. wiþ muche vnseeþe ,  
 Goulyng , And grisbatyng. of teþe ; 248
- As man doth in  
 his life-time, so  
 shall he receive  
 after his death.]* Þ En seide to Poul. þat Aungel  
 " Leeue þou hit. and knowe hit wel ,  
 So as Mon dop. in his lyuing , *nota.*  
 So schal he haue. aftur his endyng ; 252
- Then Paul saw  
 the soul of a  
 righteous man  
 borne to heaven  
 by angels.* ¶ Aungeles of heuene. saiz he come þon ,  
 Brouhten þe soule. of a Rihtful mon ; 256  
 þer was Ioye . wiþ loud steuene ,  
 For so þei beeren hit. in-to heuene ;
- A thousand  
 angels welcomed  
 the righteous  
 soul.* Of A þousund Angels. he herde þe vois ,  
 Ioyng. wiþ a semely noys , 260  
 And seiden , " murie soule. blesset þou be ,  
 For euer murþe. schal beo wiþ þe ;  
 þou art i-blesset. of God in trone ,  
 þe wille of Ihesu. hastou done : " 264
- Þ En seide þe Angels. in heore seiþing ,  
 " Ledep hym vp. to-foren vr kyng ,  
 Glad may he ben. of alle clerkes  
 þat schal him-self. rede his goode werkes ; 268
- They said  
 Michael shall  
 lead him to  
 Paradise.* Aftur schal Mihel. lede him in hiþ  
 To paradys. to oþur holi : "  
 A Ioyful noyse. was hem Among  
 Of Angels. and Archangeles. wiþ song : 272
- The souls of the  
 damned saw all  
 this sight, and  
 cried for mercy to  
 Paul and Michael.* Þ Ei þat in peyne. bi-neþen lyþe  
 Herden þis. and al hit seiþe ;  
 þei ȝelleden. wiþ lodly cry ,  
 " Poul. Michael. on vs ha merci , 276  
 Prei for vs. wiþ good a-cord

To vre god. and to vre lord :

**P**En seide þe Angel. to hem þo—  
 “Weputh! Poul and I. wolen also,  
 þat Almihti God., þat may best,  
 Send 3ow. sum refuit. and sum rest;”

¶ And þeose. þat in peyne weore  
 Cried on God. wiþ delful beere;  
 Michael. and poul. also

And A legioun of Aungelus. mo:  
 þe soun of hem. was herd ful euene.

Vp in-to þe Feorþe. heuene,  
 Seizinge. “haue merci on hem  
 þe sone of God. and eke of mon:”

**A**nd þenne þei. þe heuene seiþ  
 Open A-non., ful sodeynly,  
 þe sone of god. com doun þo,  
 And herde hem preye. mony on mo,  
 þe preieden alle. ful tenderli,  
 “Haue merci on vs. sone of Dau!”

**P**e vois þenne. of vre heuene kyng  
 Ouer al þe peynes. was herd seying;

“What good ha 3e don. herbifore,  
 þat 3e aske. reste. so sore;  
 I. was don on cros. for 3ou with dere,  
 And smiten wiþ. a ful scharp spere,  
 I. nayled also. wiþ nayles pree,  
 Eysel. and Galle. to drynke bode me;  
 I. 3af my-self. for 3ou to be,  
 For 3e schulde ouer-come. wiþ me;

Bote 3e weore þeues. coueytous,  
 Proude., and. wroþe., and enuyous;  
 Good. neuer nolde 3e. do non,  
 Ne to schrift. nolde 3e not gon,  
 Ne do penauce. for no þing,  
 Wiþ Almus-dedes. ne wiþ fastyng;  
 But 3e weore ly3ers. al 3or lyf,

280 Michael bade  
 them weep along  
 [fol. 231.]  
 with Paul and  
 himself, and cry  
 for mercy.

284

288 A legion of  
 angels too joined  
 in the cry,  
 and it came into  
 the fourth  
 heaven.

292 Then the heaven  
 opened, and the  
 Son of God came  
 down.

296

300 He asked them  
 what good they  
 had done to de-  
 serve mercy.

304

308 They had been  
 wicked all their  
 life-time,

312

and had ever  
lived in sorrow  
and strife.  
Then Paul and  
Michael and a  
million of angels  
entreated for the  
wretched souls.

And liueden euere. in serwe and strif:”

**Þ**En kneled Poul. and Mihel  
And a Milioun Angeles. wel, 316

Bi-fore þe sone of God. to pray  
þei moste ha reste. þe sonenday ;  
þo weore þeos. , as I. ow telle ,  
þat weoren. in þe pynen of helle : 320

**Þ**en seide vr lord. to hem in spelle,  
For Poul. and also Michaelle ,  
And myn opure Angels. on hiȝe ,  
þat ben in heuene. so goode and triȝe , 324

And also. of my grete goodnesse ,  
Hem to ese. of heore distresse ,  
þis reste. I. ȝiue ȝow. ful soon  
From þe seter-day. at Non , 328

Til þe secunde hour. beo cum  
On þe Monenday. , al and sum :  
**A**non þe soules. hedden þer rest ,  
He ȝaf hit hem. þat mihte best : 332

The souls thanked  
God for His great  
mercy.

þe soules crized. euerichon ,  
“ Blesset beo þou lord. sone of mon ,  
Lord. and God. of David kuynde ,  
þis rest bi þe. haue we in Muynde : ” 336

¶ þerfore. whos halweþ wel. þe sonenday ,  
He schal ha part. of þe reste ay ,  
þat þe Angeles. in heuene  
Han þere. wiþ mylde steuene : 340

Beware of hell-  
pains.

¶ Beo war. of þe serwe. and drede  
And of þe peynes. þat we her rede ,  
And torne we. in alle wyse  
Vr lord to serue. þat hiȝe Iustise ; 344

Serve God, and  
so be able to come  
and dwell with  
Him for ever.

Bi wȝuche seruyse. we may come  
To vre lord god. and wiþ him wone :

[In the MS. there follows :—**þe Pope trental.**]

## GLOSSARIAL INDEX.

- A*, *prep.* on, 39/65; in, 50/448, 77/145.  
*Abak*, *adv.* back, 38/38, 43/212.  
*Abboddie*, *s.* abbacy, 145/24.  
*Abbodryche*, *s.* abbacy, 145/22.  
*Abidde*, *v. inf.* to pray, 41/150/156.  
*Abyde*, *v. inf.* wait, wait for, 49/423, 94/41; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* abit, 22/710; *pl.* abyde, 46/317.  
*Ablende*, *v. inf.* to blind, 52/550.  
*Abohte*, *Abouhte*. See *Abuggen*.  
*Abuggen*, *v. inf.* buy, pay for, 174/120; *ind. pres. pl.* abuggeþ, 65/195; *ind. pret.* 3 *s.* abohte, 66/52, abouhte, 64/184, 167/52; *p.p.* abouht, 226/128.  
*Abute*, *adv.* about, 39/82, 40/91.  
*Abuten*, *prep.* about, 1/20, *adv.* 9/263.  
*Abuue*, *adv.* above, 38/46, 49/414.  
*Abuuen*, *adv.* above, 2/30.  
*Ac*, *conj.* but, 37/4, 37/16.  
*Ache*, *s.* pain, 65/197.  
*Acord*, *s.* accord, 230/277.  
*Acoryen*, *v. inf.* pay the penalty for, 75/96.  
*Acquerne*, *s.* "dog-leather well dressed," *Fr. ocaigne* (H.C.) 70/353.  
*Acreis*, *s. pl.* acres, 111/122.
- Acte*, *s.* property, 113/184.  
*Acumbri*, *v. inf.* trouble, 33.  
*Acursed*, *p.p.* cursed, 83/332.  
*Adam*, 21/674, 38/23.  
*Adylegade*, *v. ind. pret.* 3 *s.* destroyed, did away with, 145/16.  
*Adowne*, *adv.* down, 219/287.  
*Adrede*, *v. inf.* fear, 37/17, 58/6; *p.p.* adred, afraid, 59/44.  
*Adrynke*, *v. inf.* drown, 77/152.  
*Adun*, *adv.* down, 42/162, 50/454.  
*Afered*, *p.p.* frightened, 178/161; aferd, 41/153, 179/161.  
*After*, *prep.* 1/8, according to, 47/339.  
*After pat*, *conj.* according as, 70/354.  
*Again*, *prep.* against, 111/148.  
*Agan*, *adv.* again, 18/581; *prep.* against, 8/250, 127/414.  
*Aglyden*, *p.p.* glided away, 93/14.  
*Agon*, *v. inf.* go away, pass away, leave, 170/42; *inf.* ago, escape, 156/12; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* agop, 116/220; *subj. pres. sg.* a-go, 116/219; *p.p.* agon, 95/85, ago, 41/132.  
*Agrise*, 176/140, *Agryse*, 142/37, 177/140, *v. inf.* cause dread, horrify.  
*Agte*, *s.* property, 19/602.

- Aguepe, *adv.* in youth, 111/149.  
 Agulte, *v.* sin, do wrong; *ind. pres. pl.* agulteþ, 69/309; *p.p.* agult, 75/108.  
 Agyn, *v. imp.* 2 *s.* begin, 33.  
 Ah, *conj.* but, 72/19, 168/17.  
 Ahte, *s.* property, 176/126.  
 Ahte, *v. subj. pret. sg.* possessed, 110/121.  
 Ai, 3/62, 7/194, Ay, 199/75, *adv.* always.  
 Ayhte, *s.* possessions, property, 69/313.  
 Ayrs, *s. pl.* heirs, 211/39.  
 Aysel, *s.* vinegar, 219/280.  
 Ake, *v. inf.* ache, 95/58.  
 Akelp, *v. ind. pres. 3 s.* cools, 30.  
 Al, *adj.* all, every; *a. s. m.* alne, 148/54; *g. s. n.* alle, 56/666; *n. pl.* alle, 46/313; *g. pl.* alre, 39/86, 48/384; *d. pl.* alle, 38/46; *a. pl.* alle, 37/19.  
 Al, *adv.* all, quite, 3/58.  
 Ale, *s.* 188/42.  
 Alegge, *v. inf.* lay, put down, 52/525.  
 Alesen, *v. inf.* liberate, 140/26; *ind. pret. 3 s.* alesede, 186/21.  
 Alfred, 107/61, Alfret, 115/195, Alfneurd, 132/496, Alfred.  
 Alye, ?inflame = burning, 211/30.  
 Alles, *adv.* in all, 145/8.  
 Almes, *s.* alms, 59/29; *d. s.* almesse, 69/333; *a. s.* almesse, 76/124.  
 Almichti, 26, Almyhti, 38/46, *adj.* almighty; *g. s. m.* almyhtyes, 69/331.  
 Almus-dedes, *s. pl.* almsdeeds, 231/312.  
 Alne. *See* Al.  
 Aloped = alaped, makes loath, 137/671.  
 Alowe, on a hill, 197/27.
- Alre. *See* Al.  
 Al-so, 28, Al-se, 32, Als, *conj.* as; also = so, 79/214; als so = as if, 24/762.  
 Al swo, so, 195/4, 196/27.  
 Al swo—swo, when—then, 26, 27.  
 Alvered, 131/477, Alured, 124/360, Alfred.  
 Alurich, Ælfric, 102/7.  
 Alute, *v. inf.* bow, stoop, 48/382; *ind. pret. 3 s.* alute, 198/22.  
 Al-wat, *conj.* until, 27.  
 Alyhte, *v. pret. 3 s.* descended, 37/8.  
 Alyue, in life, alive, 95/77.  
 Amatiste, *s.* amethyst, 98/171.  
 Amed, *adj.* mad, 48/401, 94/56.  
 Amendi, *v. inf.* amend, 162/46; *ind. pres. 3 s.* amendit, 138/709.  
 Amenges, *prep.* among, 34.  
 Amerre, *v. inf.* mar, ruin, 74/75; *p.p.* amerd, 89/8.  
 Amonestement, *s.* admonition, 28.  
 Amonges, *prep.* amongst, 24/777.  
 Amuntet, *v. ind. pres. 3 s.* rises, 28.  
 Amur, *s.* love, 98/182.  
 Amydde, *prep.* amid, 54/598.  
 An, *art.* a, 1/15, 5/120.  
 An, *prep.* on, 27; in, 49/426, 72/12.  
 And, *conj.* 2/41.  
 And = an, *conj.* if, 1/2, 36.  
 A-newa, *adv.* anew, afresh, 44/246.  
 Anfop = and food, 142/51.  
 Angles, *s. pl.* angels, 31.  
 Anheet, *p.p.* heated, 30.  
 Anhet, *v.* 3 *s.* heats, 30.  
 Anhon, *v. inf.* hang, 140/36; *imp.* 2 *s.* anhong, 49/426; *p.p.* anhonge, 50/459, anhon, 148/35, 154/256.



- Anicht, *adv.* at night, 131/467.  
 Anon, *adv.* 15/479.  
 Answerden, *v. pret. pl.* answered, 26.  
 Anud, *p.p.* troubled, 26.  
 Anvie, *s.* envy, 33.  
 Anvnder, *prep.* beneath, 44/264.  
 An-vnderfon, *v. inf.* receive, 101/8.  
 An-vppe, *prep.* upon, 85/42.  
 Anuren, *v. inf.* honour, 155/278; *inf.* an-uri, 26; *imp. 2 pl.* an-urect, 27; *ind. pret. pl.* an-urede, 27; *p.p.* anured, 28.  
 Aparailed, *p.p.* prepared, 26.  
 Aperede, *v. pret. 3 s.* appeared, 27; *apierede*, 26.  
 Apon, *prep.* upon, 215/152.  
 Apostles, *s. pl.* 41/126.  
 Appel, *s.* apple, 120/306.  
 Aquelle, *v. inf.* kill, 80/242; *p.p.* aquold, 41/133, 95/76, *pl.* aquolde, 76/128.  
 Aquenche, *v. inf.* quench, 79/218; *imp. 2 s.* aquench, 156/10.  
 Aray, *s.* array, 224/30.  
 Archangel, *s.* archangel, 223/10.  
 Architriclin, *s.* master of the feast, 29. This word is frequently mistaken for a proper name in our early books.  
 Ard = art, 178/180.  
 Areare, *v. inf.* raise, rear, 44/246; *ind. pret. pl.* arerde, 64/172; *p.p.* *pl.* arerde, 54/604.  
 Areche, *v. inf.* reach, 130/454.  
 Aredde, *v. inf.* rid, deliver, 81/286.  
 Arede, *v. inf.* guess, decide, 45/274; *imp. 2 s.* arede, take as counsel, 122/320.  
 Arege, *s.* a bad person, 117/228.  
 Aren, 16/510, 17/531, Arn, 3/57, 11/351, Arren, 135/582, *v. pl.* are.
- Arerde. *See* Areare.  
 Aresunede, *v. pret.* spoke to, 35.  
 Arewe, *s.* a bad person, 116/228.  
 Arhhede, *s.* sloth, cowardice, 74/80.  
 Arixlye, *v. inf.* rule, govern, 130/453.  
 Arymathia, Arimathea, 51/504.  
 Aryse, *v. inf.* arise, 39/54; *ind. pret. 3 s.* aros, 52/537, aroos, 32; *pl.* arysen, 46/321; *imp. 2 pl.* ariseþ, 42/173; *p.p.* aryse, 41/135, 54/592.  
 Aryste, *s.* resurrection, 54/596.  
 Arm, *adj.* poor; *pl.* -e, 65/223; *def.* -e, 135/594.  
 Armþe, *s.* poverty, misery, 133/523.  
 Arn. *See* Aren.  
 Aroos, Aros. *See* Aryse.  
 Arore, *adv.* † in a rush, 216/180.  
 Arren. *See* Aren.  
 Arst, *adv.* first, 198/28.  
 Art, *v.* 30.  
 Artu = art þu, art thou, 38/38.  
 As (after þer), 76/138.  
 Ase, *conj.* as, 168/15.  
 Aseled, *p.p.* sealed, 228/194.  
 Askapeþ, *v. 3 s.* escapes, 41/124.  
 Askede, *v. ind. pret.* 26.  
 Asoiled, *p.p.* absolved, 32.  
 Aspille, *v. inf.* ruin, 140/56.  
 Asse, *s.* ass, 39/68.  
 Astrengþed, *p.p.* strengthened, 32.  
 Astunde, for a time, 197/14.  
 Asturte, *v. pret. pl.* started, 42/195.  
 Astyen, *v. inf.* ascend, 55/624; *inf.* astye, 55/633; *ind. pres. 1 s.* astye, 54/585; *pret. 1 s.* astey, 53/583; 3 s. asteyh, 55/643, astey, 55/642.

- Aswynde, *v. inf.* vanish, pass away, 94/39; *p.p.* aswunde, 108/117.
- Asyen, *v. inf.* sink, become faint (of heart)?, 90/10(2).
- Atblenche, *v. inf.* escape, 79/220, 168/8, 170/47.
- Atbrested, *v. 3 s.* breaks away, escapes, 21/672; *p.p.* atbrosten, 18/582.
- Atbroke, *p.p.* broken away, escaped, 44/235.
- Atbrosten. *See* Atbrested.
- Atdareþ, *v. 3 s.* escapes notice by lying still, 153/224. *See* Dareþ.
- Ate = at the, 34.
- Atelich, *adj.* horrible, 183/230; *pl. -e*, 166/60.
- Ateliche, 180/200, Atelyche, 181/200, *adv.* horribly.
- Aten = at þen = at the, 190/91.
- Atende, *v. subj. pres. sg.* kindle, set on fire, 52/548; *p.p. pl.* atende, 56/661.
- Atfalle, *p.p.* fallen away, 186/24.
- Atgo, *v. inf.* quit, leave, 160/26; *ind. pres. 3 s.* atgeþ, 101/6(2); *subj. pres. sg.* atgo, 117/220.
- Apeling, 184/11, Apelyng, 185/11, *s.* nobleman.
- At-henden, *adv.* behind, 123/349.
- At-holden, *v. inf.* keep back, retain, withhold, 52/535; *inf.* at-holde, 69/308, 76/131; *ind. pres. pl.* atholdeþ, 47/364, *p.p.* atholde, 71/390.
- Aþre = on three, 38/33.
- Aþrep, in flocks, in crowds, 149/85.
- Aþrowe, for a time, 198/30.
- Athte = Ahte, *s.* property, 119/250.
- Atom, *adv.* at home, 190/67.
- Atsok, *v. ind. pret. 3 s.* denied, 45/293.
- At-stonde, *v. inf.* withstand, 144/116.
- Atte = at þe, 6/167.
- Atten = at þen, at the, 188/47.
- Attende. *See* Atende.
- Atter, *s.* poison, venom, 5/145, 11/329. *A.S. attor.*
- Attri, *adj.* poisonous; *def. -e*, 10/317.
- Attryne, *v. inf.* touch, 53/582, 80/258; *ind. pres. 3 s.* attryneþ, 73/47. *A.S. æthrinan.*
- Audlay, 222/364.
- Aue, *s. Ave*, 194/23.
- Auenture, *s.* hap, fortune, 29.
- Aueole, Aveole, 54/619, = on many.
- Aueriche, *adj.* every, 28.
- Auhte, *v.* ought, 58/2; *pl.* 74/61.
- Aungel, *s.* angel, 226/125; *pl.* aungelus, 231/286.
- Avoreward, *adv.* forward, 42/189.
- Avynde, *v. inf.* find, 126/409.
- Awai, Away, *int.* alas, 73/42, 182/223.
- Away, *adv.* 52/522; awei, 70/344, awy, 151/160.
- Awakie, *v. inf.* awake, 192/13; *ind. pret. pl.* awakede, 32.
- Awarieþ, *v. ind. pres. pl.* = awurieþ, worry, 149/85.
- Awaryed, *p.p.* cursed, 45/293.
- Awei. *See* Away.
- Awelde, *v. inf.* govern, control, 128/442.
- Awondrede, *impers. v. pret. a.* hem = they wondered, 32.
- Awouters, *s. pl.* adulterers, 212/62.
- Awreke, *v. inf.* avenge, 44/254; *imp. 2 s.* awrec, 162/43.
- Awy. *See* Away.
- Axe, *s. d. pl.* ashes, 78/203.

- Axi, *v. inf.* ask, 53/567; *ind. pret.* 3 *s.* axede, 48/404, *pl.* 39/77; *subj. pres. sg.* axi, 46/309; *imp.* 2 *s.* axe, 44/262.
- Ayen, *prep.* towards, 33; *adv.* back, 27.
- Ayeyn, *adv.* again; *prep.* against, 60/75.
- Azayn-bozt, *v. ind. pret.* 3 *s.* re-deemed, 214/128.
- Azayns, 217/209, Azeynes, 228/179, *prep.* against.
- Ajitte, *v.* 1 *s.* understand, 193/18. A.S. *ongitan*.
- Bac, *adv.* back, 228/195.
- Bac, 25/792, of bac = aback = away, but more probably *hac* (so in MS.) = *hagt* = *agt*, mind, rh. with *lagt*. Maetzner suggests *hac* = *ac* = also.
- Bac-biteres, *s. pl.* backbiters, 186/25.
- Bachares, *s. pl.* bakers, 188/35.
- Bakbidit, *v. ind. pres. pl.* back-bite, 213/76.
- Bakbiteres, *s. pl.* 30.
- Bal, *s.* ball, 152/174.
- Bale, *s.* 8/230, 16/494.
- Baleu, *s. a. s.* bale, evil, misery, 42/189; *d. s.* balewe, 126/397; *g. s.* balewes, 97/125.
- Baleu-sypes, 118/280, Bale-sipes, 119/280, *s. pl.* times of adversity.
- Bali, *s.* belly, the trunk, and hence, the whole body, 78/199, 172/83, 176/137; *baly*, 173/83.
- Bane, *s.* destruction, 15/482.
- Banne, *v. inf.* curse, 129/441.
- Bar. *See* Beren.
- Bare, *adj.* 79/211, void, 5/145.
- Barlic, *s.* barley, 9/262, 10/291.
- Barnþ, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* burns, 66/245.
- Barraban, Barrabas, 47/374, 48/375.
- Barunes, *s. pl.* barons, 92/57.
- Bap, *s.* 65/218.
- Bape, *pron.* both, 60/63.
- Bapien, 180/210, Bape, 181/210, *v. inf.* bathe.
- Bapieres, *s. pl.* water-pots, 29.
- Be, *prep.* by, 27.
- Bec, *s.* beak, 3/58, 3/77.
- Bed, *v.* *See* Bidden.
- Bed, *s.* 65/218; *d. s.* bedde, 81/284.
- Bede, *v.* *See* Bidden.
- Bede, 184/13.
- Bede, *s. ac. pl.* prayers, 56/659; *g. pl.* bede, 39/79; *d. pl.* beden, 79/219.
- Beere, 231/284, Bere, 214/125, *s.* cry, noise. (P)
- Been, *s. pl.* bees, 148/40.
- Behinden, *adv.* behind, 19/608.
- Behote, *p.p.* promised, 26. *See* Bihoten.
- Bekned, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* shows, 10/300 (*monstrat*, 204/119).
- Belaue, 28, Beleau, 27, Beliaue, 27, *s.* belief.
- Beleue, *v. subj. pres. pl.* believe, 28.
- Belles, *s. g. s.* of bell, 21/665.
- Ben. *See* Beon.
- Bench, *s.* 156/9.
- Bendes, *s. ac. pl.* bonds, 53/575, 64/188; *d. pl.* bende, 62/136, 142/28.
- Bene, *s.* petition, prayer, 156/17. A.S. *bén*.
- Beneme, *v. ind. pres.* 1 *s.* take away, 32.
- Beo. *See* Beon.
- Beoden, *s. pl.* prayers, 69/333.
- Beon, *v. inf.* be, 73/30; beo, 73/

- 25, 97/139, *ben*, 105/57; *ind. pres.* 2 *s.* *bist*, 96/120; 3 *s.* *bip*, 171/25, *bid*, 170/25, *bet*, 125/378; *pl.* *beop*, 37/5, 73/41, *ben*, 2/49; *subj. pres.* 2 *s.* *best*, 134/557; *pl.* *beon*, 79/223; *p.p.* *ibeo*, 37/13, 147/23.
- Beond*, *s.* *band*, 154/253.
- Beore*. *See* *Beren*.
- Beornes*, *s. n. pl.* *men*, 92/58; *d. pl.* *berne*, 93/5.
- Berdene*, *s.* *burden*, 34.
- Bere*, *s.* *bier*, 101/9.
- Beren*, *v.* *bear*, *carry*, *bring forth*; *inf.* *beren*, 9/263, *bere*, 45/268; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* *berþ*, 98/164, *bereð*, 9/268; *pret.* 2 *s.* *bere*, 38/21; 3 *s.* *ber*, 48/393, *bar*, 2/39; *pl.* *bere*, 166/80, *beeren*, 230/258; *subj. pres. sg.* *bere*, 169/83, *beore*, 168/83; *p.p.* *iboren*, 170/25, *i-borin*, 115/208, *ibore*, 38/21, 74/57.
- Bergen*, *v. inf.* *shelter*, 1/14, *save*, *protect*, 8/231.
- Berges*, *s. pl.* *mountains*, 19/605.
- Beril*, *s.* *beryl*, 98/174.
- Beringe*, *s.* *birth*, 26.
- Berke*, *v. subj. pres. sg.* *bark*, 137/653.
- Berme*, 188/38, *Beorme*, 189/38, *s.* *barm*, *yeast*.
- Bern*, *s.* *child*, 128/430.
- Berne*. *See* *Beornes*.
- Berninde*, 166/77, *Bernynde*, 167/77, *i. p.* *burning*.
- Bes* = *shalt be*, 132/509.
- Besech*, *v. imp.* 2 *s.* *beseech*, 30.
- Besekeþ*, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* *seeks*, 28.
- Best*, *shalt be*, 136/621.
- Bestis*, *s. pl.* *beasts*, 212/54.
- Bet* = *is*. *See* *Beon*.
- Bet*, *adv.* *better*, 58/16, ? *best*, 20/641.
- Bet*, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* *offers*, 10/299.
- Bete*, *v. inf.* *improve*, *amend*, *make amends*, 41/154, 74/68; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* *beteð*, 4/107; *p.p.* *ibet*, 61/100.
- Beten*, *v. inf.* *beat*, 45/270; *ind. pres. pl.* *beteþ*, 83/328.
- Bethany*, 55/639.
- Bethleem*, 26.
- Betokned*, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* *betokeneth*, 31.
- Betueue*, *prep.* *between*, 26.
- Beuerley*, 146/31.
- Beuir*, *adj.* ? *trembling*, 136/627.
- Bewen*, *v. inf.* *bow*, *bend*, 121/293.
- Bi*, *prep.* *by*, 1/5, 76/139.
- Bi*. *See* *Bien*.
- Bicche*, *s.* *bitch*, 137/652.
- Bycahte*, *p.p. pl.* *caught*, 75/101.
- Bicharre*, *v. inf.* *deceive*, *beguile*, 74/78; *bicherre*, 46/324; *p.p.* *bicherd*, 69/316.
- Bicleopien*, *v. inf.* *accuse*, 61/107.
- Bicnowe*, 158/31, *Biknowe*, 159/31, *v. inf.* *acknowledge*.
- Bi-com*. *See* *Bicume*.
- Bi-cumen*, *v. inf.* *become*, *turn (to)*, 126/383; *ind. pres. sg.* 3. *bicumeð*, 4/91, *suits*, 23/738; *pret.* 3 *s.* *bi-com*, *came*, 40/108; *subj. pret. sg.* *by-come*, 114/209; *p.p.* *bicume*, *become*, 193/19.
- Bid*. *See* *Beon and Bidden*.
- Bidden*, *v. inf.* *ask*, *pray*, *ask for*, 4/116, 62/125; *bidde*, 29; *ind. pres.* 2 *s.* *byst*, 84/19; 3 *s.* *bit*, 93/1, *byt*, 96/105; *pret.* 2 *s.* *bede*, 99/187; 3 *s.* *bed*, 43/227, 81/294; *imp.* 2 *s.* *bid*, 7/194.
- Biddinge*, *s.* *prayer*, 28.
- Biden*, *v. inf.* *expect*, 152/169.
- Bidelid*, *p.p.* *deprived*, 134/558.
- Bydyng*, *i. p.* *remaining*, 219/264.

- Bie, *prep.* by, 29.  
 Bie, Bied, Biedh. *See* Bien.  
 Bien, *v. inf.* be, 26, 33; *inf.* bie, 32, bi, 26; *ind. pres. pl.* bieþ, 31, bieth, 28, biedh, 31, bied, 30, bie, 33; *subj. pres. sg.* bi, 31, *pl.* bie, 31; *p.p.* ibye, 34, ibe, 34. These are all Kentish forms. *See* Beon.  
 Bi ford dages = far or late in the day, 138/696. *See forth daies*, Wiclif, Mark 7 (Stratmann). "Forð-dages, *At close of day.*" Bosworth.  
 Bifore, *prep.* 27.  
 Biforan, 146/33, Biforn, 3/84, *adv.* before.  
 Bifulit, *v.* 3 *s.* befouls, 137/658.  
 Bigeten, *v. ind. pres. pl.* beget, 19/614; *subj. pres. sg.* bigete, gain, 132/497.  
 Biginnen, *v.* begin; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* biginniz, 197/2; *pret.* 3 *s.* bigon, 38/33, bygon, 38/41; *pl.* bigunne, 44/243, bygunne, 66/239.  
 Bigynne, *v. inf.* ensnare, 79/227.  
 Bigripen, *v. inf.* seize, catch, 16/516.  
 Bihalt. *See* Biholden.  
 Biheauded, *p.p.* beheaded, 154/256.  
 Bihedden, *v. ind. pret. pl.* hid, covered, sheltered, 81/283.  
 Biheled, *p.p.* covered, 91/38.  
 Byheold, Biheolden. *See* Biholden.  
 Biheste, *s.* promise, 55/636.  
 Bihete. *See* Bihoten.  
 Biholden, *v.* behold; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* bihalt, 20/644, biholdes, 15/472; *pret.* 3 *s.* byheold, 40/91; *pl.* biheolden, 55/643; *p.p.* biholden, 20/636.  
 Bihoten, *v.* promise; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* bihotep, 59/39, bi-hat, 122/347, bi-hait, 123/347; *pret. pl.* bihehte, 175/98, biheyhte, 66/238, bihete, 174/98; *p.p.* bihote, 96/119, behote, 26.  
 Bihoue, *s.* advantage, 108/96.  
 Bihoueð, 11/340, Biouit, *v.* 3 *s.* behoves, 107/87.  
 By-hud, *v. imp.* 2 *s.* hide, 116/242.  
 Bi-kache, *v. inf.* entrap, 124/359.  
 Bi-knewe, *v. pret. pl.* knew of, 26.  
 Bylaueð, *p.p.* laved, 140/30.  
 Bile, *s.* bill, beak, 3/86.  
 Biledeþ, *v. ind. pres. pl.* treat, 83/329; *p.p.* biled, 45/278.  
 Bileue, *v. inf.* believe, 29.  
 Bileuynge, *s.* sustenance, 84/9.  
 Bileuen, *v. inf.* remain, 42/186, leave, 92/66; *ind. pret.* 3 *s.* byleuede, left, 38/39, *pl.* byleuede, 43/217; *imp.* 2 *s.* bilef, leave, 62/129.  
 Bi-lif, *s.* sustenance, 109/96.  
 Bilimpit, 132/486, Bilimpes, 12/362, *v.* 3 *s.* happens; *pl.* bilympeþ, belong, 146/40, bilimpeþ, 146/51.  
 Bilirten, *v. inf.* deceive, 13/403.  
 Biliuen, *v. inf.* live by, 8/254.  
 Billeð, *v.* 3 *s.* bills, pecks, 3/83/84, 14/436.  
 Billing, *s.* pecking, 13/418, 14/440.  
 Biloken, *v. ind. pres. pl.* look about, 17/529.  
 Biloken, *p.p.* shut up, enclosed, 61/80, 190/68, shut, 134/554.  
 Biluken, *v. inf.* enclose, 128/420.  
 Bimenen, *v. inf.* bemoan, lament, 115/193, bimene, 83/341; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* bimened, bemoans, pities, 117/237; *subj. pres. pl.* bimene, 25/798.  
 Bymenyng, *s.* bemoaning, 74/56.  
 Bynde, *v. inf.* bind, tie, 43/211; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* bint; *pret. pl.* bunde, 43/196; *p.p.* ibunde, 77/165.

- Binepen, *adv.* beneath, 230/273.  
 Binnen, *prep.* within, 133/527.  
 Bynymen, *v. inf.* take away, 59/49; *inf.* bynyme, 59/45; *ind. pret.* *pl.* by-nomen, 56/682; *p.p.* bynumen, 145/24, binume, 76/119.  
 Biouit. *See* Bihoueð.  
 Bipechen, *v. inf.* deceive, 125/358, bi-peche, 72/6; *p.p. pl.* bipahte, 75/100, 176/128, bi-pauhte, 177/128.  
 Bipseoneþ, *v. 3 s.* sews up, 101/10.  
 Birde, *s.* birth, 5/141.  
 Birdene, *s.* burden, 12/375.  
 Bi-rede, *v. subj. pl.* to amend, 78/196.  
 Bireued, *p.p.* bereft, 41/133.  
 Bi-reusye, 78/185, By-reusy, 83/341, *v. inf.* repent.  
 Bi-schune, *v. imp. 2 s.* shun, 124/368.  
 Biscop, *s.* bishop, 43/220; *pl.* biscopes, 102/3, biscopis, 103/3, byses, 39/76, 47/352.  
 Biscopryche, 145/8, Bisscopriche, 146/27, Byscopryche, 145/7, *s. pl.* bishoprics.  
 Bisechen, *v. inf.* beseech, 74/64; *ind. pres. pl.* bisecheth, 32.  
 Biseo, *v. inf.* look, look at, look after, 58/19, 158/32, 160/38; *subj. pret. 1 s.* bisehe, 193/17; *imp. 2 s.* bi-sih, 160/18, bi-syh, 161/18.  
 Bisetten, *v. inf.* attack, 8/223; bisette, apply, use (well), 137/674.  
 Bisih. *See* Biseo.  
 Bismare, *s.* scorn, mockery, 136/622.  
 Bi-soht, 182/224, By-souht, 183/224, *p.p.* sought.  
 Byses. *See* Biscop.  
 Bispat, *p.p.* spit upon, 140/32.  
 Bispryche, *s.* bishopric, 145/12; *pl.* bispriche, 145/13, 146/29, bisp-ryche, 146/32.  
 Bisscop-stol, *s.* bishop's see, 145/24.  
 Bist. *See* Beon.  
 Byst. *See* Bidden.  
 Bistod, *v. pret. 3 s.* stood by, 180/188.  
 Bistolen, *p.p.* stolen upon, 58/18.  
 Bi-suyled, *p.p.* defiled, bemired, 225/91.  
 Biswiken, 16/515, Biswike, 14/429, *v. inf.* deceive; *ind. pres. 3 s.* biswikeð, 16/488.  
 Bit, Byt. *See* Bidden and Biten.  
 Bitauht, Bytauht, Bitauhte. *See* Biteche.  
 Biteche, *v. inf.* hand over, deliver, commit, 51/507; *ind. pres. 1 s.* biteche, 40/103; *pret. 3 s.* bitauhte, 40/105; *p.p.* bi-tauht, 42/172, 76/120, bytauht, 90/2(2).  
 Biten, *v. bite*; *ind. pres. sg. 3.* bit, 9/269, 10/296, bitit, 137/652.  
 Biter, *adj.* bitter, 27.  
 Byterluker, *adv. comp.* more bitterly, 92/56.  
 Biternesse, *s.* 28.  
 Biðenken, *v. inf.* consider, 4/94, bipenche, 69/323; *ind. pret. 3 s.* bi-pouhte, 56/683; *imp. 2 s.* bi-peng, 127/399; *p.p.* bypouht, plotted, 92/53; *pl.* bypouhte, 69/316, bi-pohte, 166/56, bipouhte, 167/56.  
 Bitockned, *v. 3 s.* betokens, 30; bitokneð, 7/198, 16/487.  
 Bitogen, 113/158, Bitowe, 112/157, *p.p.* applied, employed.  
 Bitornd, *v. ind. pret. 3 s.* turned, 226/119.  
 Bitraye, 40/93, Bytraye, 40/99; *v. inf.* betray; *ind. pret. 3 s.* bi-trayede, 38/44.  
 Bitterlike, *adv.* bitterly, 15/481.  
 Bi-twen, 12/368, Bi-tweonen, 164/43, Bi-twene, 165/43, *prep.* between.

- Bitwixen, *prep.* betwixt, 12/379.  
 By-valle, *v. inf.* befall, 41/145.  
 Bivoren, *prep.* before, 40/106;  
     *bi-vore*, 39/56.  
 Biwalt, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* deceiveth,  
     20/645.  
 Bywende, *v. ind. pret.* 3 *s.* turned,  
     45/296.  
 Biwepen, *v. inf.* beweepe, lament,  
     78/185.  
 Byweued, *p.p.* encompassed, 55/  
     638, covered, 140/33.  
 Biwilen, *v. inf.* deceive with  
     wiles, 123/327.  
 Biwindeþ, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* winds,  
     78/200.  
 Biwite, *v.* keep, guard; *ind. pret.*  
     3 *s.* *by-wste*, 45/280; *pl.* *bi-wusten*,  
     52/538; *subj. pres. sg.* *bi-wite*, 184/  
     259, *by-wite*, 116/245.  
 Biyete, *v.* get, gain; *ind. pres.* 3  
     *s.* *biyet*, 77/147, *by-yet*, 171/30;  
     *p.p.* *biyeten*, begotten, 154/266.  
 Biyete, *s.* gain, 76/142.  
 By-yonde, *prep.* 145/2.  
 Bijet, *v.* 3 *s.* gains, 170/30.  
 Blac, *adj.* black, 23/735; *comp.*  
     *blakkure*, 149/77.  
 Blast, *s.* 21/665.  
 Blench, *s.* turn, trick, 156/4.  
 Blende, *v. inf.* blind, 88/43; *ind.*  
     *pret.* 3 *s.* *blende*, 164/48.  
 Bleo, *s.* colour, complexion, 95/  
     66.  
 Bles, *s.* blast, 93/14.  
 Blesful, *adj.* blissful, 218/242.  
 Blessy, *v. inf.* bless, 55/640; *i. p.*  
     *blessynde*, 55/656; *p.p.* *iblessed*,  
     196/25.  
 Blepeliche, *adv.* gladly, 32.  
 Bleu, Bleweð. *See* Blowen.  
 Blyndfellede, *v. pret. pl.* blind-  
     folded, 45/272.  
 Blinnen, *v. inf.* cease, 195/7.  
 Blis, 6/177, Blisce, 28, Blisse,  
     73/39, Blysse, 73/31, *s.* bliss, joy.  
 Blitnesse, *s.* blitheness, 105/50.  
 Blyue, *adv.* quickly, 93/21, 142/  
     42.  
 Blod, *s.* blood, 39/64; *d. s.* *blode*,  
     81/266.  
 Blokeþ, *v.* 3 *s.* pales, 101/1.  
 Blowen, *v.* blow; *ind. pres. pl.*  
     *bleweð*, 162/18, *bloweþ*, 163/18;  
     *pret.* 3 *s.* *bleu*, 55/627.  
 Blupeliche, *adv.* blithely, cheer-  
     fully, 40/107, 67/250.  
 Bly . . . . *See* Bli . . . .  
 Bo, *adj.* both, 151/145.  
 Boc, 14/451, Bok, 41/131, *s.*  
     book; *d. s.* *boke*, 3/54, 10/309.  
 Bod, *s.* command, 142/49; *d. s.*  
     *bode*, 67/256; *pl.* *bodes*, 6/172,  
     10/299.  
 Bode, *v. pret. pl.* offered, 231/304.  
 Boden, *pron.* both, 20/649.  
 Bodi, *s.* 6/161.  
 Bohte. *See* Buggen.  
 Bok, Boke. *See* Boc.  
 Bok-ilered, *adj.* booklearned,  
     102/4.  
 Bold, *s. neut.* house, mansion,  
     96/119; *d. s.* *bolde*, 96/113.  
 Bold, *adj.*; *pl.* *bolde*, 76/127.  
 Bolstre, *s. d. s.* bolster, cushion,  
     174/90.  
 Bolt, 128/421, Bold, 129/421, *s.*  
     bolt.  
 Bon, *s.* bone, 20/619; *pl.* *bon*,  
     54/607.  
 Bonde, *s.* husbandman, 77/146.  
 Bondes, *s. pl.* bondmen, 56/678.  
 Bone, *s.* prayer, 4/116; *pl.* *bonen*,  
     63/157. *See also* Bene.  
 Booc-lerid, *adj.* booklearned, 107/  
     65; *pl.* *booc-lerede*, 103/4.  
 Bord, *s.* board, table, 129/417;  
     *d. s.* *-e*, 128/417.

- Bores, *s. pl.* chambers, 170/30.  
*See* Bur.  
 Borlic, *adj.* burly, huge, 19/605.  
 Boskes, *s. pl.* woods, 197/13.  
 Bote, *conj.* unless, 195/8. *See* Buten.  
 Bote, *s.* amends, remedy, 69/312, 83/351, 97/125.  
 Bop, (?) booth, tabernacle, 127/407.  
 Boše, Boše, *conj.* 3/63, 83/327, 188/41.  
 Bošen, *conj.* both, 8/245, 11/332.  
 Bottes, *s. pl.* bats, clubs, 43/205.  
 Bouh, *s.* bough, 94/48.  
 Bouhte. *See* Bugge.  
 Boure. *See* Bur.  
 Breade, *s.* breadth, 145/4.  
 Bred, *p.p.* 5/140.  
 Bred, *s.* bread, 40/103, 188/42; *d. s.* brede, 38/44, 82/314.  
 Bredale, *s.* bridal, wedding, 29.  
 Brede, *s.* roast meat, 63/149, 151/134.  
 Brede, *v. inf.* roast, broil, 91/44, 180/200; *p.p.* ibred, 54/615.  
 Breder. *See* Brođer.  
 Bredgume, *s.* bridegroom, 29.  
 Brei-gurdel, *s.* breeches girdle, 193/16.  
 Breid, *s.* deceit, guile, 21/672; *pl.* breides, 14/445.  
 Breken, *v.* break; *ind. pret. pl.* breken, 51/493; *p.p.* ibroke, 147/10, broken, 6/173.  
 Brennen, *v. inf.* burn, 17/536; *ind. pres. pl.* 11/337; *p.p.* i-brent, 212/61.  
 Brenning, *s.* burning, 10/318.  
 Breoly, *adv.* = breoply, violently, 92/58.  
 Breosten, *s. pl.* breasts, 151/135.  
 Brest, *s.* breast, 5/140.  
 Breþ, *s.* breath, 101/5.  
 Breyh, *s.* brow, 150/98; *d. s.* breye, 182/238.  
 Briche, *adj.* ? useful. O.E. *brýce*, Goth. *bruks*, 12/379, 23/728.  
 Bricht, *adj.* bright, 27, 196/29.  
 Brichtnesse, *s.* brightness, 27.  
 Briddes, *s. pl.* young birds, 25/795.  
 Bridyport, Bridport, 145/19.  
 Brygge, *s.* bridge, 212/57.  
 Brigt, *adj.* bright, 3/71.  
 Bryht, *adj.* bright, 88/50; *pl.* bryhte, 83/353.  
 Bryngen, 37/8, Bringe, 77/156, Brynge, 76/126, Brinhin, 137/668, *v. inf.* bring; *ind. pres. sg.* 3. brin-hit, 119/257; *pret.* 3 *s.* brouhte, 118/266; *pl.* brouhten, 46/304, brouhte, 43/219; *p.p.* ibrohit, 182/222, ibrouht, 44/237, ibrouhit, 170/50, ibrocht, 29, brout, 195/42.  
 Brinneð, *v.* 3 *s.* burns, 10/316.  
 Briþeling, 184/11, Bryþeling, 185/11, *s.* a miserable wretch.  
 Brizes, *s. pl.* brows, 226/111.  
 Bro, *s.* ? blo, colour, 23/735.  
 Brod, *adj.* broad, 145/4; *def.* brode, 70/335.  
 Broder, *s.* brother, 12/373.  
 Broken. *See* Breken.  
 Brond, *s.* brand, 154/254.  
 Brođer, *s.* 21/659; *n. pl.* broþre, 55/626, breder, 221/322; *d. pl.* broþren, 53/584.  
 Broudun, *v. ind. pres. pl.* ? 211/43.  
 Brouhte, Brouhten. *See* Bringen.  
 Brout. *See* Bringen.  
 Brouys, 212/71, Brouwes, 225/92, *s. pl.* brows.  
 Brude, *s.* bride, 91/31.  
 Brudþinge, *s.* dignity of a bride, 99/207.  
 Brueres, *s. pl.* brewers, 188/35.



- Brugge, *s.* bridge, 225/66.  
 Bruke, *v. inf.* use, enjoy, 76/117.  
 Brumston, *s.* brimstone, 227/134.  
 Brune, *adj.* brown, 193/19.  
 Bruneston, 180/211, Brunston, 150/124, 181/211, *s.* brimstone, sulphur.  
 Brunie, 164/35, Brunye, 165/35, *s.* cuirass, body-armour.  
 Bruþen, fierce, boiling, 182/242.  
 Brutlaund, *s.* Britain, 146/37.  
 Brutlede, *v. ind. pret. pl.* cut in pieces, 92/58.  
 Buch, *v. imp.* 2 *s.* bow; buch þe = go thou, 136/629.  
 Buffetes, *s. pl.* 140/31.  
 Bugge, *v. inf.* buy, 60/66; *ind. pres. sg.* 3. buþ, 63/150; *pret.* 3 *s.* bohte, 186/20, bouhte, 81/267.  
 Buhsum, *adj.* obedient, 139/17.  
 Buhþ, *v.* 3 *s.* bows, 96/102.  
 Bukes, *s. g. s.* body's, 14/432.  
 Buckingham-schire, Buckingham-shire, 146/46.  
 Bunde, Bunden. *See* Binde.  
 Bunden, bound, limited, 18/560.  
 Bunté, *s.* goodness, 36.  
 Bur, *s.* bower, chamber, 97/147, 178/153; *d. s.* boure, 166/69, bury, 119/250, burie, 133/527; *a. pl.* bures, 171/30.  
 Bureh, 39/69, Bureuh, 86/72, *s.* city; *d. s.* burewe, 55/637.  
 Burþ-beryng, *s.* childbearing, 215/135.  
 Bury. *See* Bur.  
 Buryles, *s.* grave, sepulchre, 53/555. A.S. *byrgels*.  
 Bus = buge, avoid, 136/621.  
 Buten, *prep.* without, 60/53, 73/30; *conj.* except, 4/110, but, 22/709; bute, except, 78/191, unless, 75/99, but, 92/74; bute 3if, unless, 192/6.  
 Buuen, *adv.* above, 61/86; *prep.* 123/436, buue, above, 77/173, 154/275.  
 Buwe, *v. inf.* bow, bend, 120/294.  
 By . . . . *See* Bi . . . .  
 Calch, *s.* cup, goblet, 43/202; *d. s.* calche, 41/158. A.S. *cealc*.  
 Calcydonë, *s.* chalcedony, 98/171.  
 Calleð, 21/651.  
 Calling, *s.* 22/686.  
 Cane, Cana, 29.  
 Capun, *s.* capon, 13/390.  
 Care, *s.* sorrow, 22/686.  
 Carful, *adj.* sorrowful, 214/126.  
 Carnacione, *s.* incarnation, 216/186.  
 Casten, *v. pret. pl.* cast, 50/447.  
 Catt, 121/295, Kat, 120/296, *s.* cat.  
 Caue, *s.* cave, 8/251, 9/268.  
 Cendal, *s.* fine linen, 43/223, 91/23.  
 Centurio, *s.* centurion, 51/485.  
 Cesar, Cæsar, 49/430; *g.* Cesares, 46/329.  
 Cete, *s.* whale, 16/513.  
 Cethegrande, *s.* whale, 16/499.  
 Chabbe. *See* Habben.  
 Chald, *adj.* cold, 30.  
 Chamful, *adj.* shameful, 221/332.  
 Chamyd, *p.p.* shamed, 222/362.  
 ChANGEDERE, 199/56.  
 Changilyng, *i. p.* jangling, 213/84.  
 Chapmen, *s. pl.* merchants, dealers, 76/139.  
 Char, *s.* turn, resort, 20/643.  
 Chare, *v. inf.* turn, return, 18/581.  
 Chaste, *adj.* 30.  
 Chastyst, *p.p.* chastised, 222/357.

- Chatre = charter, 229/241.  
 Chaueles, *s. pl.* jaws, 16/513.  
 Cheffare, *s.* chaffer, bargain, 40/116.  
 Chele, *s.* cold, 73/49.  
 Chenchip, *s.* disgrace, confusion, ruin, 221/328.  
 Cheorl, 108/92, Cherril, 109/92, *s.* churl.  
 Cheose, *v. inf.* choose, 99/186, 118/249; *chesen*, 119/249; *ind. pret.* 3 *s.* ches, 23/716, 38/42; *imp.* 2 *s.* ches, 136/645; *p.p.* i-coren, 98/155, icore, 192/4, ycore, 38/22; *pl.* y-corene, 56/685.  
 Chep, *s. pl.* sheep, 212/56.  
 Cheping, 188/57, Chepyng, 124/373, 189/57, *s.* market.  
 Chepmen, *s. pl.* merchants, 39/74, 188/33.  
 Chepte, *v. pret.* 3 *s.* offered for sale, 40/115.  
 Cherche, *s.* church, 213/84.  
 Chere, *s.* manner, mien, 40/91.  
 Chereche, *s.* church, 31.  
 Cherried, *v.* 3 *s.* turns, returns, 107/85.  
 Ches, Chesen. *See* Cheose.  
 Chestre-schire, county of Chester, 146/56.  
 Cheysil-clop, *s.* a woman's upper garment, *Fr. cheinsil*, 51/510.  
 Chiden, *v. inf.* chide, 138/688.  
 Chilce, *s.* childishness, 58/7.  
 Child, *s.* 27; *pl.* children, 39/70, childer, 215/135.  
 Childinge, Chilpinge, *s.* child-bearing, 158/7, 159/7.  
 Chynen, *v. inf.* split, 73/44. *A.S. cinan.*  
 Chireche, *s.* church, 91/43; chyreche, 124/373.  
 Chiuerin, 176/142, Chyueren, 177/142, *v. inf.* shiver.  
 Chold, *adj.* cold, 30.  
 Christeman, *s.* Christian man, 30.  
 Churrep, *v.* 3 *s.* turns, 106/85.  
 Cicestre, Chichester, 145/11.  
 Cité, *s.* city, 26.  
 Clape, *s. d. pl.* clothes, 75/93.  
 Clei-clot, 172/73, Cley-clot, 173/73, *s.* clay-clod.  
 Clennesse, 29, *s.* cleanness.  
 Cleo, *s.* = cleoue, hill, cliff, 70/343.  
~~Clew, *s.* clew, hank, bowstring, 95/72.~~  
 Clepyen, *v. inf.* call, 51/481; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* clepeþ, 10/310; *pl.* clepiedh, 32; *pret.* 3 *s.* clepede, 53/579; *p.p.* i-cleped, 89/1.  
 Clerek, *s.* cleric, scholar, 102/19; cleric, 103/19; clerc, 107/78; *pl.* clerekes, 26.  
 Cliuer, *adj.* ? keen, 7/221.  
 Clybbe, *adj. pl.* 144/100.  
 Cloðed, *p.p.* 5/150; *def.* -e, 7/220.  
 Clut, *s.* clout, 172/68.  
 Cneo, *s. pl.* knees, 182/228.  
 Cniet, 107/78, Cnith, 107/87, *s.* knight; *g. s.* cnichts, 109/97; *pl.* cnites, 103/6.  
 Cnouen, to know, 107/88.  
 Coc, 13/390, Cok, 41/142, *s.* cock.  
 Cocken, *v. inf.* contend, 138/688.  
 Cocker, *s.* ? bully, 138/704.  
 Cof, *adj.* bold, 5/151, 7/220.  
 Cok. *See* Coc.  
 Coldep, *v.* 3 *s.* grows cold, 101/3(2).  
 Com, Come. *See* Cumen.  
 Come, *s.* coming, 25/799.  
 Comen, Comet, Cometh. *See* Cumen.  
 Commandement, *s.* 33.

- Comme. *See* Cumen.  
 Commencement, *s.* 30.  
 Compainie, 31, Companie, 138/  
 709, *s.* company.  
 Con, *v. pret.* 3 *s.* did, 55/627 ;  
*pl.* con, 214/133.  
 Conseil, *s.* counsel, 26, 194/10.  
 Constu, canst thou, 45/274.  
 Contrarie, *s.* 30.  
 Contrarius, *adj.* contrary, 228/  
 184.  
 Copynere, *s.* paramour, 150/103.  
 Corn, *s.* 8/246.  
 Cornwale, Cornwall, 145/3, 146/  
 36.  
 Cors, *s.* corpse, body, 28.  
 Cos, *s.* kiss ; *d. s.* cosse, 42/194.  
 Costes, *s. pl.* habits, manners,  
 12/370, 25/785.  
 Cotlif, 119/257, Cotlyf, 118/  
 259, *s.* abode.  
 Couchid, *p.p.* laid, 217/199.  
 Coueren, *v.* cover, 135/595.  
 Craft, *s.* 5/131, 17/542.  
 Crede, *s.* creed, 4/113.  
 Crefty, *adj.* crafty, 91/20.  
 Crepen, *v. inf.* creep, 8/251 ; *ind.*  
*pres.* 3 *s.* crepeð, 5/130.  
 Cresly, *adv.* grisly, horribly, 214/  
 120.  
 Crijeden, *v. ind. pret. pl.* cried,  
 229/232.  
 Cripelande, *i. p.* crawling, 5/130.  
 Crysmechild, *s.* a child that dies  
 within the month of birth, some-  
 times called a *chrisom*, 90/11.  
 Crisopace, *s.* chrysoprasus, 98/  
 174.  
 Crist, Christ, 26 ; *gen.* Cristes,  
 37/4.  
 Cristen, *adj.* Christian, 4/91 ;  
*def. -e*, 27.  
 Cristned, *p.p.* christened, 6/168.  
 Croos, *s. pl.* cruses, vessels, 29.  
 Crowe, *v. inf.* crow, 45/295 ;  
*subj. pres. sg.* crowe, 41/142.  
 Croyz, *s.* cross, 50/454.  
 Crune, *s.* crown, 48/383.  
 Cry . . . . *See* Cri . . . .  
 Cudde. *See* Cupe.  
 Cul, *s.* ? buttocks, 23/741.  
 Culuer, *s.* dove, 25/785.  
 Culur, *s.* colour, 98/180.  
 Cumberlond, Cumberland, 146/  
 35.  
 Cumen, *v. inf.* come, 41/136 ;  
*inf.* cume, 153/237, komen, 194/  
 17, come, 28, comme, 28 ; *ger.* to  
 cumene, 36 ; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* cumeð,  
 3/56, comet, 194/24 ; *pl.* cumen,  
 11/363, cume, 21/660, come, 188/  
 58 ; *pret. s.* 2. come, 139/9 ; 3.  
 com, 38/31, kam, 2/43 ; *pl.* comen,  
 38/40 ; *subj. pret. sg.* come, 2/35 ;  
*imp.* 2 *pl.* cometh, 27 ; *p.p.* icumen,  
 64/173, i-cume, 34, i-comen, 33,  
 comen, 197/1.  
 Cumford, *s.* comfort, 218/245.  
 Cumpers, *s. pl.* partners, 212/64.  
 Cun, *s.* kin, kind, sort ; *g. s.*  
 cunnes, 50/446, 126/384, kunnes,  
 56/666 ; *g. pl.* cunne, 38/33, kunne,  
 39/53.  
 Cune, Cunen. *See* Cunne.  
 Cunne, *v. inf.* know, be able, 69/  
 330 ; *ind. pres. sg.* 1. kan, 196/15 ;  
 3. can, 4/94 ; *pl.* cunnen, 79/220,  
 cunen, 18/581 ; *subj. pres. sg.* cunne,  
 1/12, 3/68 ; *pret.* cupe, 93/6, 119/  
 251, kupe, 26 ; *imp.* 2 *s.* cune,  
 7/191, ? show ; *p.p.* cuþ, known,  
 96/104.  
 Curtel, *s.* kirtle, coat, 49/445.  
 Curteys, *adj.* courteous, 155/289.  
 Cussen, *v.* kiss ; *ind. pres.* 1 *s.*  
 cusse, 40/122 ; *pret.* 3 *s.* custe,  
 42/192.  
 Custe, *s.* manners, 118/252.  
 Custome, *s.* 29.

- Cup. *See* Cupe.  
 Cup, Cupe. *See* Cunne.  
 Cupe, *v. inf.* make known, show, 61/99, 124/358; *ind. pres. sg.* 3. cupeþ, 118/253; *pret.* 3 *s.* cudde, 53/577, 64/191; *imp.* 2 *s.* cuþ, 90/4(2).  
 Cuplethe, *p.p. pl.* acquainted, 75/98.  
 Cuunable, *adj.* suitable, 27.  
 Cwed, *s.* the evil one, devil, 164/47, 182/225.  
 Cwelle, *v. inf.* kill, 168/14.  
 Cwemen, *v. inf.* please, 184/255.  
 Dacyen, Dacian, 56/686.  
 Daghen. *See* Dai.  
 Dai, 2/43, Day, 45/301, Dei, 22/702, *s.* day; *g. s.* deies, 13/405, day-is, 194/3; *pl.* dages, 23/744, 133/540, dagis, 135/582, daghen, 35, daies, 5/127; *d. pl.* dawæ, 47/340, miswritten *daye*, 46/326; *ac. pl.* dawes, 38/29.  
 Dai-red, 162/17, Daye-rewe, 163/17, *s.* dawn.  
 Dame, *s.* mother, 190/81.  
 Dar, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* dare, 153/231.  
 Dareð, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* lies still, 13/406, 15/486; *pl.* daren, 24/761.  
 Darit, 137/655. 'Darit don' may be = 'dareð dun', lies down quietly, or 'dar it don,' dare do it.  
 Dat, miswritten for Ðat, 24/770.  
 Dau, David, 231/296.  
 Dawe, Dawes. *See* Dai.  
 Day, Day-is. *See* Dai.  
 De, miswritten for Ðe, 7/219, 10/311.  
 Dead, *adj.* 182/248.  
 Deað, 168/7, Dep, 169/7, Ded, 17/528, *s.* death; *g. s.* deapes, 156/8, depes, 157/8; *d. s.* deþe, 40/88, dede, 2/45.  
 Deai, *s.* day, 34.  
 Deciples, *s. pl.* disciples, 29.  
 Ded, *adj.* dead, 2/40.  
 Dede. *See* Don.  
 Dede, *s.* deed, 4/97; *pl.* deden, 106/77, dedin, 107/77.  
 Dedeyn, *s.* disdain, 228/171.  
 Dedlich, *adj.* mortal, 46/328.  
 Deel, *s.* sorrow, 212/52.  
 Defendet, *v.* 3 *s.* defends, 28.  
 Defte, *adj.* mild, 2/37.  
 Degh, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* is good, is fit, avails, 132/506; *pl.* dugen, 133/546.  
 Dehe, *s.* die, colour, 193/20.  
 Deit. *See* Don.  
 Del, *s.* part, portion, 11/345, 151/151.  
 Dele, *s. d. s.* dale, 1/6.  
 Delen, *v. inf.* part, divide, 49/444.  
 Delful, *adj.* doleful, sorrowful, 231/234.  
 Deliuri, *v. subj. pres. s.* deliver, 33.  
 Demen, 23/729, Deme, 46/312, *v. inf.* judge; *imp.* 2 *pl.* demyp, 47/341; *p.p.* ydemed, 62/119.  
 Demus = deme us, 199/74.  
 Den, *s.* 1/13, 152/176.  
 Dene, *s. g. pl.* Danes', 146/39.  
 Dennede, *v. pret.* 3 *s.* denned, housed, 2/36.  
 Deope, 77/168, Deop, 77/155, *adv.* deep.  
 Deore, *adj.* dear, 195/6.  
 Deore, *adv.* dearly, 196/32.  
 Deoreby-schire, Derbyshire, 146/45.  
 Deouel, *s.* devil; *g. s.* deofles, 65/193, deoueles, 67/250; *d. s.* deouele, 67/267; *n. pl.* deofle, 152/191, deoulen, 61/97.

- Deppere, *adv. comp.* deeper, 212/70; *superl.* deppist, deepest, 217/214.
- Der, *s.* animal, 9/283, 11/327.
- Dere, *miswritten for* ðere, there, 9/288.
- Dere, *s.* ? injury, 231/301.
- Derewurpe, *adj.* precious, 98/163.
- Derflike, *adv.* violently, 13/412.
- Derk, *adj.* dark, 226/120; *superl.* derkeste, 230/246.
- Derlike, *adv.* dearly, 91/46.
- Derling, *s.* darling, 103/11.
- Derne, 2/34, 60/77, Dern, 4/90, *adj.* secret, sly.
- Dernelike, *adv.* secretly, 14/428.
- Derue, *adj. pl.* bold, strong, 9/284.
- Deruet, *p.p.* afflicted, tormented, 225/85.
- Derye, *v. inf.* hurt, injure, damage, 44/251, 76/144, deren, 6/153; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* dereð, 14/428; *subj. pres. sg.* derie, 8/252.
- Deseiurd, 31, Deseuerd, *p.p.* separated, 31.
- Deseredyn, *v. pret. pl.* disinherited, 211/39.
- Deserueden, *v. pret. pl.* deserved, 225/74.
- Desi, *adj.* foolish, 131/479.
- Desiende, *i. p.* foolish, 131/466.
- Desiet, *v.* 3 *s.* is foolish, acts foolishly, 131/464.
- Dest. *See* Don.
- Det = death, 198/41, 199/61.
- Deþ, Deþe. *See* Deað.
- Deu, *s.* dew, 1/11.
- Deuel, *s.* 7/216; *g. s.* deules, 25/800.
- Deuena schire, Devonshire, 146/44.
- Dewyes steowe, 145/5.
- Deye, *v. inf.* die, 51/486.
- Deynet, *v.* appeared worthy (?), 228/168.
- Diadlich, *adj.* mortal, 27, deadly, 31.
- Diath, 27, Diaþ, 36, *s.* death.
- Dich, *s.* ditch, 39/80; *pl.* diche, 59/42.
- Dieule, *s. dat. s.* devil, 28.
- Dige, *s.* ditch, 138/700.
- Dihsches. *See* Disch.
- Dihte, Dyhte, *v. inf.* order, arrange, prepare, 40/110, 52/545; *digte*, 162/12; *p.p.* idigt, 15/469.
- Dillen, *v. subj. pres. pl.* oppose, 12/383.
- Dim, *adj.* 18/554; *pl.* dimme, 3/60.
- Dine, *s.* din, sound, 25/782.
- Disch, *s.* dish; *pl.* disches, 175/105, dihsches, 174/105.
- Disciples, *s. pl.* 40/92.
- Disperacion, *s.* despair, 215/141.
- Dispitous, *adj.* spiteful, cruel, 226/131.
- Distrye, *v. inf.* destroy, 214/130.
- Diuel, *s.* devil, 2/33.
- Diuersliche, *adv.* diversely, 223/24.
- Diueð, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* dives, 17/539.
- Dizte. *See* Dihte.
- Dod. *See* Don.
- Dol, *s.* division, 50/446.
- Dole, *s.* grief, sorrow, 210/3.
- Doloure, *s.* grief, 212/72.
- Doluen, *p.p.* buried, 2/41.
- Dom, *s.* judgment, 9/285.
- Domesdei, *s.* day of judgment, 10/305.
- Domesmon, *s.* judge, 184/3; *pl.* domesmen, 67/252.
- Don, *v. inf.* do, cause, 39/84, 72/7; *inf.* do, 190/78; *ger.* to donne, 58/

- 20, to donde, 193/15, to done, 33;  
*ind. pres. sg.* 2. dest, 40/111, dostu  
 = dost thou, 147/7; 3. dep, 28, deit,  
 111/126, doš, 6/180, dot, 131/472;  
*pret. sg.* 3. dude, 90/5, dede, 26;  
*pl.* duden, 45/275; *imp. pl.* 2. dod,  
 59/24; *p.p.* i-do, 48/376, ydo, 44/  
 249, don, 25/798.
- Don, *adv.* down, 32.
- Dorset-schire, 146/43.
- Dorste, *v. ind. pret.* 3. durst, 29.
- Dostu, Dot. *See* Don.
- Dote, *s.* dolt, fool, 128/422.
- Doueran, Dover, 145/5.
- Doweþes, *s. g. s.* might, power,  
 112/177.
- Dragen, *v. inf.* draw, 17/548;  
*ind. pres.* 3 *s.* drageš, 1/9, 10/311;  
*pl.* dragen, 11/329.
- Dragunes, *s. pl.* dragons, 24/759.
- Drake, *s.* dragon, 180/216, 181/  
 216. A.S. *draca*.
- Drauh. *See* Drawe.
- Drawen, *v. inf.* draw, 60/50;  
*ind. pres. pl.* dreyep, 149/89; *pret.*  
*sg.* 3. drouh, 43/197; *imp. sg.* 2.  
 drauh, 99/202.
- Drayep, *v. ind. pres. pl.* endure,  
 suffer, 151/162.
- Drecche, *v. inf.* trouble, vex,  
 harass, 75/107; *subj. pres. sg.*  
 drecche, 162/47.
- Dreccheš, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* tarries,  
 4/103.
- Dred, *s.* fear, 13/412.
- Drede, *v.* fear; *ind. pres. sg.* 3.  
 dret, 95/59; as an *impers. verb* =  
 causes fear, 32.
- Dreige, sorrow, 121/299.
- Drem, *s.* sound, 21/665.
- Drench, *s.* drink, potion, 156/8,  
 157/18.
- Drenkyn, *v. inf.* to drink, 219/  
 280.
- Dreoreliche, *adv.* drearily, 92/65.
- Dreori, *adj.* dreary, sad, 118/263.
- Drepeš, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* kills,  
 15/483, 17/540; *pl.* drepeþ, tor-  
 ment, 151/133.
- Drerlyke, drearily, 91/42.
- Dret. *See* Drede.
- Dreueš, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* troubles,  
 16/496.
- Dreyep. *See* Drawen.
- Dridde, *miswritten for* Dridde,  
 third, 2/43.
- Drie, *adj.* 24/752.
- Dryhten, 112/176, Dryhtin, 90/5,  
 Drihte, 97/140, Dryhte, 97/136,  
 Drigten, 2/40, Drigtin, 105/42,  
 Drittin, 113/173, *s.* Lord; *gen.*  
 Drigtinnes, 11/330.
- Drinche. *See* Drinke.
- Drink, *s.* 7/206.
- Drinken, 5/138, Drynke, 157/8,  
 Drinche, 156/8, *v. inf.* drink; *p.p.*  
 i-drunke, 29, y-dronken, 131/476.
- Driuin, *v. inf.* drive, 109/95;  
*ind. pres.* 3 *s.* driueš, 1/13, 15/  
 470; *pret. sg.* 3. drof, 39/75; *p.p.*  
 i-dryue, 108/95.
- Drywories, *s. pl.* illicit love, 77/  
 158.
- Drof. *See* Driuin.
- Drope, *s.* drop; *pl.* dropes, 42/  
 162.
- Drouh. *See* Drawen.
- Droui, *adj.* troubled, turbid, 17/  
 523.
- Drowing, *miswritten for* Drow-  
 ing, suffering, passion, 22/690.
- Drung, *s.* drink, draught, 63/148.
- Drunk, *s.* drink, 198/38.
- Drunken, *s.* drunkenness, 67/  
 249, 67/254.
- Dude, Duden. *See* Don.
- Duge, *s.* prosperity, 133/516.
- Dugen. *See* Degh.
- Dugeþe, *s.* wealth, 133/544.

- Duhty, *adj.* valiant, 90/9(2).  
 Dumb, *adj.*; *pl.* -e, 39/55.  
 Dun, *adv.* down, 1/13, 66/236.  
 Dune, *s.* mountain, 85/42.  
 Dunholme, Durham, 146/28.  
 Dup, *adj.* deep, 183/242.  
 Dur, *s.* beast, 199/59.  
 Dure, *s.* door, 44/234; *pl.* duren, 153/235.  
 Dureward, *s.* doorkeeper, 43/227.  
 Durling, *s.* darling, 102/11.  
 Durre, 40/99, Dure, 7/187, *v.* *subj. pres. sg.* dare.  
 Dust, *s.* 1/9.  
 Dusy, *adj.* foolish; *d. s. f.* -e, 67/267.  
 Dute, *s.* fear, 44/236, 92/63.  
 Duten, *v. inf.* fear, 148/46; *pret. sg.* 3. dute, 91/46; *subj. pres. pl.* duten, 90/9(2).  
 Dupe, *s.* worthy (people), 90/6(2), 91/15.  
 Duwe, *adj.* due, 228/170.  
 Duzeper, *s. pl.* the twelve peers, 37/3.  
 Dwele, 52/525, Dweole, 160/35, *s.* delusion, error; *pl.* dwales, 126/414.  
 Dy . . . . See Di . . . .
- Eadward, Edward, 145/14.  
 Ealde, *s.* age, old age, 128/441, 130/455.  
 Ealured, Alfred, 102/9.  
 Ear. See Er.  
 Eastsexe, Essex, 146/48.  
 Eaules, *s. pl.* awls, 153/223.  
 Ebreu, *s.* Hebrew, 50/470.  
 Eche, *adj.* eternal, 52/546, 72/18.  
 Echen, *v. inf.* increase, 176/126.  
 Echere, *adj. d. s. f.* each, any, 116/240.  
 Eddres, 224/30, Eddyrs, 211/34, *s. pl.* adders, serpents.  
 Edmod, *adj.* humble, meek, 141/11, 142/53.  
 Edmodnesse, *s.* humility, meekness, 143/84, 193/35.  
 Edon, *p.p.* done, 218/243.  
 Edy, *adj.* wealthy; blessed, 100/5; *pl.* edie, 105/37, edye, 65/223.  
 Ef = eft, again, 132/495.  
 Eft, *adv.* again, 23/727.  
 Efter, *prep.* after, 186/18.  
 Egen, *s. pl.* eyes, 2/26, 3/60.  
 Egleche, every one, each, 102/6.  
 Ehe. See Eye.  
 Ei, 176/132, Ey, 177/132, *adj.* any.  
 Eye, 183/234, Ehe, 193/18, E3e, 182/234, *s.* eye; *pl.* eyen, 151/136, eizes, 226/112.  
 Eye, *s.* awe, 59/21, 67/275.  
 Eye-puttes, *s. pl.* eye-pits, 183/241.  
 Eyhte, *s.* property, 116/219.  
 Eyhte, *adj.* eight, 145/1.  
 Eyhteope, *adj.* eighth, 145/17.  
 Eilond, *s.* island, 17/530.  
 Eire, *s.* anger, wrath, 115/204.  
 Eirede, timid, fearful, ?ege~~de~~, foolish, 192/2(2).  
 Eysel, *s.* vinegar, 231/304.  
 Eyper, *pron.* either, 66/231.  
 Eizes. See Eye.  
 Ek, *conj.* also, 145/17.  
 Elde, *s.* old age, 3/56, 5/125.  
 Elde (?), 15/466.  
 Elded, *p.p.* become old, 6/177.  
 Eldere, 8/229, 11/329, Elderne, 64/192, *s. pl.* parents, forefathers.  
 Eldre, *adj. comp.* older, 58/1.  
 Elle, *s.* ill, 217/217.

- Elleuene, 155/283, Elleouene, 55/634, eleven.
- Elp, *s.* elephant, 20/646, 21/671; *pl.* elpes, 19/604.
- Elpe, 124/362. His elpe, *mis-written for iselpe.*
- Em. *See* Eom.
- En. *See* On.
- Encres, *v. inf.* increase, 218/258.
- Endie, 192/11, Endi, 158/39, *v. inf.* end, finish.
- Endinge, *s.* 156/24.
- Enduyre, *v. inf.* endure, 218/258.
- Ene, *adv.* once, 227/163.
- Ene = on, 199/71.
- Enes, *adv.* once, 74/60, 98/159.
- Engel, *s.* angel, 42/163; *n. pl.* engles, 162/17; *g. pl.* englene, 73/29; *d. pl.* englen, 83/353.
- Engle lond, 145/1, Englene lond, 102/17, England; *dat.* Engle londe, 145/4, Engelonde, 146/34, Engelaunde, 90/7, Enkelonde, 103/12.
- Englene, *s. g. pl.* Englishmen's, 105/26.
- Enne. *See* On.
- Ensampler, *s.* example, 27.
- Ent, at, 216/169.
- Eode, Eoden. *See* Gon.
- Eollefte, *adj.* eleventh, 146/25.
- Eom, *v. ind. pres. sg.* 1. am, 192/5(2), em, 42/184, am, 58/1; 2. eart, 161/11, ert, 45/286, art, 160/11, er-tu = ert þu, 46/313; 3. is, 61/80; *pl.* syndan, 146/33, senden, 18/555.
- Eorl, *s.* earl, 102/7; *pl.* eorles, 56/678, 102/5.
- Eornen, *v.* run; *ind. pret. sg.* 3. orn, 42/162.
- Eorre, *s.* anger, 67/274.
- Eorpe, 170/26, Erðe, 2/32, *s.* earth.
- Eou, *pron.* you, 186/3.
- Er, *conj.* or, 10/313, 11/326, 16/489—492.
- Er, 9/272, Ear, 59/23, Ere, 48/403, *adv.* before; er þan, 58/18, er þane, 32, *conj.* before.
- Er-aftur, according as, 225/86.
- Erchebiscophryche, *s.* archbishopric, 145/8; *pl.* erchebiscopryche, 145/7.
- Ere, *s.* ear, 43/198.
- Ere, *v. pl.* are, 91/18.
- Erendynge, 191/98, Herendinge, 168/86, Erndinge, 190/98, *s.* intercession.
- Erest, *adv.* first, 38/46.
- Eretekis, *s. pl.* heretics, 216/193.
- Erewe, *s.* bad person, 116/235.
- Erewe, *adj. pl.* cowardly, 58/20.
- Eried, *adj.* ploughed, 13/402.
- Erynde, 165/40, Ernde, 164/40, *s.* errand, message.
- Ern, *s.* eagle, 4/88; *g. s.* -es, 3/53.
- Ernemorewe, *s.* early morning, 45/301.
- Erore, 173/79, Erure, 172/79, *adj. comp.* former.
- Ert. *See* Eom.
- Er þan, Er þane. *See* Er.
- Erðchine, *s.* cleft in the earth, 13/402.
- Erpe. *See* Eorpe.
- Erpliche, *adj.* earthly, 28; erðliche, 10/299.
- Ertu. *See* Eom.
- Erure. *See* Erore.
- Es = is, 8/247.
- Esche, *v. inf.* ask, inquire, 139/5.
- Eschend, *p.p.* shamed, disgraced, 221/343.
- Ese, *v. inf.* ease, 232/326.
- Este, 70/355, Estin, 131/474, *s.* luxury, dainty.



- Eten, 9/272, Ete, 38/30, 54/614, *v. inf. eat*; *pret. sg. 3. et*, 38/44.
- Epe, *adv. easily*, 64/181, 71/368.
- Epelyng, *s. noble*, 106/74.
- Eper, *pron. either*, 131/460.
- Eperling, *s. prince, noble, atheling*, 141/17.
- Epgete, *adj. easy to get*, 74/71.
- Ep-sene, *adj. easily seen, evident*, 70/338.
- Eu, 37/1, 40/120, Ev, 55/650, *pron. you*.
- Euch, *adj. each, every*; *n. s. m. euch*, 162/4, *vych*, 163/4; *d. s. m. ewiche*, 61/85.
- Eue, *s. evening*, 51/503, 190/79.
- Euel, *adj. evil, bad*; *def. -e*, 30.
- Eueliche, *adj. equal*, 90/2.
- Euelike, *adj. heavenly (things)*, 10/300 (*celestia*—see 204/119).
- Euelyche, *adv. evenly*, 106/79.
- Euencristen, *s. fellow christian*, 226/102.
- Euenyng, *s. equal*, 95/84, *fellow*, 38/47; *pl. -es*, 64/168.
- Euen-sterre, *s. evening star*, 24/766.
- Euerich, 30, Euerych, 55/625, Euerych, 40/95, Euervich, 38/48, *adj. n. s. m. every*; *g. s. m. eueriches*, 107/84; *d. s. m. eueruche*, 182/238, *euervyche*, 183/238.
- Euerte, *adv. ever*, 31.
- Euervychon, 92/78, *every one*; *d. s. -e*, 54/617.
- Euerwich, York, 146/29.
- Euethen, *s. pl. efts, newts*, 67/271.
- Eur, *adj. your*; *n. s. m. eur*, 46/319; *d. s. f. eure*, 47/339; *a. pl. eoure*, 190/90.
- Eure, *adv. ever*, 16/518, 24/751.
- Eurile, 11/345, 12/372, *adj. every*.
- Everwich-schire, Yorkshire, 146/45.
- Evovae, 90/10.
- Ewiche. *See* Euch.
- Excestre, Exeter, 145/21.
- Exsene, *s. countenance, face*, 196/36.
- E3e. *See* Eye.
- E3e-puttes, *s. pl. eye-pits*, 182/241.
- Fader, 28, Fadir, 105/54, Vader, 41/157, *s. father*; *g. s. fader*, 37/14, *vader*, 54/585; *d. s. fadere*, 37/7, *vedere*, 55/624.
- Fagen, 16/510, 17/531, Vayn, 150/128, *adj. glad*.
- Faht. If *faht* is correct it is a *p.p.* = fought, but it may = *sah*t, at peace with, reconciled, 90/8(2).
- Faier, *adj. fair*, 24/765; *comp. fairere*, 23/734.
- Faires, *s. pl. goods*, 133/520.
- Falewi, 156/6, Falwy, 157/6, *v. inf. grow yellow or pale, fade*; *ind. pres. 3 s. falewidp*, 134/579; *pl. faleweþ*, 93/16.
- Fallen, *v. inf. fall*; *ind. pres. pl. fallen*, 3/72; *pret. sg. 3. feol*, 187/8, *fel*, 53/580, *vel*, 186/8; *pl. veollen*, 42/188, *vellen*, 52/542; *p.p. ifalle*, 170/26, *fallen*, 22/693.
- Fals, *adj.* 94/44.
- False, *v. inf. break up*, 97/124.
- Faren, *v. inf. go*, 23/731; *inf. vare*, 64/176; *subj. pres. sg. fare*, 4/114; *p.p. ifaren*, 172/66, *faren*, 23/721.
- Fariseus, 39/72, Faryseus, 39/57, *s. pl. Pharisees*.
- Fast, *adv.* 7/212.
- Fasten, *v. fast*; *ind. pres. sg. 3. fasteð*, 5/126.
- Faten, *s. pl. vessels*, 29.
- Fawe, *adj. few*, 70/341.

- Fe, *s.* property, 115/191.  
 Feaue, *adj.* few, 34.  
 Feble, *adj.* bad, poor, 188/41.  
 Fecchen, *v.* fetch; *inf.* vecche, 53/574; *ind. pres. sg.* 3. fecheč, 8/242, feccheč, 13/391; *subj. pres. pl.* fecchen, 11/352.  
 Feden, *v.* feed; 3. fedeč, 23/740, fet, 10/301, 14/439; *subj. pres. sg.* fede, 10/304.  
 Feg, *v. imp. sg.* 2. cleanse, 7/210.  
 Feid (?), 86/3.  
 Feir, 172/72, Veyr, 173/72, *adj.* fair, beautiful; *pl.* veyre, 55/645; *def.* voire, 32.  
 Feye, *adj. def.* fated to die, 112/170.  
 Fel. *See* Fallen.  
 Fel, *s.* fell, skin, 5/126, 7/203.  
 Felarede, *s.* fellowship, society, 31.  
 Feld, *s.* field; *d. s.* -e, 13/400.  
 Fele, 12/385, Feole, 44/256, 65/208, Vale, 73/26, 128/418, Vele, 39/53, *adj.* many.  
 Fele, *adv.* much, 114/196.  
 Felen, *v.* feel; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* feleč, 13/415; *pl.* felen, 16/510; fele, 21/675.  
 Felewep, *v.* 3 *s.* follows, 70/340.  
 Fen, *s.* 150/119, dirt, 24/766.  
 Fend. *See* Feond.  
 Feo, 95/70, Ueo, 91/29, *s.* property, wealth.  
 Feole. *See* Fele.  
 Feond, 188/34, Veond, 52/549, Vend, 39/60, Fend, 14/450, *s.* fiend, devil.  
 Feor, *adv.* far, 98/153.  
 Feorre, *adj.* far, 85/47.  
 Feorpe, *adj.* fourth, 145/10.  
 Fer, *adv.* far, 11/352.  
 Fer, *s.* fire, 30; *d. s.* uerée, 28.  
 Ferde, *v. ind. pret.* 3 *s.* went, came about, 139/5; *pl.* ferd, fared, 213/90.  
 Fere, *s.* ? power, reliance, 95/79.  
 Fere, *s.* companion, 136/645.  
 Fere, 210/4. In fere = together.  
 Ferlich, 156/15, Ferlych, 157/15, *adj.* strange.  
 Ferly, *adv.* 86/3.  
 Ferst, *adv.* first, 29.  
 Feschis, *s. pl.* fishes, 212/55.  
 Feste, *s.* feast, 39/85, 66/237.  
 Feste, *v.* fast; *p.p.* yuast, 38/30.  
 Festen, *v.* make fast, fix; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* festeč, 15/463; *pl.* festen, 17/533; *imp.* 2 *s.* feste, 6/182, 7/211.  
 Festen, *s.* fast, fasting, 63/151.  
 Fet. *See* Feden.  
 Fečres, *s. pl.* feathers, 3/72.  
 Fet-steppes, *s. pl.* footsteps, 1/7.  
 Fyfte, *adj.* fifth, 145/11.  
 Figteč, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* fights, 6/158; *i. p.* figtande, 6/159.  
 Fiht, *s.* fight, 143/75.  
 Fikeč, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* is busy, fidges, 21/656.  
 Fikil, 125/355, *adj.* false, deceitful; *def.* fikele, 196/30.  
 Filde. *See* Filče.  
 Fille, *s.* fill, 14/422, 15/485.  
 Fillen, *v. inf.* fill, fulfil, 12/381; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* filleč, 1/8.  
 Filsten, *v. inf.* support, help, 135/604; *ind. pret. sg.* 3. filstnede, 2/44.  
 Filče, 7/202, Filde (a mis-writing), 7/210, *s.* filth, foulness.  
 Fin, *adj.* fine, fair, 25/780.  
 Fyn, *s.* end, 144/95.  
 Fynd, *s.* fiend, devil, 215/140; *pl.* fyndis, 215/159.  
 Finden, *v. inf.* find, 1/12, *inf.* finde, 27, vinden, 60/53, vynde,

- 53/566; *ind. pres. sg.* 1. vynde, 47/369; 2. fyndestu, 92/73; 3. fint, 10/292, findeš, 17/546; *pl.* vyndeš, 37/2; *pret. sg.* 3. funde, 42/166, fond, 33, vunde, 39/74; *pl.* funden, 49/445, funde, 46/325, fonden, 33; *p.p.* ifunde, 94/55, yfunde, 42/185, hifunde, 27, ifonden, 27.
- Finnes, *s. pl.* fins, 18/564.
- Fint. *See* Finden.
- Fir, *s.* fire, 5/149, 17/538.
- Firmest, *adv.* at first, 7/213.
- Firste, *adj.* 21/675.
- Fis, *s.* fish, 16/499; *d. s.* visse, 54/615; *pl.* fisses, 16/509, fysses, 61/82.
- Fisiologet, *Physiologus*, 10/310.
- Fleges, *s. pl.* flies, 15/473.
- Flegeš, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* flies, 3/64, 22/702.
- Flehs. *See* Flesc.
- Flemed, *p.p.* banished, 196/36.
- Flen. *See* Fleon.
- Fleon, *v. inf.* fly, flee, 97/129; *inf.* fleo, 94/29, fen, 11/354; *ind. pres. sg.* 3. fleš, 5/148; *subj. pres. pl.* fleo, 148/32.
- Flerd, deceit, 14/452.
- Flesc, 193/34, Flehs, 196/10, Fles, 5/136, 131/470, Fleys, 147/19, 152/178, *s.* flesh; *d. s.* flesce, 28, flessce, 28, fleyse, 139/6.
- Flesliche, *adv.* carnally, 27.
- Flet, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* floats, 16/502.
- Fleys. *See* Flesc.
- Flight, *s.* flight, 3/59/70.
- Flore, *s.* floor, 101/8.
- Flopre, *s. pl.* flakes, 149/74.
- Flour, 195/28, Flur, 97/151, 195/2, *s.* flower.
- Flum, *s.* river, 38/25, 92/75.
- Flur. *See* Flour.
- Fo, *v. inf.* take, receive, 80/246.
- Fod, 9/287, Fode, 3/80, 4/118, *s.* food.
- Fodredes, *s. pl.* means or mode of getting food, sustenance, 15/464.
- Foh, 164/28, Fouh, 165/28, Fou, 70/357, *s.*; *d. s.* fowe, 39/66.
- Foyre, *s.* fire, 211/30.
- Fokel, *adj.* = frakel, despicable, vile, 119/255, 123/349.
- Foken, *v. ind. pres. pl.* quarrel, 132/485.
- Fol, *s.* fool, 95/80.
- Folc, 172/63, Folk, 173/63, *s.* folk, people.
- Folde, *s.* fold (of sheep), 2/48, 19/607.
- Fole. *See* Ful.
- Folgen, 18/554, Folewen, 92/55, *v. inf.* follow; *ind. pres. sg.* 3. folegeš, 17/546, 24/757; *pl.* folegen, 11/356; *pret.* folgede, 31.
- Folies, *s. pl.* follies, 30.
- Fol-vellet, *v. imp. pl.* 2. fill full, 29.
- Fon, *s. pl.* foes, 115/190.
- Fond, Fonden. *See* Finden.
- Fondeš, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* tries, 21/656; *p.p.* ifonded, 63/153.
- Fongen, 162/4, Fongon, 180/196, *v. inf.* receive; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* fop, 126/407.
- Font, *s.* 90/2(2).
- Forbeoden, *v.* forbid; *ind. pres. sg.* 3. forbedeš, 10/298; forbid, 28; *pret. sg.* 3. forbed, 51/496, 53/581; *p.p.* forbode, 186/14.
- Forberen, *v.* forbear, spare; *imp. sg.* 2. forber, 41/158; *p.p.* for-bore, 188/52, forborn, 226/110.
- Forbernen, *v. inf.* burn up, consume, 162/11.
- Forbisne, 14/424, Forbysne, 148/25, *s.* example; *pl.* forbisnes, 10/308.

- Forbished, *adj.* serving as an example; *d. s.* -e, 19/589.
- Forbod, *s.* prohibition, 129/444, 228/179.
- Forbode. *See* Forbeoden.
- For-bore. *See* Forberen.
- Forbreðes, *v. ind. pres. 2 s.* decayest, 6/174.
- Forbroiden, *p.p.* decayed, 5/124.
- Forbroken, *p.p.* broken up (with age), 5/124.
- Forcup, wicked, 124/357.
- Ford = forth, *adv.* 136/618.
- Fordeme, *v. inf.* condemn, 91/18; *p.p. pl.* for-demde, 67/268.
- Fordi. *See* Forði.
- Fordon, 15/455, Fordo, *v. inf.* destroy, ruin, 156/30; *pret. pl.* furduden, 151/141; *p.p.* fordon, 67/268.
- Fordriuen, *p.p.* driven, 17/527.
- Fore, *prep.* for, 28.
- Fore-zeuen, *p.p.* forgiven, 218/230.
- Forewerd, *s.* covenant; *d. s.* -e, 33.
- Forfarin, *v. inf.* perish, 117/222.
- For-freten, *v. pret. pl.* gnawed, 226/122.
- Forgelues, *v. ind. pres. 2 s.* forfeits, 6/175.
- Forgeten, *v.* forget; *ind. pres. sg.* 3. for-yeteþ, 114/208; *pl.* forgeten, 18/574; *p.p.* foryeten, 147/20, for-yete, 61/98.
- Forgo, *v. inf.* forgo, 190/83; *subj. pres. sg.* fur-go, 196/20.
- For-hele, *v. imp.* conceal, hide, 117/244.
- Forholde, *p.p.* kept too long, 149/78.
- Forhole, *p.p.* concealed, 60/76.
- For-hwi, *adv.* wherefore, 170/31.
- For-lere, *v. imp. 2 s.* unlearn, forget (?), 136/640.
- Forlesen, *v. lose*; *ind. pres. sg.* 3. forlesed, 115/206, forliest, 31; *p.p.* forloren, 3/85, forlore, 194/19.
- Forleten, *v. inf.* leave, forsake, 114/190; *ind. pres. sg.* 3. forleteð, 9/260; *imp. pl.* 2. forleted, 32.
- Forlore, Forloren. *See* Forlesen.
- Forme, *adj.* first, 65/195.
- Formeste, *adj.* first, 31.
- Fornon, *adv.* in vain, 149/92.
- For-rotien, 178/169, For-rotyen, 179/169, *v. inf.* rot.
- Forsaken, *v.* forsake, renounce; *ind. pres. 3 s.* forsaket, 4/96.
- Forstole, *p.p.* stolen away, 192/9.
- For-swolehen, 180/215, For-swolewe, 181/215, *v. inf.* swallow, devour.
- Forswu[n]ken, tired with overwork, 121/291.
- Fort, *conj.* until, 186/19; fort þet, 50/478, fort þat, 190/87.
- Forteoþ, *v. ind. pres. pl.* exhibit, show (themselves), 122/334.
- Forð, *adv.* 5/130.
- Forþan, *adv.* on that account, 196/14.
- Forðen, *v. inf.* accomplish, 6/155, 21/657; *ind. pres. pl.* forðen, 12/367.
- Forði, 9/283, 13/395, Fordi, 6/179, *adv.* therefore.
- For-þrast, perverse, reprobate, 224/34.
- Forðwant, *v.* goes away, 193/16.
- Forðward, *adv.* henceforth, 7/215, 11/348.
- Forðward, *s.* covenant, 7/211.
- Forto = to before infinitives, 13/403, 168/14.
- For-vare, *v. inf.* perish, 116/221; *ind. pres. 3 s.* for-vareþ, ruins, 124/366.
- Forwerpen, *v. inf.* cast off, 11/345.
- Forwreye, *v. inf.* accuse, 61/97.

- Forwurðen, *v.* perish; *ind. pres.* 2 *s.* forwurðes, 6/175; *subj. pres. sg.* forwurðe, 9/270; *p.p.* forwurden, 5/125.
- Forwumen, *v.* 3 *s.* neglects, 114/207.
- Foryete, Foryeten. *See* Forgeten.
- Fot, *s.* foot; *pl.* fet, 53/582, vét, 54/605.
- Fop. *See* Fongen.
- Fou, Foh. *See* Foh.
- Foule. *See* Ful.
- Fournes, *s.* furnace, 211/28.
- Fowe. *See* Foh.
- Foweles. *See* Fugel.
- Fox, *s.* 12/386; *g. s.* -es, 13/414; *adj.* ? sly, 156/15, 157/15.
- Foxing, *s.* a foxlike trick, 14/435.
- Frakel, *adj.* worthless, 93/12; frakele, 118/257, 122/349.
- Fram, *prep.* from, 193/15.
- Frame, *s.* advantage, profit, benefit, 2/39, 14/425.
- Frayny, *v. subj. pres. sg.* ask, inquire, 92/73; *ind. pret.* 3 *s.* fraynd, 212/73.
- Frecche, bold, fierce, 75/106.
- Freeten. *See* Freten.
- Fremannes, *s. g. s.* freeman's, 128/417.
- Fremed, *adj.* strange; *def.* -e, 59/35.
- Frendchipe, *s.* 125/371.
- Freomen, *s. pl.* 86/3.
- Freond, *s.* friend, 92/73; *pl.* freond, 175/97, frond, 174/97, frend, 39/59.
- Freten, *v.* eat, devour; *ind. pres. sg.* 3. fret, 14/422, 15/485, fretes, 16/497; *pl.* fretes, 151/148; *pret. pl.* fretten, 229/218; *p.p.* ifreten, 147/19, ifrete, 152/183.
- Fryp, 108/92, Frit, 109/92, *s.* peace.
- Fro, *prep.* from, 5/148, 7/202; fro—ward, 23/719.
- Fromward, *adj.* froward, perverse, 94/45.
- Fron. *See* Freond.
- Froren, *p.p.* frozen, 151/150.
- Froueren, *v.* comfort, 135/594.
- Frouh, *adj.* loose, unsteady, 94/44.
- Froure, 90/9, Frouer, 104/26, Frowere, 105/26/54, *s.* comfort.
- Froyt, *s.* fruit, 215/146.
- Fruden, *s. pl.* ferrets, 67/271.
- Frume, *s.* first, beginning, 87/2.
- Frumpe, *s.* beginning, 110/129, 142/30.
- Fueles. *See* Fugel.
- Fugel, *s.* fowl, bird; *pl.* fugeles, 13/403, fuweles, 61/82, foweles, 148/32, fueles, 149/64, fules, 13/410.
- Fuir, 224/28, Fuyre, 212/54, *s.* fire.
- Ful, *adj.* full, 6/183; *pl.* fulle, 5/127.
- Ful, *adj.* foul, 180/206; *d. s.* fule, 159/33, fole, 158/33; *def.* foule, 195/44; *comp.* fulre, fouler, 150/123.
- Fule, *adv.* foully, 164/48.
- Ful-endy, *v. inf.* complete, 66/239.
- Fules. *See* Fugel.
- Fuliwis, 18/563, Fuligewis, 20/632, indeed, truly.
- Fulle, *v. inf.* fill, fulfil, 70/344; *ind. pres. pl.* fullep, 188/38; *p.p.* ifulled, 149/81, ifuld, 154/252.
- Fully, *v. inf.* baptize, 56/674; *ind. pret. sg.* 3. fulewede, 92/75; *pl.* fullede, 56/678; *p.p.* ifulled, 151/142.
- Fulluht, *s.* baptism, 90/2(2).
- Fulre. *See* Ful.
- Fulpe, *s.* filth, 158/33.

- Funde. *See* Finden.  
 Funde, *v. inf.* depart, 94/51; *ind. pres. pl.* funden, 134/553.  
 Funden. *See* Finden.  
 Fundie, *v. 1 s.* try, 192/7(2).  
 Funt-fat, *s.* font-vessel, font, 4/108.  
 Fur, *s.* fire, 162/9.  
 Fur-berninde, 180/216, Furbernynde, 181/216, Furberninge, 180/198, *i. p.* burning.  
 Furbrend, *p.p.* burnt, 152/181.  
 Furduden. *See* Fordon.  
 Furg, *s.* furrow, 13/400.  
 Fur-go. *See* Forgo.  
 Fur-leosen, *v. inf.* lose, 97/130; *p.p.* fur-lore, 38/23.  
 Fur-sake, *v. inf.* deny, 41/142; *p.p.* fur-saken, forsaken, 196/23, fursake, denied, 45/300.  
 Fur-stole, *p.p.* stolen away, 53/556.  
 Fury, *adj.* fiery, 56/660.  
 Fuweles. *See* Fugel.  
 Fy . . . . *See* Fi . . . .
- Ga. *See* Gon.  
 Gabbe, *v. ind. pres. pl.* deceive, cheat, 188/36; *imp. 2 s.* gabbe, 126/411.  
 Gadeling, 121/313, Gadelyng, 44/263, Gedelyng, 120/312, *s.* fellow.  
 Gaddreð, *v. ind. pres. 3 s.* gathers, 8/244.  
 Gaderares, *s. pl.* gatherers, 67/265.  
 Gal, *s.* song, 97/126.  
 Gal, *s.* the gall, 151/153.  
 Gal, *adj.* lascivious, 148/56.  
 Galile, 55/647, Galyle, 41/136, Galilee.  
 Galilewis, *adj.* Galilean, 45/286.
- Galle, *s.* gall, 25/789.  
 Galous, *s. pl.* gallows, 221/344.  
 Galun, *s.* gallon, 188/37.  
 Gandre, *s.* gander, 13/392.  
 Gangen, *v. inf.* go, 5/129; *ind. pres. 3 s.* gangeð, 7/199, 8/239; *pl.* gangen, 6/185; *i. p.* gangande, 21/654.  
 Gapeð, *v. ind. pres. 3 s.* gapes, 16/506.  
 Gast, *s.* spirit, 17/550.  
 Gaele, *s.* tribute, 46/329; *d. s.* -e, usury, 150/128.  
 Gaeulers, *s. pl.* usurers, 150/130.  
 Gaeulinge, *s.* usury, 31.  
 Gayhol, *s.* gaol, 153/219.  
 Ge, *pron.* she, 8/235/250.  
 Ge, *pron.* ye, 4/89; *gen.* gure, 103/15, 105/28; *dat.* gu, 21/673; *ac.* gu, 105/29.  
 Ge, *adv.* yea, 111/143.  
 Gedelyng. *See* Gadeling.  
 Gef, *conj.* if, 12/361, 16/502.  
 Geld, 14/440, Gelt, 13/418, *v. ind. pres. 3 s.* repays.  
 Gemen, *v. inf.* keep, guard, 11/348.  
 Gemme, *s.* gem, jewel, 98/163.  
 Genteleri, *s.* gentility (?), 138/708.  
 Gentile, *adj.* gentle, 138/707.  
 Ger, *s. pl.* years, 20/616.  
 Gerlde, *s.* world, 113/182.  
 Germane, *seynte*, St Germain, 145/18.  
 Gersumme, *s. a. pl.* treasures, 76/116.  
 Get = ge it, she it, 9/269.  
 Get, *adv.* yet, still, 3/78, 4/111.  
 Getep, *v. ind. pres. pl.* get, 91/41.  
 Geuelic, ? gift, 8/232.  
 Geuelike, ? gift, 10/302, 23/730.  
 Geus, *s. pl.* Jews, 26.

- Geynep, *v. ind. pres. sg.* 3. avails, 92/69.
- Gydhede, *s.* giddiness, folly, 143/60.
- Gif, *conj.* if, 132/497.
- Gile, *s.* guile, 137/664.
- Gilot, 190/73, Gilothe, 191/73.
- Gin, *s.* snare, 20/645, contrivance; *d. s.* ginne, 178/160, gynne, 153/238.
- Gyn, *s.* machinations, 144/93.
- Ging, *adj.* young, 7/214.
- Gingen, *v. inf.* make young again, 11/347; *ind. pres. sg.* 3. gingid, 11/327.
- Ginnen, *v.* begin; *ind. pres.* 3. *s.* ginnid, 127/401; *pret. sg.* 1. gon, 81/273; 3. gon, 38/32; *pl.* gunnen, 48/382, 67/270.
- Giscing, *s.* covetousness, 11/333.
- Gise, *s.* wise, manner, 111/136.
- Giu, 125/351. *Read* Gin, begin.
- Gyv, *s.* Jew, 47/351; *pl.* Giwes, 198/23, Gywes, 40/113, Gyues, 42/178, Gyus, 26, Gius, 29; *g. pl.* Gywene, 46/332.
- Giuen, *v. inf.* give, 111/135; *ind. pres.* 3. *s.* giueð, 12/377.
- Giuerneſſe, *s.* greediness, gluttony, 11/334.
- Gladye, *v. inf.* gladden, 42/164.
- Gladnesse, *s.* 54/612.
- Glareth, *v.* shines, 27.
- Gle, *s.* music, (used ironically) song, 91/28.
- Gled, *adj.* glad, 94/52, 188/66.
- Glede, *s.* spark, burning coal, 43/230.
- Glede, *s.* glade, 120/315.
- Glednesse, *s.* gladness, 104/48.
- Gleo, *s.* music, mirth, 97/126, 158/40.
- Gleo, *s.* craft, 141/7.
- Gleu, 105/47, Gleaw, 104/47, Glev, 124/362, *adj.* wise.
- Gliden, *v. inf.* glide, 136/618; *ind. pres.* 3. *s.* glyt, 94/32; *pl.* glideþ, 174/108; *pret. pl.* glyde, 175/108; *p.p.* iglyden, 95/71.
- Glysyinde, *i. p.* glistening, 91/21.
- Glyt. *See* Gliden.
- Glorius, *adj.* 27.
- Glotery, *s.* gluttony, 217/225.
- Gloucestre schire, 146/52.
- Glutunie, *s.* gluttony, 31.
- Gnede, *adj.* scanty, 92/48.
- Gnyde, *v. inf.* crumble, be crushed, 114/201.
- Gnowen, *v. pret. pl.* gnawed, 225/62.
- God, 12/377, Godd, 192/8(2), *s.* God; *d. s.* Gode, 4/116.
- God, *adj.* good, 13/405; *a. s. m.* godne, 106/75; *def. -e*, 81/289.
- Godcundhede, *s.* divinity, 19/592.
- Godcundnesse, 25/780, Godcunnesse, 37/15, *s.* divinity.
- Goddede, *s.* good deed, benefit, 81/291.
- Goddede = Godhede, *s.* Godhead, 139/6.
- Godelike, *adj.* goodly, 121/314.
- Godes, *s. pl.* goods, 28.
- Godfullyche, *adv.* joyfully, kindly, 90/4.
- Godlyche, *adj.* goodly, 120/313.
- Godspel, *s.* gospel, 7/205; *d. s.* -le, 37/2.
- Goed, *adj.* good, 111/141.
- Gold, *s.* 97/146.
- Golsipe, *s.* lasciviousness, 11/333, 19/611.
- Gome, *s.* care, heed, 45/269, 74/61.
- Gomen, 160/33, Gome, 190/78, *s.* game, sport.
- Gon. *See* Ginnen.

- Gon, *v. inf.* go, walk, 39/55, 45/279; *ind. pres. sg.* 3. goð, 3/82, goth, 28; *pl.* gon, 19/606; *pret.* 3 *s.* eode, 43/212, yede, 26; *subj. pres. pl.* gon, 2/52; *imp. sg.* 2. ga, 38/38, go, 7/204; *pl.* 2. goþ; *p.p.* igan, 147/18, igon, 41/125, gon, 197/1.
- Goodman, *s.* 33.
- Gos, *s.* goose, 13/392.
- Gost, *s.* Spirit, 56/660.
- Gostlich, *adj.* spiritual, 32.
- Gostliche, *adv.* spiritually, 27.
- Goule, *v. inf.* wail, 228/189; *ind. pret. pl.* gouleden, 224/40, gouled, 225/94.
- Goulyng, *s.* wailing, 230/248.
- Grace, *s.* 4/119.
- Gradden. *See* Grede.
- Granti, 36, Graunty, 57/703, *v. subj. pres. sg.* grant.
- Graueþ, *v.* buries, 92/67.
- Grauntebrugge schire, Cambridge-shire, 146/48.
- Gray, 94/28, 96/106, Grei, 164/28, Grey, 165/28, *s.* a sort of fur.
- Great, *adj.* 31.
- Grede, *v. inf.* cry out, 77/167; *ind. pret. pl.* gredden, 49/426, gradden, 47/373; *imp. pl.* 2. greded, 32.
- Gredi, *adj.* greedy, 67/261.
- Gredilike, *adv.* greedily, 10/321.
- Grei, Grey. *See* Gray.
- Greyþi, *v. inf.* prepare, 84/9.
- Grene, *adj.* green, 92/69.
- Grennen, *v. inf.* grin, 138/688.
- Greote, *s.* grit, 92/67.
- Greowe, Greu, Grewen. *See* Growen.
- Gres, *s.* grass, 8/246, 93/16, 110/126.
- Greslë, *adj.* grisly, horrible, 211/33.
- Gret, *adj.* great; *pl.* grete, 16/516.
- Grete, *v. inf.* greet, salute, 166/72; *ind. pres. 1 s.* grete, 139/1.
- Gretynge, *s.* greeting, 100/1.
- Greunyn, *v. ind. pres. pl.* grieve, offend, 211/23.
- Griat, *adj.* great, 33.
- Gryd, *v. pret.* cried out, 215/160.
- Grym, *adj.* fierce, 50/469.
- Grimlych, *adj.* dreadful, 63/141.
- Grip, *s.* vulture; *pl.* gripes, 151/148.
- Gripen, *v. inf.* grasp, seize, 114/192, 172/76.
- Grisbatyng, *s.* gnashing, grinding (of teeth), 230/248.
- Grysligh, *adj.* horrible, 91/28.
- Grip, 143/75, Gryþ, 108/91, Gryt, 109/91, *s.* peace.
- Gryv, *s.* Greek, 50/470.
- Grome, *s.* anger, 39/72, 83/335.
- Groning, 25/797, Gronynge, 91/28, *s.* groaning.
- Ground, *s.* pit, 230/246.
- Growen, *v.* grow; *ind. pret. pl.* grewen, 48/384; *subj. pret. sg.* greowe, 110/125, greu, 111/125.
- Gruechede, *v. pret. pl.* murmured, 34.
- Grund, *s.* bottom, 3/74, 12/365; *d. s. -e*, pit, abyss, 77/163, ground, foundation, 98/154.
- Grundwal, *s.* foundation, 97/124.
- Grure, *s.* horror, 91/28.
- Gry . . . . *See* Gri . . . .
- Gu. *See* Ge.
- Gu, *adv.* how, 105/31.
- Gueþe, *s.* youth, 113/157.
- Gult, *s.* guilt, 47/342, 65/195.
- Gume, *s.* man, 135/594.
- Gung, *adj.* young, 121/287; *def. -e*, 135/613.



Gungling, *s.* young one, 21/667.

Gunnen. *See* Ginnen.

Gurd, *v. pret.* smote, 216/180.

Gurdel, *s.* girdle, 193/16.

Gure. *See* Ge.

Guðshede, *s.* youth, 3/55.

Gy . . . . *See* Gi . . . .

Ha. *See* He.

Ha = have, 230/276.

Habben, *v. inf.* have, 72/8; *inf.* hauen, 7/196, hawen, 121/300; *ind. pres. sg.* 1. habbe, 28,—‘ich habbe’ is often written ‘ic chabbe,’ 196/15, haue, 21/673; 2. hauest, 83/334, hawest, 115/198; 3. hafð, 170/54, hafþ, 42/175, 62/117, haueð, 1/15, hauet, 195/42, hait, 119/282, hawit, 123/328, haid, 115/204, hað, 192/9, hath, 28, hauez, 195/44; *pl.* habbeþ, 81/288, habbet, 28, hauen, 8/237, han, 214/129; *pret. sg.* 3. hedde, 37/13; *pl.* hedden, 39/57, hedde, 37/6; *subj. pret. sg.* 2. heuedest, 180/189; *pl.* heueden, 154/265; *imp. sg.* 2. haue, 92/78, hawe, 129/418; *p.p.* iheued, 85/34.

Hac = ac, but, 29.

Hachte = ahte, *s.* property, 133/522.

Hafð, Hafþ. *See* Habben.

Hayl, *int.* 48/387.

Haite = ahte, *s.* property, 137/665.

Haleghen, *s. pl.* saints, 31.

Haleð, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* draws, 8/248, 13/394.

Halewe, *s. d. pl.* saints, 57/706.

Half, *s.* side, 146/30.

Haly, *adj.* holy, 90/1.

Haliday, *s.* holy day, 188/62; *pl.* -es, 200/3.

Haliweie, *s.* balsam, 24/749.

Halle, *s.* hall, 170/30.

Halt. *See* Holden.

Halweþ, *v.* 3 *s.* hallows, 232/337.

Ham. *See* He.

Han. *See* Habben.

Hard, *adj.*; *pl.* -e, 9/281.

Harde, *adv.* hard, sore, 9/286, 20/623.

Hardy, *adj.* bold, 40/98.

Hardilike, *adv.* boldly, 8/239.

Harm-dedes, *s. pl.* deeds of harm, 13/389.

Has = ha is, he them, 28, line 7 from below.

Hasteliche, *adv.* hastily, quickly, 29.

Hað, Hath. *See* Habben.

Hatie, *v. inf.* hate, 28; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* hatieð, 13/395; *pl.* hatied, 36, hatien, 13/396, haten, 13/388.

Hatte. *See* Hoten.

Hatture. *See* Hot.

Haue, Hauen, Hauet, Haueð, Hauez. *See* Habben.

He = high, 221/334.

He, *pron.*; *n. s. m.* he, 37/7, heo, 44/253, ha, 27; *g. s. m.* his, 37/7, is, 105/58, 194/15; *d. s. m.* him, 38/32; *a. s. m.* hine, 186/21, hyne, 38/33, hin, 27, him, 1/14; *n. s. n.* hit, 37/20; *g. s. n.* his; *a. s. n.* hit, 59/49, hid, 123/328; *n. s. f.* heo, 45/280, hi, 29, hye, 29, hie, 121/292, he, 119/277, hue, 119/273; *g. s. f.* hire, 13/421, here, 29; *d. s. f.* hire, 9/271, ire, 8/247; *a. s. f.* heo, 49/435, hi, 118/253, 118/275, hire, 158/3, hirne, 160/26; *n. pl.* hi, 37/6, 76/141, hy, 54/590, hiþ, 35, hie, 33, heo, 76/128, 188/37, ho, 76/136, 153/225, he, 12/368, hey, 198/24; *g. pl.* hire, 27, heore, 37/6, 76/129, hore, 198/37, here, 153/212, her, 21/679; *d. pl.* heom, 39/87, hem, 13/418; *a. pl.* hi, 110/123, heo, 76/132, heom, 188/34, hem, 13/417, ham, 212/65.

Heaued, 182/227, Heued, 92/54,

Hewit, 125/366, *s.* head.

- Hedd, *v. pret.* 1 *s.* heeded, 193/43.  
 Hedde, Hedden. *See* Habben.  
 Hednesse, *s.* *hednesse*, ease, happiness, 113/154.  
 Hedus, *adj.* hideous, 214/125.  
 Heg, *adj.* high, 2/27.  
 Hege, *adv.* high, loudly, 22/685.  
 Heh, Heye. *See* Heih.  
 Heye, *adv.* high, 99/208.  
 Heih, *adj.* high; *def.* heye, 56/657, 101/3; *comp.* herre, 46/323, 148/34; *superl.* hexte, 44/266; an heh, 190/88, an heyh, 191/88.  
 Heyhte. *See* Hoten.  
 Heil, *adj.* hale, hearty, 3/75, 12/366.  
 Heiz, *adj.* high, 225/66.  
 Heke = eke, also, 103/9, 105/33.  
 Helare. *See* Helere.  
 Helde = 'holde (we),' let (us) hold, 8/233.  
 Helde, *adj. def.* old, 136/614.  
 Helde = elde, age, 113/153, 134/557.  
 Helden, 125/350, 136/620, Helde, 113/168, *v. inf.* hold; *p.p.* helden, 132/491.  
 Helden, *v. inf.* incline, obey, 6/171.  
 Helden = elden, *v. inf.* grow old, 133/536.  
 Helder = elder, older, 136/641.  
 Helen, *v.* conceal; *ind. pret. pl.* helen, 64/166, heled, 227/156.  
 Helen, *v.* heal; *pret. sg.* 3. helde, 39/53; *p.p.* iheld, 50/450.  
 Helere, 32, Helare, 40/115, *s.* Healer, Saviour.  
 Helfred, Alfred, 107/73.  
 Helle, *s.* hell, 11/342.  
 Help, *s.* 43/216, 90/7.  
 Helpen, *v. inf.* help, 12/376; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* helpeð, 8/249; *imp.* 2 *s.* help, 6/184.  
 Help, *sb.* help, 154/274.  
 Hem, *s.*; *d. s.* hemme, 98/167.  
 Hen = ?han, have, 137/672.  
 Hende = ende, *s.* 113/171.  
 Hende, 52/547, Hendy, 155/289, *adj.* courteous, kind.  
 Henne, *adv.* hence, 134/553.  
 Heo. *See* He.  
 Heold = hold, *adj.* faithful; *pl.* -e, 84/10.  
 Heolden. *See* Holden.  
 Heom. *See* He.  
 Heonne, 42/173, 94/26, Honne, 162/44, 196/27, *adv.* hence.  
 Heore. *See* He.  
 Heore = hore, whore, 150/103.  
 Heorte, 81/275, Herte, 6/171, *s.* heart; *pl.* heorten, 37/6.  
 Heou, *s.* hue, complexion, 101/1.  
 Heouelich, *adj.* heavenly; *def.* -e, 56/672; *d. s. f.* heueliche, 55/638.  
 Heuene, 60/74, Houene, 196/21, Heuene, 55/648, *s.* heaven; *g. s.* houene, 195/1.  
 Heoueriche, 90/1, Heouerige, 168/88, Heuen-riche, 2/28, Heueriche, 29, Heueryche, 49/414, *s.* kingdom of heaven.  
 Her, *adv.* here, 2/32, 137/4.  
 Her = er, *adv.* before, 132/489.  
 Her, *s.* hair, 193/19.  
 Herde, *s.* shepherd, 103/10.  
 Here, *pron.* *See* He.  
 Here, *s.* haircloth, 101/10.  
 Here, *s.* army, host, 107/89.  
 Here, *v.* hire, 33; *pret.* herde, 33.  
 Hereforde, 146/25.  
 Hereford-schire, 146/53.  
 Heregong, *s.* ravage of an army, 109/90.  
 Heremon, 145/15.

- Heren, 95/75, *v. inf.* hear; *ind. pres.* 2. herestu, 44/252; *subj. pres. pl.* heren, 2/51; *imp.* 2 *pl.* hereð, 3/61; *p.p.* herd, 19/584.  
 Heren = eren, *s. pl.* ears, 132/494.  
 Herendinge. *See* Erendynge.  
 Herestonkes = heres ponkes, of their own accord, 175/103.  
 Hereþ, *v. ind. pres. pl.* belong, 146/27.  
 Herien, 158/3, Heryen, 56/671, *v. inf.* praise; *ind. pret. pl.* heryeden, 56/659; *i. p.* heryinde, 55/655; *p.p.* iheried, 43/203.  
 Heryng, *s.* herring, 95/86.  
 Herivnge, *s.* harrying, devastation, 108/90.  
 Herknien, *v.* hearken; *imp. sg.* 2. herkne, 20/630, 46/324; *pl.* 2. herknep, 187/1, herknied, 186/1.  
 Herl = earl, 107/74; *pl.* herles, 103/5.  
 Herliche = erliche, *adv.* early, 123/331.  
 Hermyne, *s.* ermine, 70/357.  
 Herodes, Herod, 14/452.  
 Her-of, *adv.* hereof, 12/382, 23/714.  
 Herre. *See* Heih.  
 Herre, *s.* higher one, superior, 46/323.  
 Hert, *s.* hart, 10/307, 11/346; *pl.* -es, 11/349.  
 Herte. *See* Heorte.  
 Hertford schire, 146/46.  
 Her[t]ien, *v. inf.* encourage, 12/364.  
 Her-to, *adv.* hereto, 23/713.  
 Heruest, *s.* harvest, 8/238.  
 Hes, *s.* command, 61/90.  
 Heste, *s.* command, 54/588; *pl.* hesten, 152/172, hestes, 84/10.  
 Het. *See* Hoten.  
 Hete, *s.* hate, 38/31.  
 Hete, *s.* heat, 3/72, 192/3.  
 Heten = eten, eat, 17/537.  
 Hepeling = epeling; *s.* noble, 107/74.  
 Heþene-hode, *s.* heathendom, paganism, 91/38.  
 Heþenesse, *s.* heathendom, the heathen world, 26.  
 Heuë, *adj.* heavy, sad, 216/170.  
 Heued. *See* Heued.  
 Heueden. *See* Habben.  
 Heued-sunne, *s.* capital sin, 37/18.  
 Heuek, *s.* hawk; *g. s.* -es, 25/799.  
 Heueliche. *See* Heouelich.  
 Heuene. *See* Heouene.  
 Heuenes, *s.* heaviness, sadness, 212/45.  
 Heuen-king, *s.* King of heaven, 22/687; *d. s.* heuonkinge, 168/84.  
 Heuen-louerd, *s.* Lord of heaven, 8/227.  
 Heuen-riche, Heueryche. *See* Heouerliche.  
 Heure, *adj.* your, 137/675.  
 Hew, *s.* colour, complexion, 134/579.  
 Hewere, *adv.* ever, 138/689.  
 Hewit. *See* Heued.  
 Hexte. *See* Heih.  
 Hi, Hy. *See* He.  
 Hi, Hic, Hich. *See* Ic.  
 Hid. *See* He.  
 Hid, *s.* hide, skin, 5/144.  
 Hida, 146/42, Hyda, 146/48, *s. pl.* hides.  
 Hiden, *v.* hide; *ind. pres. sg.* 3. hitt, 15/471.  
 Hi-dut, *p.p.* closed, 195/44.  
 Hie, Hye. *See* He.  
 Hye, *s.* haste, 216/183.  
 Hye = ye, 28.  
 Hyedliche, *adv.* hastily, 52/528.

- Hier-of, *adv.* hereof, 193/44.
- Hieš, 192/3, Hyep, 93/21, *v.* 3 *s.* hastens.
- Hif = if, 119/273.
- Hifunde. *See* Finden.
- Higtes, 6/169, Higttest, 6/166, *v.* *ind. pret.* 2 *s.* promisedst.
- Hying, *s.* haste, 49/426, 50/467.
- Hil, *s.* hill, 2/27; *d. s.* hille, 1/1.
- Hylë, *adv.* highly, 214/133, 220/289.
- Hileš, *v.* covers, conceals, 20/642.
- Hille, *adj.* ill, evil, 137/657.
- Him, Hym. *See* He.
- Hin, Hine, Hyne. *See* He.
- Hyndren, *v. pres. pl.* damage, 226/102.
- Hyne, *s. pl.* servants, 82/308.
- Hineselpe, *miswritten for* uniselpe, *s.* misfortune, 111/148.
- Hyng, *v. inf.* hang, 221/344.
- Hirde, *s.* shepherd, 2/48.
- Hirdsype, *s.* (?) safety, protection, 92/48.
- Hire, Hirne. *See* He.
- His = is, 195/41.
- His = them, 34.
- Hise, *g. s.* of He, with plural inflection, 1/7, 3/57.
- Hitt. *See* Hiden.
- Hi3, *s.* haste, 225/61, 230/269.
- Ho = o, *prep.* on, 198/41.
- Ho. *See* He.
- Hokede, *adj. pl.* hooked, 124/365.
- Hoker, *s.* scorn, 137/671.
- Hokerful, *adj.* scornful, 137/670; *def. -e*, 137/665.
- Hokeri, *v. inf.* scorn, mock, 50/456; *ind. pret. pl.* hokerede, 50/449.
- Hol, 42/186, Hool, 31, *adj.* whole; *pl.* hole, 38/50.
- Holde, *adj.* faithful, 38/48, 141/20.
- Holden, 2/46, Holde, 55/625, *v. inf.* hold, keep; *ind. pres. sg.* 3. halt, 96/102, holdeš, 22/696; *pl.* holdep, 189/37, holdet, 188/37; *pret. pl.* heolden, 89/15.
- Holë = holy, 213/84.
- Hole, *s.* 8/248, 15/471.
- Holi, *adj.* holy, 6/172.
- Holt, *adj.* halt, lame; *def. -e*, 39/55.
- Hom, *pron.* them, 214/125.
- Hom, *s.* home, 170/44.
- Hond, *s.* hand; *pl.* honde, 53/582, 54/605, 90/4, honden, 125/365.
- Hondlep, *v. imp. pl.* 2. handle, 54/607.
- Hongen, *v.* hang; *ind. pres. pl.* hongep, 148/39; *pret.* 3 *s.* heng, 50/455; *pl.* honge, 49/439.
- Honne. *See* Heonne.
- Hool. *See* Hol.
- Hoot. *See* Hoten.
- Hope, *s.* 4/104, 18/553.
- Hopen, *v.* hope; *ind. pres. sg.* 3. hopeš, 21/655.
- Hoppen, *v. subj. pres. pl.* hop, 91/35.
- Hord, *s.* treasure, 47/364, 193/25.
- Hordom, *s.* whoredom, 67/249.
- Hore, *adj.* hoar, 215/158; *s.* hoary one, 136/627.
- Hore. *See* He.
- Hore = ore, mercy, 196/21.
- Horeling, *s.* whoremonger, 138/704; *pl.* horlinges, 61/103, 186/29, horlyngs, 187/29.
- Horestonkes, *adv.* = hores ponkes, of their (own) accord, 174/103.
- Horyen, *v. inf.* pollute, defile, 92/47.
- Horn, *s.*; *pl.* -es, 11/325.

- Hors, *s.* horse; *d. s.* -e, 120/313.  
 Hosë, *pron.* whoso, 228/202.  
 Hot, *adj.* 30; *comp.* hatture, hotter, 66/243, 154/254; *superl.* hot-estd, 35.  
 Hoten, *v.* bid, command; *ind. pres. sg.* 3. hot, 29, hoot, 29; *pret. sg.* 3. heyhte, 48/377, 54/591, het, 27.  
 Hoten, *v. inf.* be called, 89/2; *ind. pret. sg.* 3. hatte, 49/436, 84/6.  
 Honeš, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* tarries, 3/69, 17/525; *pl.* houen, 16/511.  
 Houene. *See* Heouene.  
 Housil, *s.* the eucharist, 217/208.  
 Howyen, *v. inf.* be sorrowful, 110/135.  
 Hu, 2/35, Hw, 55/643, 95/76, *adv.* how.  
 Huden, *v.* hide; *p.p.* ihud, 55/645, 139/6.  
 Huding-clop, *s.* veil, 50/480.  
 Hue. *See* He.  
 Hug', 155/288.  
 Huge, †, 138/697, 138/709.  
 Hule, *s.* hole, 8/253.  
 Hulen, *v. ind. pres. pl.* howl at, 13/396.  
 Hulle, *s.* hill, 70/343.  
 Hund, *s.* hound, dog, 154/244.  
 Hundred, 12/369, Hunder, 220/317, *s.*  
 Hunger, *s.* 37/9.  
 Hungren, *v. inf.* hunger, 17/543; *ind. pres. sg.* 3. *used impersonally*, hungreš, 16/506.  
 Hungri, *adj.* 154/244.  
 Hunycomb, *s.* 54/616.  
 Hunte, *s.* hunter, 2/34, 20/636; *g. s.* huntas, 21/672.  
 Huntun, *v. inf.* hunt, 1/2.  
 Huntscuenti, seventy, 110/122.  
 Huntyndune schire, Huntingdonshire, 146/49.  
 Hurde, *s.* shepherd, 102/10.  
 Hure = ure, of us, our, 32, 33, 199/63.  
 Hus, *s.* house, 7/204; *d. s.* huse, 27.  
 Husberner, *s.* houseburner, 30.  
 Husebondes, *s. pl.* husbandmen, 13/388.  
 Hus-rof, *s.* houseroof, 15/463.  
 Hut = ut, out, 194/26.  
 Huuele, *s. d. s.* evil, 111/135.  
 Hw. *See* Hu.  
 Hwam, Hwan. *See* Hwo.  
 Hwao se, *pron.* whoso, 192/12.  
 Hwe = we †, 92/64.  
 Hwel, *s.* wheel, 149/67  
 Hwelfde, *v. ind. pret.* 3 *s.* rolled, 51/513.  
 Hwendes = wendest, goest, 134/569.  
 Hwenene, *adv.* whence.  
 Hwer, *adv.* where, 95/65.  
 Hwes. *See* Hwo.  
 Hweper, *pron.* which of two, 66/232.  
 Hwich, *pron.* which, 40/96, 62/138; hwucche, 193/19.  
 Hwihles, *adv.* whilst, 144/104.  
 Hwile, *s.* time, 39/62; hwile—hwile, at one time—at another time, 193/22.  
 Hwilem, 26, 35, Hwylem, 30, Hwylen, 145/12, Hwile, 89/1, 146/27, *adv.* whilom.  
 Hwilynde, *adj.* transitory, 94/33.  
 Hwyne, *v. inf.* whine, moan, 82/310.  
 Hwit, *adj.* white, 193/19.  
 Hwytobi, Whitby, 146/31.  
 Hwo, *pron.* who; *gen.* hwes, 50/447; *dat.* hwam, 40/103, 57/693,

- hwom, 66/237; *d. s. n. hwan*, 52/519, hwon, 38/49.
- Hwucche. *See* Hwich.
- Hwucchere, (*dat.*) such like, 192/8(2). *Archiv* 88, 372.
- Hwuder, *adv.* whither, 43/214.
- Hy . . . . *See* Hi . . . .
- I, *prep.* in, 56/688.
- Ialde, *adj.* old, 27.
- Ianekin, 188/56, Ianekyn, 189/56, Johnny, Jack.
- Iangel yng, *s.* chattering, prating, 226/108.
- Iangled, *v. pret. pl.* chattered, jangled, 226/109.
- Iaspe, *s.* jasper, 96/115, 98/173.
- I-auhtep, *v. ind. pres. 3 s.* 'vuele i-auhtep,' wickedly (badly) urges or prosecutes (his) suit, 118/255.
- Ibe, been. *See* Bien.
- Ybed, *v. ind. pret. 3 s.* prayed, 42/161.
- Ibede, *p.p.* prayed, 42/165.
- Ibeo, been. *See* Beon.
- Yber, *v. pret. sg. 3.* bare, 37/12.
- Ibere, *s.* bearing, manner, behaviour, 100/4.
- Ibet, amended. *See* Bete.
- Ibete, *v. inf.* amend, 66/234.
- Ibidest, *v. 2 s.* dost control, require obedience of, 128/430.
- Ibidde, *v. inf.* pray, 144/102.
- I-bye, been. *See* Bien.
- Ibod, *s.* command, 128/445.
- I-bore, born. *See* Beren.
- Iborewe, *p.p.* saved, 155/279.
- Ibred, roasted, broiled. *See* Brede.
- Ibrocht, Ibroht, Ibrouhit, Ibroucht, brought. *See* Bringen.
- Ibuld, *p.p.* built, 178/153.
- Ibunde, bound. *See* Binde.
- Iburep, *impers. v.* behoves, 106/75.
- Ic, 9/261, 81/285, Ich, 37/1, 39/68 (miswritten 'Icht,' 180/194), Ihe, 195/4, I, 17/549, Y, 45/287, Hic, 27, 138/706, Hich, 134/576, Hi, 123/336, *pron. I.*
- Ich, Icht. *See* Ic.
- Icheose, *v. inf.* choose, 122/341; *ind. pres. 3 s.* icheosep, 118/257.
- Ichwer, *adv.* eachwhere, everywhere, 61/87.
- I-clopid, *p.p.* clothed, 214/120.
- Iconowe, *p.p.* 178/168; beon iconowe = acknowledge.
- Y-cnowed, *v. 3 s.* knows, 137/672.
- Icomen, come. *See* Cumen.
- Icoren, Y-corene, Icore, Ycore, Icorene, chosen, elect. *See* Cheose.
- Icouere, *v. inf.* gain, 122/342.
- Icume, Ycume. *See* Cumen.
- Icyn, ?, 196/22.
- Icunde, *adj.* natural, native, 56/668.
- Icweme, *adj.* pleasing, 164/24.
- Idel, *adj.* idle, vain, 14/437.
- Idelnesse, *s.* vanity, 58/7, ease, 112/154.
- Idelschipe, 120/286, Idilscipe, 121/286, *s.* idleness.
- Idigt, *p.p.* arranged, 15/469.
- I-do, Ydo, done. *See* Don.
- Ydres, *s. pl.* water-pots, 29.
- I-dryue. *See* Driuin.
- Y-dronken, Idrunke, drunk. *See* Drinken.
- Ierusalem, 39/65.
- If, *conj.* 2/51, 45/268.
- Ifalle, fallen. *See* Fallen.
- Ifaren, gone. *See* Faren.
- Ifere, *s.* companion; *pl.* ifere, 166/76, 172/86, yuere, 167/76.

- I-fere, 227/135, Y-fere, 213/78, *adv.* together.  
 Ifo, *s.* foe, enemy, 158/42, 160/25; *pl.* ifon, 114/191.  
 Ifonded, tried. *See* Fondeð.  
 Ifonden, found. *See* Finden.  
 Y-frede, *v. inf.* feel, perceive, know, 82/316.  
 Ifreten, Ifrete, devoured, eaten. *See* Freten.  
 Ifrore, *p.p.* frozen, 152/181.  
 Ifuld, Ifulled, filled. *See* Fulle.  
 Ifulled, baptized. *See* Fully.  
 Ifunde, Yfunde, found. *See* Finden.  
 Ifurn, *adv.* long ago, 122/335, 193/21.  
 Iglyden, glided. *See* Gliden.  
 Igretten, *v. ind. pret. pl.* greeted, 174/99.  
 Ithalzed, *p.p.* consecrated, 193/39.  
 I-hasted, *v.* 3 *s.* = hastens, 119/253. *See* I-auhtep.  
 Ithat, *p.p.* heated, 148/41.  
 Ithc. *See* Ic.  
 Itheld, healed. *See* Helen.  
 Ithende, *adv.* near, 28.  
 Itherd, praised, 162/15. *See* Herien.  
 Itherd, heard. *See* There.  
 Ithere, *v. inf.* hear, 39/55, i-hure, 102/12, i-herin, 103/14; *ind. pres. sg.* 2. iherest, 124/355; *pret. sg.* 1. ihurde, 193/43; 3. i-herde, 26; *pl.* iherde, 44/247, 54/593; *imp.* 2 *s.* iher, 196/14; *pl.* 2. iheres, 168/1, iheres, 37/1, ihiereth, 27; *p.p.* iherd, 28.  
 Itherede, *v. ind. pret.* 3 *s.* hired, 34.  
 Itheried, praised. *See* Herien.  
 Itherusalem, Jerusalem, 55/654.  
 Ithesuc, Jesus, 139/11; *dat.* Ithesu, 4/98; *ac.* Ithesum, 42/183.  
 Ithialde, *p.p.* held, kept, 30.  
 Ithyed, *p.p.* hurried off, 91/45.  
 Ithierde, *v. ind. pret.* 3 *s.* hired, 34.  
 Ithiereth. *See* There.  
 Ithol, *adj.* whole, 49/445.  
 Ithonge, *p.p.* hung, 141/13.  
 Ithosed, *p.p.* having hosen on, 91/35.  
 Ithud, *p.p.* hid, 55/645.  
 Ithurde, Ithure. *See* There.  
 I-yue, given. *See* Yeue.  
 Ikindled, *p.p.* brought forth, whelped, 1/17.  
 Iknowe, *v. inf.* know, 64/167; *ind. pres. sg.* 1. iknowe, 45/292, yknowe, 41/141, 45/283; 3 *s.* iknowep, 62/137; *pret. sg.* 1. ikneu, 45/288; 3. ykeneu, 43/231; *subj. pret. sg.* iknewe, 45/294, iknowe, 96/89; *p.p.* iknowe, 43/213.  
 Ikud, *p.p.* made known, 64/165.  
 Ilad, led. *See* Lede.  
 Ilast, *v.* 3 *s.* lasts, 85/23.  
 Ilc, 11/344, Ilk, 4/97, *adj.* each, every.  
 Ilche. *See* Ilke.  
 Ylde, *s.* ?power, wielding, or = *hylde* = favour, 96/96.  
 Ildre, *s. g. pl.* parents', 114/185.  
 Iled, led. *See* Lede.  
 Ilef. *See* lleuen.  
 Ileid, laid. *See* Leggen.  
 Ilek, Ileke. *See* Ilke.  
 Ilearn, *v. inf.* learn, 93/3.  
 Ilesed, *p.p.* liberated, 62/136.  
 Ilest, *v. inf.* perform, 66/238. *Ger. leisten.*  
 Ilest, *v. inf.* last, endure, 116/224, 126/387; 3. i-lest, 93/22.  
 lleuen, 67/251, lleue, 46/308, 64/174, *v. inf.* believe; *imp. sg.* 2. ilef, 114/196.

- Ilyche, *adj.* alike, equal, 54/586.  
 Ilyche, *adv.* alike, equally, 60/67, 124/376.  
 Ilik, *adj.* like, 14/444 ; ilike, 18/558.  
 Ilk = each. *See* Ilc.  
 Ilke, *adj. def.* same, 182/223, ilche, 41/158, 142/49, ileke, 28, ilken, 223/5.  
 Ilkines = ilc kines, of every kind, 8/244.  
 Ille, *adj.* evil, bad, 17/526, 60/73.  
 Ille, *adv.* ill, 137/652.  
 Illing, *s.* malice, 13/419.  
 Ilome, *adv.* frequently, 62/125, 74/64, 168/22.  
 Ilong, *adv.* along (of), 158/1.  
 Imad, Y-maked, made. *See* Makie.  
 Ymeynd, *p.p.* mixed, mingled, 151/164.  
 I-mene, 88/55, Y-mene, 85/30, *adv.* in common, together.  
 Imete, *v. inf.* meet, find, 174/104, 180/205, y-mete, 62/133, 86/67 ; *ind. pres. pl.* imetep, 149/88 ; *pret. pl.* imette, met, 88/40 ; *p.p.* imet, 152/171.  
 Imisse, *v. subj. pres. sg.* miss, 195/4.  
 Imone, 85/51, 100/10, Y-mone, 85/32, *s.* converse, intercourse, company, commerce.  
 Imong, *adv.* among, 19/601.  
 Ymston, *s.* gem, jewel, 98/153 ; *d. pl.* -e, 98/175.  
 I-multen, *v. inf.* melt, 126/385.  
 Ymunde, *s.* memory, remembrance, 37/6.  
 In, *s.* abode, 84/9.  
 Inde, India, 19/604.  
 Ine, *prep.* in, 26.  
 Ine = ich ne, I not, 30.  
 Ineward, *s.* inwards, entrails, 151/151.  
 Inog, 5/142, Inoh, 180/201, I-nouh, 46/308, I-noch, 133/523, enough.  
 In-to, *prep.* 26.  
 Ynume, taken. *See* Nimen.  
 In-wip, *prep.* within, 230/254.  
 I-offred, *p.p.* offered, 28.  
 Iohan, 38/26, 92/51, Ion, 43/223, John.  
 Ioye, *s.* joy, 54/586, 97/141.  
 Ioyen, 223/4, Ioye, 197/4, *v. pres. pl.* rejoice.  
 Ion. *See* Iohan.  
 Ioseph, 51/503.  
 Ipyned, *p.p.* tormented, 64/187.  
 Iput, *p.p.* pushed, thrust, 153/213.  
 Iqueme, *adj.* pleasing, 85/44.  
 Iqueme, *v. inf.* please, 112/155 ; *ind. pres. pl.* iquemeþ, 67/267.  
 Yrahel, Israel, 50/451.  
 Ire. *See* He.  
 Irede, *adj.* ready, 40/119.  
 Iredynesse, *s.* in readiness, *i. e.* readily, quickly, 85/39.  
 Iryhte, *s.* rights, 97/130.  
 Yrne, *v. inf.* desire, covet, 144/108.  
 Is, *s.* ice, 148/47 ; *d. s.* ise, 176/142, yse, 177/142.  
 Is = his. *See* He.  
 Is, *pron. a. pl.* them, 1/13, 6/171.  
 Isaht, *adj.* reconciled ; *pl.* -e, 176/122.  
 Isait, *p.p.* said, 123/328.  
 Ysayh. *See* Iseon.  
 Isauned, *p.p.* saved, 33.  
 Ischapen, 164/25, Ischape, 172/88, *p.p.* shapen, created.  
 Ischod, *p.p.* shoed, shod ; *pl.* -e, 91/35.  
 Ischop, *v. ind. pret. sg.* 3. created, 37/19, 57/703.



- Ischriven, *p.p.* confessed, 152/189.  
 Ischulde, *v. subj. pres. sg.* shield, 193/40.  
 I-scohte. *See* I-scoten.  
 I-scoten, 129/421, I-scohte, 128/421, *p.p.* shot.  
 Iscrud, *p.p.* clothed, 55/646.  
 Ise = hise, his, 32.  
 Ise, *s.* *See* Is.  
 Iseghe, *p.p.* seen, 32.  
 Iseid, said. *See* Seggen.  
 Isende, *v. subj. pres. sg.* send, 196/26.  
 Iseon, 164/41, Iseo, 94/39, *v. inf.* see; *ind. pres. sg.* 1. i-seo, 47/342; 3. isihþ, 97/140; *pl.* iseop, 51/488; *pret. sg.* 1. yseyh, 45/234; 3. iseyh, 43/199, ysayh, 92/56; *pl.* iseyen, 44/240, 52/541, 61/98, iseye, 41/130; *subj. pres. pl.* iseo, 50/454; *pret. sg.* iseye, 53/560, isehc, 182/225, isezc, 182/240; *imp. pl.* 2. iseop, 54/605.  
 Iserued, *p.p.* served, 29.  
 Iseten, *p.p.* sat, 154/265.  
 Isybbe, *adj.* related, 144/102.  
 Islawe, *p.p.* slain, 199/59.  
 Ismered, *p.p.* anointed, 28.  
 Isom, 184/254, Isome, 168/24, *adj.* at peace.  
 Isouzt, 228/181, Isout, 197/14, *p.p.* sought.  
 Isowen, Isowe, sown. *See* Sowen.  
 Ispede, *v.* 1 *s.* succeed, 40/117.  
 Ispened, 193/24, I-spend, 58/12, *p.p.* spent.  
 Ispild, *p.p.* ruined, 144/109.  
 Isprad, *p.p.* spread, 230/242.  
 Yssyng, *s.* covetousness, 38/35.  
 Istrengþed, *p.p.* strengthened, 30.  
 Istreon, *s.* gain, acquisition, 114/185, offspring, progeny, 151/141.  
 Isunde, *adj.* sound, 42/186.  
 Isunde, *s.* ? "Myd isunde," with success, successfully, 140/48.  
 Isunehed, 193/21, Isunezet, 193/29, *p.p.* sinned.  
 Isworen, *p.p.* sworn, 172/60.  
 Iswynk, *s.* toil, 59/37.  
 Ipenche, *v. inf.* think, 36.  
 Ipeco, *v. inf.* thrive, 57/698, 141/3.  
 Iprunge, *p.p.* pressed, 178/176.  
 Ipurled, *p.p.* pierced, 140/43.  
 I-tyt, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* happens, 62/125.  
 Itold, told. *See* Tellen.  
 Itravailed, *p.p.* laboured, 34.  
 Iturnd, *p.p.* turned, 170/56.  
 Iudas, 40/105.  
 Iudaysse, *adj. d. s.* Jewish, 85/54.  
 Iudelond, Judea; *dat.* -e, 84/19.  
 Iuel, *adj.* evil, 14/427, ill, difficult, 121/293; *pl.* -e, 14/445.  
 Yuedde, *p.p. pl.* fed, 38/51.  
 Iuël, *v. ind. pret.* 3 *s.* fell, befell, 29.  
 Iuele, *adv.* ill, with difficulty, 5/129.  
 Iuggement, *s.* judgment, 229/236.  
 Yuolled, *p.p.* baptized, 38/25.  
 Yuonge, *p.p.* received, 50/460.  
 Ivere, *adv.* together, 66/225.  
 Ivere, 116/218, Yuere, 40/93, *s.* companion; *pl.* ivere, 73/29, iveren, 57/699, yuere, 38/42. *See* Ifere.  
 Yuernessee, *s.* greediness, gluttony, 38/35, 76/122.  
 Yueþ, gives. *See* Yeuen.  
 Ivynde, *v. inf.* find, 60/59.  
 I-vo, *s.* foe, 42/174; *d. pl.* i-vo, 118/274.  
 Iurdan, Jordan, 38/25, 92/75.  
 Ywar, *adj.* ware, cautious, 154/271.  
 Iwarisd, *p.p.* cured, 31.

- I-warped = i-wraped, angered, 123/320.  
 Iwede, *s.* clothing, 193/26.  
 Iwende, *v. pret. sg.* 3. went, 40/112, 41/148.  
 Iwent, *p.p.* turned, 29. *See* Wenden.  
 Y-werche, *v. subj. pres. sg.* work, make, 111/130.  
 Iwil, *s.* will, 30; y-wille, 129/423.  
 Iwyn, *s.* ? strife, 144/91.  
 Iwyne, *v. inf.* win, 72/10; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* iwinþ, 110/151.  
 Iwis, *adv.* certainly, 14/450, 40/94.  
 Iwisse, *myd*, with certainty, certainly, 66/232, 73/32.  
 Iwisse, *v. subj. pres. sg.* guide, 195/3.  
 Iwite, *v. inf.* know, 43/214.  
 Ywyueþ, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* wives, 118/261.  
 I-won, *s.* property, possessions, 172/76.  
 I-woned, *p.p.* accustomed, wont, 172/71.  
 Iworpe, *v. subj. pres. sg.* be done, 41/159.  
 Iwrche, *v. inf.* work, make, 110/130.  
 Iwreþþed, *p.p.* angered, 118/276.  
 Iwriten, *s. pl.* writings, 108/103.  
 Iwryten, Iwrite, Iwrithe, written. *See* Writen.  
 Iwrouht, wrought. *See* Wurche.  
 Ywune, *s.* custom, 43/207, 57/705.  
 Iwuned, *p.p.* wont, 44/258, 84/15.  
 Iwuned, *p.p.* dwelt, 63/139.  
 Iwurpen, 127/396, Iwurpe, 100/9, 118/263, *v. inf.* be, become, turn.  
 I-ȝuðe, *v. subj. pret. sg.* granted, 193/32.  
 Kaym, Cain, 154/266.  
 Kayphas, Caiaphas, 43/219.  
 Kayser, *s.* emperor, 96/112.  
 Kaluarie, Calvary, 49/436.  
 Kanterbury, 145/9.  
 Karlemeyne, Charlemagne, 37/3.  
 Kastel, *s.* 97/152.  
 Kat, *s.* 120/296.  
 Katenes, Caithness, 145/3.  
 Kene, *adj.* sharp, 140/46; *superl.* kennuste, 48/384.  
 Kenyen, *v. inf.* be conceived, 100/6.  
 Kenliche, *adv.* boldly, 106/88.  
 Kenne, *v. subj. sg.* know, 107/67.  
 Kent, 146/41.  
 Kep, *s.* heed, regard, 225/63.  
 Keren, complain, A.S. *ceorian*, or turn, pass off. A.S. *cerran*. O.Fris. *kera*, 137/665.  
 Ket, *s.* carrion, 14/438.  
 Kete, *s.* ? kite, 76/143.  
 Kin, 156/7. *Read* King.  
 Kinde, *s.* nature, property, 1/15, 3/53; *pl.* kinds, 10/307.  
 Kindles, *s. pl.* young, 20/620.  
 Kyneriche, *s.* kingdom, 47/355.  
 King, 103/12, Kyng, 102/12, Kink, 27, Kinc, 105/36, *s.* king; *pl.* kinhis, 103/2.  
 Kingriche, *s.* kingdom, 26.  
 Kink. *See* King.  
 Kirke, *s.* church, 4/93, 6/167.  
 Kiðen, *v. inf.* make known, 3/53; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* kiðeð, 5/131.  
 Kneo, *s.* knee, 40/106; *pl.* kneon, 149/96.  
 Kneoli, *v. subj. sg.* kneel, 168/5; kneoly, 169/5.  
 Knewen, *v. inf.* know, 125/357.  
 Knyht, *s.* knight; *pl.* knyhtes, 48/379.

- Knowede, *v. pret. pl.* knelt, 48/387.
- Knownen, *v. know; ind. pres. sg.* 3. knoweð, 5/121; *imp. 2 s.* knov, 6/165.
- Knucchenus, *s. pl.* bundles, 225/77.
- Kold, *adj.* cold, 20/619; *pl. -e*, 19/610.
- Komen. *See* Cumen.
- Konyng, *s.* coney, rabbit, 70/357.
- Kuynde, *s.* kind, 232/335.
- Kundeliche, *adj.* royal, 90/4(2).
- Kunes-mon, *s.* kinsman, 45/290.
- Kunne. *See* Cunne.
- Kunne, Kunnes. *See* Cun.
- Kustume, *s.* custom, 47/370.
- Kuþe. *See* Cunne.
- Ladde. *See* Lede.
- Læte, *v. imp. 2 s.* let, 193/34.
- Lage, *adj. pl.* low, 17/547.
- Lage, 2/23, 109/97, Laghe, 26, Laze, 184/12, Lawe, 46/325, 56/674, *s.* law; *pl.* lawan, 146/38, lawen, 148/60, lages, 6/170.
- Lagelike, *adv.* faithfully, 22/695.
- Lagt, *s.* plunder, 25/791.
- Lai. *See* Liggen.
- Layte, *s.* flame, 217/203.
- Large, *adj.* liberal, 30.
- Lasse, *adj.* less, 145/6.
- Lasse, *adv.* less, 60/61.
- Last, Lat. *See* Lede.
- Lat, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* pretends, 14/429; lateð, leaves, 12/358.
- Latemest, *adj.* last, 170/49.
- Latyn, *s.* 50/470.
- Lauedi, *s.* lady, 164/41.
- Laurence, 91/44.
- Lawe, Lawen. *See* Lage.
- Lawelyche, 106/77, Lauelichi, 107/77, *adj. pl.* lawful.
- Laweliche, *adv.* according to law, 106/72.
- Lay, *s.* law, 153/205, 199/76.
- Laze. *See* Lage.
- Lazghere, *adj. comp.* lower, 212/69.
- Le, 'Lond le' = londde = londe, 124/379.
- Leache, *s.* physician, 142/52.
- Lean, *s.* reward, 60/65.
- Leche, *s.* physician, 39/56.
- Lecherie, *s.* fornication, 30.
- Lechur, *s.* fornicator, 30; *pl.* lechurs, 97/149, 186/29, lechours, 225/79.
- Lectorie, *s.* a precious stone, 98/172.
- Led, *s.* furnace, 182/242.
- Lede, *v. inf.* lead, guide, 38/42; *ind. pres. sg.* 2. last, 158/36; 3. lat, 101/9, ledeð, 14/443; *pret. sg.* 3. ledde, 38/27, ladde, 49/423, lad, 216/174; *p.p.* iled, 43/214, ilad, 58/5.
- Leden, 105/27, Ledin, 105/37, *s. pl.* people.
- Ledes, *s. pl.* caldrons, 224/37.
- Lef, *s.* leaf, 94/48.
- Lef, *adj.* dear, 17/528; *pl.* leue, 23/732.
- Lefful, *adj.* faithful, believing, 23/713.
- Leggeð, 14/451, 22/704, Legheþ, 36, *v. 3 s.* lies, speaks falsely; *pl.* legen, 19/599; *pret. pl.* lowen, 44/241, 64/165.
- Leggen, *v. inf.* lay; *ind. pres. sg.* 3. leigeð, 12/359; *pl.* leggeþ, 47/364; *pret. pl.* leyden, 81/284; *p.p.* ileid, 32.
- Leycestre schire, 146/45.
- Leie, 182/236, Leye, 67/276, *s.* flame.

- Leyen. *See* Ligen.  
 Leigeð. *See* Leggen.  
 Leihe, *s.* ?lie, *lixivium*; or ?flame.  
     A.S. *lig*, O.E. *leze*, *leie*, 193/19.  
 Leyhtun, *s.* garden; *d. s.* -e, 45/  
     291.  
 Leyhtunward, *s.* gardener, 53/576.  
 Leyt, 224/31, Leyte, 211/34, *s.*  
     blaze, flame.  
 Leiðe, *adj.* repulsive, 15/458.  
 Lemes, *s. pl.* rays, lights, 223/22.  
 Lend-bon, *s.* loin-bone, 12/360.  
 Lende, *v. subj. pres. sg.* ?bring,  
     62/122.  
 Lene, *adj.* lean, 5/128.  
 Leneð, *v. 3 s.* leans, 20/634.  
 Leng, 49/423, Lengur, 153/211,  
     *adj. comp.* longer; *superl.* lengust,  
     longest, 124/351.  
 Lengen, *v. inf.* prolong, lengthen,  
     127/391.  
 Lengðe, *s.* length, 18/552.  
 Leod-biscopryche, *s.* a diocesan,  
     145/9.  
 Leode, *s. pl.* people, 104/27, 184/1.  
 Leof, *adj.* dear, beloved, 124/370,  
     pleasing, 60/72; *g. s. f.* leue, 57/  
     704; *pl.* leoue, 92/66; *comp.*  
     leouere, dearer, 59/30.  
 Leof, *s.* dear one, beloved, 188/63.  
 Leoflyche, *adv.* dearly, 92/59.  
 Leof-mon, *s.* beloved, 53/558.  
 Leofrych, Leofric, 145/19.  
 Leop. *See* Lepeð.  
 Leorný, *v. subj. pres. sg.* learn,  
     99/196.  
 Leoue, Leouere. *See* Leof.  
 Lepeð, *v. 3 s.* leaps, 10/319, 13/  
     416; *pret. sg. 3.* leop, 44/263.  
 Leppis, *s. pl.* lips, 213/81.  
 Lepre, *s.* leprosy, 31.  
 Leprus, *s.* leprous man, leper, 31.  
 Leren, 4/115, Lerin, 103/31, *v.*  
     *inf.* teach, learn; *ind. pres. sg. 3.*  
     lereð, 4/101, lerit, 121/287; *imp.*  
     *sg. 2.* ler, 128/432; *p.p.* lered, 11/  
     328.  
 Les, *adj.* false, lying, deceitful,  
     93/12; *pl.* lese, 67/251.  
 Lesen, *v. inf.* deliver, liberate,  
     64/180; *ind. pret. 3 s.* lesede, 172/  
     63.  
 Lesen, *v. inf.* lose, 125/366; *ind.*  
     *pret. pl.* lure, 151/139.  
 Lesing, 19/603, Lesyng, 50/474,  
     Lesynge, 37/20, Lesin, 125/363, *s.*  
     lie, lying, falsehood.  
 Lest, *adj.* least, 218/253.  
 Lest. *See* Lesten.  
 Lest. *See* Lete.  
 Leste, *conj.* lest, 43/213.  
 Lesten, *v. inf.* last, endure, 63/  
     152, 152/203; *ind. pres. 3 s.* lest,  
     64/169, lestep, 100/19.  
 Let, *v. pret.* hindered, 213/86.  
 Lete, *v. inf.* let, leave, 28; *ind.*  
     *pres. sg. 2.* lest, 128/437; 3. leteð,  
     5/135, 25/793; *pret. 3.* let, 25/778;  
     *imp. 2 s.* let, 7/202.  
 Lepe-bei, *adj.* (lithe to bend) lia-  
     some, pliable, 138/692.  
 Lepen, *v. inf.* to become remiss,  
     loose; or ?lepen = *leyen*, to lie,  
     125/368.  
 Lepere, *adj. pl.* evil, bad, 121/288.  
 Letteris, 107/69, Lettres, 106/69,  
     *s. pl.* letters.  
 Letteð, *v. ind. pres. 3 s.* hinders,  
     stops, 13/417.  
 Leue, *s.* belief, trust, faith, 17/547,  
     134/548.  
 Leue. *See* Leof.  
 Leue, 8/226, Leaua, 145/15, *s.*  
     leave, permission.  
 Leue, *v. inf.* allow, permit, grant,  
     155/277; *subj. pres. sg.* leue, 10/  
     303.  
 Leue, *v. inf.* live, 219/259; *i. p.*  
     leuand, 211/21.

- Leuedi, *s.* lady, 38/21; *pl.* leuedis, 27.  
 Leuen, *v. inf.* believe, 6/169, 15/454; *ind. pres. sg.* 3. leueš, 4/100; *pl.* leuen, 15/459.  
 Leuers, *s. pl.* livers, 212/64.  
 Leuyng, *s.* living, 222/357.  
 Leun, *s.* lion, 1/1, 1/17.  
 Lewē = leve, dear, 137/661.  
 Li, *mistake for* Bi, 28.  
 Libben, *v. inf.* live, 93/24; *ind. pres. sg.* 3. lifeš, 192/12.  
 Lic, *adj.* like, 25/797.  
 Lycchesfeld, Lichfield, 146/26.  
 Licchi, *adj.* like, 225/78.  
 Lych, *s.* body, corpse, 149/78; *liche*, 131/471.  
 Licham, *s.* body, 10/301.  
 Liche, *s.* leech, 131/472.  
 Lychome, 139/22, Licome, 168/23, *s.* body.  
 Licht, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* shines, 27.  
 Lid, *s.*; *pl.* lides, 2/26.  
 Lyen, *s.* reward, 126/407.  
 Liese, *v. inf.* lose, 26; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* liesed, 30, liest, 31.  
 Liezer, 184/7, Lyere, 185/7, *s.* liar; *pl.* lyeres, 153/207.  
 Lif, *s.* life, 2/46; *g. s.* liues, 9/287, livis, 105/38.  
 Lyf-daye. *Read* Lyf-dawe, *d. pl.* life-days, 39/84.  
 Lifeš. *See* Libben.  
 Lif-time, *s.* life-time, 22/696.  
 Liggen, 174/118, Ligen, 131/467, *v. inf.* lie (*jacere*); *ind. pres. sg.* 2. list, 172/84, lyst, 173/84; 3. liš, 172/73, lip, 173/73, lyb, 67/277, lieš, 2/24; *pret.* 3 *s.* lai, 2/42, 24/769; *pl.* leyen, 42/195; *imp.* 2 *s.* li, 176/137, ly, 177/137.  
 Lighen, *v. inf.* lighten, 12/375.  
 Lighen, *v. inf.* alight, 2/32.  
 Lightlike, *adv.* lightly, 13/416.  
 Lyht, *v. imp. sg.* 2. light (down), 50/454.  
 Lihte, *adv.* easily, 120/290.  
 Lihtliche, 63/151, Lyhtliche, 153/237, *adv.* lightly, easily.  
 Likame, *s.* body, 48/378.  
 Lykamlyche, *adj. d. s.* bodily, 38/51; *d. pl.* 53/552.  
 Liken, *v.* please; *ind. pret.* 3 *s.* likede, 2/31; *subj. pres. pl.* lykyen, 104/43, likin, 105/43.  
 Likerous, *adj.* dainty, 228/172.  
 Lykyng, *s.* pleasure, desire, 215/147.  
 Lim, *s.* limb; *n. pl.* limes, 3/57; *d. pl.* lime, 193/30.  
 Lyncholne, Lincoln, 146/26.  
 Lyncolne schire, 146/46.  
 Lipne, *v. subj. pres. sg.* trust to, depend upon, 59/25.  
 Lysse, *s.* mitigation, relief, 66/229, 141/63, 143/70.  
 List, *s.* lust, desire, 10/319, 17/544.  
 Liste, *s.* cunning, 156/18; *pl.* listes, ? crafts, 136/638.  
 Listeliche, *adv.* craftily, 137/666.  
 Listen, *v. inf.* 4/89; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* listneš, 18/551; *subj. pres. sg.* list, 23/713; *imp.* 2 *pl.* listneš, 13/398.  
 Litel, 4/110, 22/689, Lite, 193/24, *adj.* little; *def.* little, 9/276.  
 Lip, *s.* ? *lif*, life, 142/51.  
 Liš, Lip, Lyp. *See* Liggen.  
 Liš, *s.* joint, 20/626.  
 Lipen, *v. inf.* listen, 137/670.  
 Lyuen, *v. inf.* live, 152/190; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* liueš, 2/30, 16/518; *i. p.* lyuyinde, 118/278, liuihinde, 119/278.  
 Liuenoše, *s.* sustenance, 9/275.  
 Livis. *See* Lif.  
 Lyun, *s.* lion, 154/247, 225/64.

- Liure, 178/172, Lyure, 179/172, *s. liver*.  
 Lyured, *adj.* clotted, 148/47.  
 Lyze, *s. lie*, 224/42.  
 Lodlich, *adj.* loathly, ugly, loathsome, 182/226; *def.* -e, 67/277.  
 Lodlike, *adj. pl.* loathly, 15/458.  
 Lohe, *adv.* low, 178/166.  
 Lok, *s.* present, offering, 60/72.  
 Loki, *v. inf.* look, see, look after, guard, 39/54; loken, 7/187; *ind. pres. sg.* 3. loket, 28; *subj. pres. sg.* loke, 30.  
 Lome = ilome, *adv.* frequently, 58/11.  
 Lond, *s.* land, 12/366, country; *pl.* londes, 27.  
 Lone, *s.* loan, 114/186.  
 Long, *adj.* 9/275.  
 Longe, *adv.* long, 24/769.  
 Longe, *v. inf.* lengthen, 197/2.  
 Longynge, *s.* longing, desire, 99/201.  
 Lordinges, *s. pl.* lords, 27.  
 Lore, *s.* teaching, doctrine, 62/129.  
 Lorpeu, *s.* teacher, 108/105.  
 Lost, *s.* pleasure, 96/93.  
 Lot, *s.* 50/447.  
 Loŝ, *adj.* unpleasant, hateful, 17/528; *pl.* -e, 23/731.  
 Loŝ, *s.* evil, harm, 14/430.  
 Loþ, *s.* song, 122/333.  
 Loþ, *adj.* displeased, 124/363.  
 Loŝen, ? Lothian, 146/35.  
 Loue, *s.* allowance, 115/185.  
 Louerd, 37/19, 39/78, Louird, 105/28, Lord, 29, *s.* lord; *g. s.* lordes, 27; *d. s.* louverde, 104/28, lorde, 27.  
 Lovin, *v. subj. pres. pl.* love, 105/43.  
 Lowe, *adv.* low, 37/8.  
 Lowen. *See* Legeŝ.  
 Loze, *adv.* low, 188/37.  
 Lude, *adv.* aloud, loudly, 16/490, 24/746.  
 Luft, *s.* air; *d. s.* -e, 61/82.  
 Luken, 2/25, Luke, 97/147, *v. inf.* shut, close; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* lukeŝ, 16/513; *pl.* lukeþ, shut up, 151/136.  
 Lunde, *s.* 'alunde' = *ellend*, *el-lund*, foreign, distant, 94/53.  
 Lundene, London, 145/10.  
 Lunge, *s.* lung, 178/172.  
 Lure. *See* Lesen.  
 Luste, *impers. v. pret.* luste hym = he desired, 38/30.  
 Lusten, 104/28, Lustin, 105/28, Lustine, 115/212, *v. inf.* listen.  
 Lustlike, *adv.* eagerly, 115/212.  
 Lutel, 58/12, Lute, 37/6, 164/46, *adj.* little; *a. s. f.* lutele, 37/1, lutle, 93/22; *pl.* lutle, 146/36.  
 Luteŝ, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* stoops, 21/668.  
 Luteþ, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* lurks, 156/29.  
 Luper, *adj.* evil, bad, wicked; *a. s. f.* lupre, 39/61; *pl.* lupre, 124/364.  
 Lutil, *adv.* little, 115/193.  
 Luue, *s.* love, 4/105.  
 Luuelike, *adv.* lovingly, 12/381.  
 Luuien, *v. inf.* love, 6/170, luuie, 28, luuye, 38/47, luuen, 12/372; *ind. pres. sg.* 3. luued, 28; *pl.* luueþ, 36; *subj. pres. pl.* luuyen, 104/43; *p.p.* yluued, 55/626.  
 Ly . . . . *See* Li . . . .  
 Madmes, *s. pl.* treasures, 114/198, 115/192, 126/384.  
 Magt, *s.* might, 17/541.  
 Magti, *adj.* mighty, 8/234.  
 Mahe, *s.* maw, stomach, 178/171.  
 Mahen, Mai, Maig. *See* May.

- Mainles, *adj.* powerless, 5/128.  
 Maister, 105/52, Mayster, 104/52, *s.* master.  
 Make, *s.* mate, 22/697.  
 Makie, *v. inf.* make, 50/446, maken, 6/154; *ind. pres. sg.* 3. makeš, 3/71; *pret. sg.* 3. makede, 38/22, 92/52; *p.p.* y-maked, 39/80, imad, 33.  
 Making, *s.* poetry, verse, 222/352.  
 Maladie, *s.* 31.  
 Malekin, 188/54, Malekyn, 189/54, Malkin, Molly.  
 Malkes, *g. s.* Malchus's, 43/198.  
 Mamelit, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* speaks, talks, 132/492.  
 Man, *s.* 4/88; *n. s.* mann, 192/13; *g. s.* mannes, 27; *d. s.* manne, 27; *n. pl.* men, 26; *g. pl.* manne, 2/39.  
 Man, *indef. pron.* they, people, 9/267.  
 Mandragores, *s.* mandrake, 19/613.  
 Manhede, *s.* humanity, 22/690.  
 Mani, *adj.* many, 17/544; *pl.* manie, 18/556.  
 Manikines, of many a kind, 15/460.  
 Manken, 27, Mankin, 8/224, 11/331, *s.* mankind.  
 Mann, Manne, Mannes. *See* Man.  
 Mansed, *p.p.* excommunicated, 154/259.  
 Manslecht, *s.* manslaying, 30.  
 Mantel, *s.* mantle, 43/223.  
 Marcatte, 33, Market, 16/491, *s.*  
 Marie, Mary, 2/38.  
 Marie Maudeleyne, Mary Magdalene, 53/554.  
 Martyrs, *s. pl.* 90/3.  
 Masse, *s.* mass, 176/123; *pl.* massen, 177/123, masses, 190/69.  
 Matines, 190/69, Matynes, 191/69, *s. pl.* matins.  
 Mawe, *s.* maw, stomach, 179/171; *pl.* mawen, 151/148.  
 Mawe, Mawen. *See* May.  
 May, *v. ind. pres. sg.* 1. 39/68; 2. myht, 124/369, migt, 117/239, nicht, 31, mayht, 94/31, (?) mist, 196/16; 3. maig, 3/80, 16/516, mai, 5/129, may, 41/131; *pl.* mahen, 166/74, mawen, 40/89, 44/263, mawe, 102/14, mohe, 184/255, mowen, 94/39, moue, 23, mugen, 14/425, muwen, 59/24, muwe, 185/255, muce, 27; *pret. sg.* 2. myhtestu, 42/168; 3. migte, 2/33, 21/677; *subj. pres. sg.* muge, 6/155, 8/254; *pl.* mawe, 73/30, mugen, 20/627; *pret. sg.* 2. myhtestu, 96/96; 3. michte, 123/338, migte, 172/57; *pl.* myhten, 40/88, myhte, 39/84, migten, 22/683, migtin, 105/31.  
 Mayde, *s.* virgin, 37/12.  
 Mayht, *s.* might, 90/4(2).  
 Mayht. *See* May.  
 Mayster, *s.* master, 40/110, 53/579; *d. s.* maystre, 52/517; *pl.* maystres, 39/76.  
 Me, *indef. pron.* they, people, 39/62, 95/59.  
 Mechael, Michael, 219/263.  
 Meche, *s.* mate, consort, 23/716.  
 Mede, *s.* meed, reward, 39/61, bribe, 156/18.  
 Meden, *v. pret. pl.* made, 198/33.  
 Medes, 108/94, Medis, 109/94, *s. pl.* meads.  
 Medewe, *s.* meadow, 93/16.  
 Med-yorne, *adj.* desirous of bribes, 67/252.  
 Mei, 178/162, Mey, 59/30, 179/162, *s.* kinsman.  
 Meiden, 2/37, Meyde, 54/597, *s.* maiden.  
 Meynd, *p.p.* mingled, mixed, 63/148.

- Meyne, *s.* main, strength, 95/69.  
 Mekel, Michael, 210/11.  
 Mele, *v. inf.* speak, 86/4.  
 Melten, *v. inf.* melt, 127/385.  
 Mendinge, *s.* amends, 144/96.  
 Mene, *v. ind. pres.* 1 *s.* mean, 17/549; *pret.* 3 *s.* mende, 85/27.  
 Mene, *s.* moan, 196/34.  
 Menen, *v. inf.* bemoan, complain, 64/170; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* menep, 116/236.  
 Mercena, 146/39, Mercene, 146/51, *s. g. pl.* Mercians'.  
 Merci, 32, Mercy, 53/580, 92/78, *s.*  
 Merciable, *adj.* merciful, 226/127.  
 Mere, *s.* mermaid, 18/570, 19/584.  
 Merede, *p. p. d. s.* pure, 96/115.  
 Mereman, *s.* mermaid, 18/557.  
 Mereuh, *adj.* unsound, rotten, 94/44.  
 Merk, *adj.* dark, murky, 14/443.  
 Meruel, *v. imp.* marvel, 222/352.  
 Messyas, 85/55.  
 Meste, *adj.* greatest, 39/86, 101/5(3).  
 Mete, *s.* food, 38/29.  
 Mete-nyplings, *s. pl.* niggards of food, 66/226.  
 Metinge, *s.* dream, 27.  
 Mey . . . See Mei . . .  
 My, *n. s. m.* 42/174; *g. s. m.* mynes, 54/585; *a. s. m.* mynne, 53/570; *g. s. n.* mine, 193/35; *a. s. n.* mi, 192/9.  
 Michel. See Mikel.  
 Micht, Michte. See May.  
 Mid, 38/32, Midd, 174/106, Myd, 37/7, Mit, 1/22, 196/32, Mið, 14/445, *prep.* with. A.S. *mid*.  
 Mide, *adv.* therewith, 3/73, and generally used after a relative for *mid*, 178/174.  
 Middelerd, 63/140, 162/11, Mid-delert, 127/388, Myddenerd, 52/544, *s.* world; *d. s.* middenherde, 50/478.  
 Middelsex, 146/51.  
 Myd-peyh, *s.* midthigh, 150/97.  
 Migt, *s.* See Mihte.  
 Migte, Migten. See May.  
 Mihel, Michael, 230/269.  
 Mihhales steowe, 145/2.  
 Mihte, 40/111, Myhte, 72/1, Migt, 10/323, Migte, 23/718, *s.* power, might.  
 Myhte, Myhten, Myhtestu. See May.  
 Miitte = mihte, might, 198/48.  
 Mikel, 10/319, 12/382, Mychel, 38/49, *adj.* much, great; *pl.* mikle, 17/548.  
 Mikel, 8/235, Michel, 26, *adv.* much.  
 Milce, *s.* mercy, 7/196, 25/802.  
 Mylce, *v. inf.* have mercy on, pity, 141/18.  
 Myle, 145/1, Mylen, 145/2, *s. pl.* miles.  
 Mild, *adj.*; *pl.* mylde, 38/41; *superl.* mildist, 105/52.  
 Mildelike, 7/190, Mildeliche, 104/37, *adv.* mildly, meekly.  
 Mildertnisse, *s.* mercy, 195/2.  
 Milioun, *s.* million, 232/316.  
 Milte, *s.* milt, 178/171.  
 Minde, in mind, mindful, 11/350, 19/611, 25/788, 135/601.  
 Mynes, Mynne. See My.  
 Mynur, *s.* miner, 97/123.  
 Miracle, *s.* 27.  
 Mire, *s.* ant, 8/234, 9/273.  
 Mirie, *adv.* merrily, pleasantly, 18/570.  
 Mirke, *adj.* dark, 4/95.  
 Mirre, *s.* myrrh, 26.



- Mys-auyset, *p.p.* misadvised, 229/237.  
 Mys-by-pouht, *p.p.* mistaken, 45/284.  
 Mischeef, *s.* misfortune, 226/113.  
 Misdedeas, *s. pl.* misdeeds, 7/197.  
 Misdo, *v. inf.* do wrong, do harm, 28; *ind. pret. pl.* mysduden, 61/99.  
 Mysse, *subj. pres. pl.* miss, 40/102.  
 Mysse, *s.* miss, 66/230.  
 Mist for Myht, mayest, 196/16.  
     *See* May.  
 Mist, *s.* 4/102.  
 Mystrost, *v. inf.* mistrust, 218/232.  
 Mit, Mið. *See* Mid.  
 Mitte = mid ðe, with the, 18/578, 21/670.  
 Mixe, *s. d. s.* dung, muck, 126/385; *pl.* mixes, vile wretches, 140/35.  
 Mizte. *See* May.  
 Mo, *adj.* more, 46/317, 56/686.  
 Moche, *adv.* much, 212/70.  
 Mod, *s.* mind, 11/337, 14/449, pride, 7/191, anger, 122/323; *d. s. -e*, 11/351.  
 Moder, *s.* mother, 38/22.  
 Mody, *adj.* proud, 39/74.  
 Modynesse, *s.* pride, 74/79.  
 Mohe. *See* May.  
 Mokerers, *s. pl.* misers, 214/112.  
 Mol, *s.* mail, tribute, 151/161.  
 Molde, *s.* ground, earth, 93/15.  
 Mon, *s. n. s.* man, 45/286; *g. s.* monnes, 42/172, mones, 105/51; *d. s.* monne, 172/88; *a. s.* mon, 46/325; *g. pl.* monne, 104/51; *d. pl.* menne, 47/352; *a. pl.* men, 38/45.  
 Mon, *indef. pron.* they, people, 139/5.  
 Mon, *s.* moan, 92/74, 170/46.  
 Moncion, *s.* mansion, 212/59.  
 Monö, *adj.* many, 211/15.  
 Monö, *s.* money, 214/111.  
 Mone, *s.* moon, 19/598, 50/479.  
 Monegen, *v. inf.* mention, 133/530.  
 Monenday, *s.* Monday, 232/330.  
 Moni, *adj.* many; *pl.* monye, 40/123.  
 Monyon, *adj.* many a, 154/244.  
 Monkunne, *s. d. s.* mankind, 37/11, 160/12.  
 Monquelle, *s.* manslayer, 186/28.  
 Monslers, *s. pl.* manslaughterers, 211/37.  
 Montayne, *s.* mountain, 31.  
 Mon-pewes, *s. pl.* manly virtues, 128/432.  
 Mor, 27, More, 38/39, *adv.*  
 Morewe, *s.* morrow, 41/140.  
 Morghen, 33, Moreghen, 33, *s.* morning.  
 Most. *See* Mot.  
 Most, *adv.* 20/625.  
 Moste, *adj.* greatest, 16/500.  
 Mosten. *See* Mot.  
 Mot, *v. ind. pres. sg.* 1. must, 43/201; 2. most, 97/150, mostu = must thou, 84/20; 3. mot, 192/14; *pl.* moten, 152/169, mote, 47/344; *subj. pres. sg.* mote, 39/71, 45/293; *pret. pl.* mosten, 152/190.  
 Mot, *s.* meeting, 16/491, 45/280.  
 Mote, *s. d. s.* hill, 97/121.  
 Mote, Moten. *See* Mot, *v.*  
 Mothus, *s.* house of meeting; *d. s. -e*, 46/304.  
 Motynge, *s.* meeting, 39/87, 42/178.  
 Moue. *See* May.  
 Moveth, *v. imp. pl.* 2. move, 29.  
 Mowe, *s.* kinswoman, 178/162.  
 Mowen. *See* May.

- Mowen, 108/94, Mowe, 106/83, Mouin, 107/83, *v. inf.* mow.  
 Moy, *v. pres. pl.* may, 210/7; *subj. pres. sg.* moge, 134/561, mowe, 133/547.  
 Moyses, Moses, 21/676.  
 Muche, Muchel. *See* Mikel.  
 Mucheles, *adv.* much, 86/74.  
 Mud, Mudh. *See* Muš.  
 Muee, Muge, Mugen. *See* May.  
 Muynde, *s. mind*, 232/336.  
 Multeplien, *v. inf.* multiply, 137/675.  
 Munde, *s. mind*, or ? *protection*, security, 197/12.  
 Muneke, *s. pl.* monks, 76/115.  
 Munen, *v. inf.* remember, 12/370.  
 Munye, *v. 1 s.* admonish, 104/37; 3 *s.* muneš, 9/273, 22/699.  
 Munt, *s. mount*, 41/127.  
 Mur, *s. fen*, 151/150.  
 Murehpe, *s. mirth*, 101/9.  
 Mused, 121/295, Musep, 120/296, *v. 3 s.* mouses.  
 Muš, 4/111, Mudh, 30, Mud, 132/492, *s. mouth*; *d. s.* mupe, 41/128.  
 Muwe, Muwen. *See* May.  
 My . . . . *See* Mi . . . .
- Na, *adj.* no, 200/1.  
 Naam. *See* Nimen.  
 Nan, *pron.* none, 200/2.  
 Nabbe, *v. ind. pres. sg. 1.* have not, 47/360; 2. nauest, 85/33, nauestu, thou hast not, 158/35; 3. nafš, has not, 172/80, nauep, 173/80, nauid, 129/426; *pl.* nabbeš, have not, 75/105; *pret. sg. 3.* nedde, 40/114, neuede, 95/84; *pl.* nedden, had not, 34; *subj. pret. sg. 2.* newedest, 132/514, neddestu, thou hadst not, 49/411.  
 Nacht, *adv.* not, 28.
- Nafš. *See* Nabbe.  
 Naked, *adj.* 4/108, 5/144; *def.* -e, 7/219.  
 Nam. *See* Nimen.  
 Name, *s.* 2/38.  
 Namore, *adv.* no more, 29.  
 Nappes, *s. pl.* cups, bowls, 174/107, 175/107. A.S. *hnæp*.  
 Narruliche, *adv.* narrowly, 133/519.  
 Narwe, *adj.* narrow, 5/133.  
 Nas, *v. ind. pret. 3 s.* was not, 186/16, nes, 43/209; *pl.* neren, were not, 55/645, nere, 54/590; *subj. pret. sg.* nere, were not, 38/24, 40/94.  
 Nat. *See* Nowiht.  
 Natureliche, 30, Naturelliche, 30, *adv.* naturally.  
 Nauestu, Naud. *See* Nabbe.  
 Nauht. *See* Nowiht.  
 Nazaren, *adj.* of Nazareth, 42/183.  
 Nazareth, 50/468.  
 Ne, *adv.* not, 37/17; *conj.* nor, 37/3, 39/67.  
 Neauer. *See* Neuer.  
 Necke, *s.* 13/393.  
 Ned, *s. need*, 6/181; nede, 4/115, 12/367.  
 Nedde, Nedden, Neddestu. *See* Nabbe.  
 Neddre, *s. adder*, serpent, 5/144; *pl.* neddren, 148/48, nedirs, 214/122.  
 Nedē, *adj.* needy, 214/116.  
 Nede, *adv.* needs, of necessity, 6/160, 180/194.  
 Nedeš, *v. 3 s.* forces, 5/133, 7/216; *pret. 3 s.* nedde, needed, 37/15.  
 Neggen, *v. inf.* come nigh, approach, 5/147; *subj. pres. sg.* negge, 1/4.  
 Neh. *See* Neyh.

- Neyep, *v.* 3 *s.* draws nigh, approaches, 142/42.
- Neyh, 42/171, Neh, 190/86, *adv.* nigh, near.
- Neyh hende, 142/45, Neyh honde, 85/46, *adv.* near at hand.
- Neihzebors, *s. pl.* neighbours, 226/114.
- Neyhlechet, 39/85, Neyhleyhte, 84/7, Neyleyhte, 84/6, *v. ind. pret. sg.* 3. drew near, approached.
- Neilond. A neilond = an eilond, an island, 16/503.
- Nele, *v. ind. pres. sg.* 1. will not, 41/146; 2. neltu, 44/252, nultu, 158/31; 3. nele, 192/13, nule, 59/36, nel, 28; *pl.* nellep, 46/308, nule, 91/33, nyl, 221/330; *pret. sg.* 2. noldestu, 178/167; 3. nolde, 43/204.
- Nemene, *read* neuene = to mention, 229/221.
- Nemne, *v. ind. pres.* 1 *s.* name, 98/161; *pret. sg.* 3. nemde, called by name, 53/577.
- Nenne. *See* Non.
- Neode, *s.* need, 186/12.
- Neose, 101/3, Nese, 1/3, 10/312, Nos, 13/393, *s.* nose.
- Neose-purles, 182/235, Neosturles, 183/235, *s. pl.* nostrils.
- Nere, Neren. *See* Nas.
- Nert, *v. ind. pres. sg.* 2. art not, 50/459; nertu, thou art not, 49/420; 3. nis, 37/3, nys, 37/20, nes, 20/642, is not.
- Nerun, Nero, 56/686.
- Nes. *See* Nert.
- Nes. *See* Nas.
- Nese. *See* Neose.
- Nessche, *adv.* softly, 227/166.
- Nest, *s.* 25/801.
- Net, *s.* 15/479.
- Nethtebure, *s. g. s.* neighbour's, 200/9.
- Neuede. *See* Nabbe.
- Neuer, 39/56, Neure, 2/25, Neauer, 174/89, Nefere, 111/134, Newere, 117/221, Newir, 117/222, *adv.* never.
- Neuermor, *adv.* 20/618.
- Neuertë, *adv.* never, 35.
- Neure. *See* Neuer.
- Newe, *adj.* new, 3/76, 4/109.
- Newedest. *See* Nabbe.
- Newen, *v.* renew; *ind. pres. sg.* 3. neweš, 3/55, 5/143; *imp.* 2 *s.* newe, 6/179.
- Neztbore, *s.* neighbour, 213/76; *g. pl.* neztbors, 213/89.
- Nicht. *See* Nyht.
- Nyede, *s.* need, 32; *pl.* niedes, 32.
- Nyepe, *adj.* ninth, 145/21; *s.* ninth part, 70/336.
- Nyht, 40/104, Nigt, 3/63, 7/195, Nicht, 27, 192/7, Nyth, 194/24, *s.* night; *d. s.* nyhte, 40/112, nigte, 23/720; *g. s.* used adverbially, nyhtes, by night, 95/60.
- Nyleuede, *v. ind. pret. pl.* believed not, 54/611.
- Nimen, *v.* take; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* nimeš, goes, 4/93, 5/134, takes, 23/741; *pret. sg.* 2. nome, 139/4; 3. nam, 199/61, nom, 41/126, naam, 34; *pl.* nomen, 48/379, nome, 49/438; *imp. sg.* 2. nim, 162/45, nym, 45/269; *pl.* 2. nymep, 40/102; *i. p.* niminde, 184/3, nymynde, 185/3; *p. p.* ynume, 43/206, 55/649.
- Nis, Nys. *See* Nert.
- Niste. *See* Not.
- Niš, *s.* envy, 8/225, 11/332; nyte, 74/81.
- Nyth. *See* Nyht.
- Nišer, *adv.* down, 1/6, 20/624.
- Nišerward, *adv.* downwards, 18/561.
- Nyppful, *adj.* envious; *def. -e*, 67/272.
- Niping, *s.* niggard; *d. s.* nipinge, 30.

Ny-wrþe = ne y-wurþe, become  
not, 112/184.

Noch = nocht, naught, 200/10.

Nocht, Nogt, Noht. *See* Nowiht.

Nolde, Noldestu. *See* Nele.

Nom. *See* Nimen.

Noman, *pron.* 21/650.

Nome. *See* Nimen.

Nome, name, 25/800.

Nome, *s.* name, 39/71; *pl.* no-  
man, 145/16.

Nomen. *See* Nimen.

Non, *s.* the ninth hour (which,  
at the equinoxes, is our 3 o'clock),  
50/478.

Non, *adj. or pron.* no, none; *n.*  
*s. m.* non, 37/17, noon, 31; *a. s. m.*  
nenne, 40/114, 43/216; *d. s. f.*  
nore, 56/676; *a. s. f.* none, 39/66;  
*g. s. n.* nones, 50/446; *d. s. n.*  
none, 38/52.

Nore. *See* Non.

Norhamtone schire, Northamp-  
tonshire, 146/50.

Norð, *adv.* 4/114.

Norþfolc, Norfolk, 146/47.

Norþhumbre, Northumberland,  
146/34.

Norþwych, Norwich, 145/11.

Nos. *See* Neose.

Nostu. *See* Not.

Not, *v. ind. pres. sg.* 1. know  
not, 45/287, 193/19, noth, 101/  
4(3); 2. nostu, knowest thou not,  
48/409; *pl.* nvtēn, 49/442, nuten,  
66/232; *pret. sg.* 3. niste, 29, nuste,  
38/36; *pl.* nusten, 44/242, 65/221,  
nuste, 40/96.

Noten, *v. ind. pres. pl.* use, eat,  
19/612.

Noth. *See* Not.

Noþeles, *conj.* nevertheless, 43/  
214.

Nouht. *See* Nowiht.

Noule, *s.* navel, 18/561.

Nout. *See* Nowiht.

Nouþer, 165/33, Nowðer, 164/  
33, *conj.* neither.

Nowiht, 43/204, Nowyht, 44/  
253, Nounht, 37/15, Noht, 182/220,  
Nocht, 192/11, Nogt, 5/147, 7/  
216, Nauht, 90/3(2), Nacht, 28,  
Nozt, 186/6, Nowit, 121/284,  
Nout, 195/39, Nowt, 158/50, Nat,  
105/57, *pron.* naught, very often  
used merely to strengthen another  
negative; nocht for þan = never-  
theless, 36.

Nowor, *adv.* nowhere, 2/52.

Nozt. *See* Nowiht.

Nu, *adv.* now, 27; nv, 37/1.

Nule, Nultu. *See* Nele.

Nummor, 18/579, Nummore, 9/  
290.

Nunnen, *s. pl.* nuns, 77/169.

Nuste, Nusten, Nuten. *See* Not.

Nuþen, 85/56, Nuþe, 41/124, 46/  
306, *adv.* now.

Ny . . . . *See* Ni . . . .

O. *See* On.

O, *adv.* ever, 73/30, 149/68.

O, *prep.* on, in, 3/54, 5/120.

Oc, *conj.* but, 5/139, 7/189.

Oc, *conj.* eke, also, 3/71, 10/308.

Oche, *adj.* each, 212/71

Ocur, *s.* usury, 226/126.

Of-drede, *v. inf.* fear, 63/163;  
*p.p.* of-dred, afraid, in dread, 41/  
152; *pl.* of-dredde, 40/95.

Of-dryue, *v. inf.* drive away, 93/  
23.

Ofer-howeþ, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* de-  
spises, 128/445.

Ofer-stieð, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* sur-  
mounts, 192/1.

Off = of, 4/119.

Of-ferd, *p.p.* afeard, afraid, 81/  
268; *pl.* -e, 54/603.

- Offrendes, *s. pl.* offerings, 26.  
 Offri, *v. inf.* offer, 26; *ind. pret. pl.* offrede, 27; *subj. pres. pl.* offre, 27; *p.p. i-offred*, 28.  
 Offrigt, *p.p.* affrighted, 24/762.  
 Offrinke, *s.* offering, 27; *pl.* offringes, 28.  
 Offrucht, *p.p.* affrighted, terrified, 54/601.  
 Of-kende, *v. ind. pret.* 3 *s.* bore, 164/42.  
 Of-longed, *p.p.* desirous, 37/14.  
 Of-reden, *v. inf.* out-counsel, out-wit, 136/642.  
 Of-riden, *v. inf.* outride, 136/641.  
 Of-schomed, *p.p.* ashamed, 41/137.  
 Of-seruet, 28, Ofserueth, 30, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* merits, earns.  
 Ofsprung, *s.* offspring, 38/23, 142/21.  
 Ofte, *adv.* 8/237.  
 Of-pinche, 71/366, Of-punche, 65/203, *impers. v. inf.* cause regret, repent, rue; *ind. pres.* of-pincheb, 58/10, 62/132, of-pinket, 133/531.  
 Of-purst, *p.p.* athirst, thirsty, 151/166.  
 Og, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* owes, ought, 11/350, 12/371; *pl.* ogen, 10/293, 12/370, 25/786.  
 Oge, 107/85, Oghe, 30, *adj.* own.  
 Ogt, *pron.* aught, 24/760.  
 Ohen, *v. ind. pres. pl.* ought, 168/2.  
 Old, *adj.* 4/90; *def. -e*, 10/293; *comp.* eldre, 58/1.  
 Oliue, alive, 22/712.  
 Olyuete, Olivet, 41/127.  
 Olon, *adv.* alone, 20/644.  
 On, *prep.* 1/1.  
 On, *adj.* one, an, a; *n. s. m. o.*, 44/263, 110/121; *d. s. m. one*, 54/615; *a. s. m. enne*, 54/616, en, 50/450, aue, 33; *n. s. f. on*, 59/29; *d. s. f. ore*, 65/207, 84/12, ane, 29; *a. s. f. one*, 37/1, 48/382, o, 94/49; al on on = continuously, 24/771.  
 On, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* grants, allows, 116/239, 116/241; *pret.* 1 *s.* oupe, 81/272.  
 Onde, *s.* malice, envy, 65/193, 72/9, 97/132.  
 Onde, *s.* breath, 13/407, 16/507, 24/753.  
 Onder, *prep.* under, 107/64.  
 Onder, ? = wonder = wonderful, or on der = in wild beasts', 22/684.  
 Ondswear, *s.* answer, account, 170/40.  
 One, *prep.* on, 14/436, 16/504.  
 One, *adv.* alone, only, 22/709, 104/45.  
 Ones, *adv.* once, 22/697.  
 Ongel, *s.* angel, 27.  
 Oni, *adj.* any, 16/492.  
 Onlepi, 28, On-lepy, 90/3(2), *adj.* single.  
 Onlepiliche, *adv.* only, 28.  
 On-on, *adv.* anon, 10/312.  
 On-suerren, *v. inf.* answer, 137/666.  
 Onswere, *s.* answer, 45/267.  
 Onswerye, *v. inf.* answer, 44/252; *ind. pret. pl.* onswerede, 44/248.  
 On-perst = athirst, 219/281.  
 On-uri, *v. inf.* honour, 27; *ind. pret. sg.* 3. onurede, 31.  
 Onwolde, *s.* power, 67/264.  
 Or, *adv.* before, previously, 5/139, 7/208; *conj.* ere, before, 4/91.  
 Ordent, *p.p.* ordained, 212/59.  
 Ordre, *s.* order, 57/700.  
 Ore. See On.  
 Ore, *s.* mercy, pity, 160/29.  
 Oreisun, a orison, prayer, 195/5.  
 Ore-les, *adj.* merciless, 65/216.  
 Orgeilus, *adj.* proud, 30.

- Orgul-prude, *s.* pride, 121/286.
- Orn, *v. pret.* 3 *s.* ran, 42/162, 86/65.
- Oter, *s.* otter, 70/358.
- Oſe, on the, 21/673.
- Oſer, *conj.* or, 1/3; oſer—oſer, either—or, 1/11.
- Oper, *adj.* other, second; *g. s. m.* oſres, 12/360; *d. s. m.* opren, 27; *n. s. f.* ope, 65/198; *n. s. n.* ope, 145/9; *pl.* oſre, 11/356.
- Operluker, *adv.* otherwise, 63/155.
- Otwinne, *adv.* in two, 9/269, 10/296.
- Ou, *pron.* you, 81/272, 104/29, 168/5.
- Ouel, evil, 18/583.
- Oueral, *adv.* all about, everywhere, 24/748.
- Ouer-cumeſ, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* surpasses, 24/749; *pret. s.* 3. ouercom, overcame, 38/34.
- Ouerdede, *adj.* excessive, 193/41.
- Ouer-gangin, *v. inf.* trespass, 129/444.
- Ouer-goþ, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* surpasses, 114/216.
- Ouermod, *adj.* proud; *pl.* -e, 81/269.
- Ouer-prute, *s.* pride, 120/286.
- Ouer-syhp, *v.* 3 *s.* surveys, 60/74.
- Ouerwene, *s.* presumption, 11/335.
- Ouese, *s.* eaves, 15/465.
- Ouht, *pron.* aught, 39/83.
- Ouhte, *v. subj. pret. pl.* ought, 41/153.
- Ouir, *prep.* over, 105/44.
- Ous, *pron.* us, 195/42.
- Ovt, 22/683, Out, 20/645, *pron.* aught.
- Oupe. See On, *v.*
- Ow, *pron.* you, 166/70.
- Owen, *v. pres. pl.* ought, 64/174.
- Ower, *adj.* your; *n. s. f.* ower, 114/213; *pl.* owre, 166/79, oure, 166/68.
- Ower = over, 135/600.
- Owere, *adj. d. s. f.* own, 106/85.
- Oxeneford schire, Oxfordshire, 146/55.
- Paens, *s. pl.* pagans, 35.
- Paide, *v. ind. pret.* 3 *s.* paid, 33.
- Painime, *s.* heathendom, 28.
- Palefray, *s.* palfray, 39/67.
- Palle, *s.* a rich kind of cloth, 168/10.
- Palme-sune-day, *s.* Palm Sunday, 39/65.
- Panewes. See Peni.
- Panther, *s.* panther, 23/733, 24/760.
- Paradys, *s.* Paradise; *d. s.* -e, 50/466.
- Parais, 195/2, Parays, 195/33, *s.* Paradise.
- Pardurableliche, *adv.* perpetually, eternally, 31.
- Parel, *s.* peril, 210/12.
- Passyng, *i. p.* exceeding, 213/87.
- Pater noster, *s.* 4/113, 190/67.
- Patriarches, *s. pl.* 34.
- Pel, *s.* pall, a rich stuff, 97/146.
- Pelrimage, *s.* pilgrimage, 28.
- Peni, 170/27, Peny, 171/27, *s.* penny; *pl.* panewes, 40/119.
- Penwyþ steort, 145/1.
- Peple, *s.* people, 92/62.
- Peril, *s.* 32.
- Perisset, *v. ind. pres. pl.* perish, 32; *subj. pres. pl.* perissi, 33.
- Persones, *s. pl.* parsons, 188/51.
- Pet, *s.* pit, 216/189.
- Peté, *s.* pity, 219/273.
- Phariseus, *s. pl.* Pharisees, 42/178.

- Pich, 65/218, 149/77, Pych, 66/241, Pisch, 180/211, *s.* pitch.  
 Pykes, *s. pl.* spikes, 149/70.  
 Pylates, Pilate, 46/323.  
 Pyn, 139/20, Pyne, 82/311, *s.* pain, suffering.  
 Playdurs, *s. pl.* pleaders, 76/133.  
 Pleye, *v. inf.* play, 97/133.  
 Plenteuesnes, *s.* plenty, 212/47.  
 Plouh, *s.* plough, 108/95; *pl.* plouis, 109/95.  
 Ponyschid, *p.p.* punished, 217/220.  
 Ponyschyng, *s.* punishment, 217/222.  
 Pool, *s.* 149/81.  
 Pouere, *adj.* poor, 81/292.  
 Pouernesse, *s.* poverty, 75/113.  
 Poule, Paul, 210/4.  
 Poure, *adj.* poor, 6/184, 104/39.  
 Praie, *v. subj. pres. sg.* pray, 195/3.  
 Preche, 44/258, Prechi, 38/41, 39/73, *v. inf.* preach; *subj. pret.* prechede, 39/83.  
 Preching, 56/671, Prechyng, 56/676, *s.* preaching.  
 Prede, *s.* pride, 33.  
 Preoneſ, *v. ind. pres. 3 s.* sews, stitches, 172/68.  
 Preost, 76/121, Prest, 7/209, Proest, 184/4, *s.* priest.  
 Present, *s.* 92/54.  
 Preue, *v.* prove, test, 210/13.  
 Pride, *s.* 11/335.  
 Prynce, *s.* 91/39; *pl.* princes, 44/239.  
 Pris, *s.* prize, 98/164.  
 Prysun, *s.* prison; *d. s. -e*, 41/145, 48/376.  
 Prophete, *s.* 38/26; *g. s.* prophetes, 92/54; *pl.* profetes, 27, prophetes, 21/678.  
 Prude, 38/35, 74/79, Prute, 95/85, *s.* pride.  
 Pruden, *v. inf.* † to make proud or gay, 138/686.  
 Prut, *adj.* proud, gay, 144/107; *pl. -e*, 39/75; *comp.* pruttere, 193/42.  
 Puke, *s.* devil, 76/120.  
 Purse, *s.* 188/39.  
 Put, *s.* pit, 195/44, 228/194.  
 Puteſ, *v. ind. pres. 3 s.* puts, 21/669.  
 Py . . . . See Pi . . . .  
 Quad. See Quep.  
 Quakie, *v. inf.* quake, 193/16.  
 Qual, *s.* † whale, 23/735.  
 Qued, *s.* scorn, contempt, 120/305.  
 Qued, *s.* evil, harm, 227/142.  
 Qued, *adj.* evil, wicked; *def.* quede, 39/62.  
 Quede, *s.* evil one, devil, 44/250.  
 Quele, *v. subj. pres. sg.* die, 112/155.  
 Quelle, *v. inf.* kill, 46/310; *ind. pret. pl.* quolde, 92/57.  
 Queme, *v. inf.* please, 61/96; *ind. pres. 3 s.* qwemeſ, 9/259.  
 Quen, 196/21, Quene, 195/33, *s.* queen, woman; *g. s.* quene, 122/336.  
 Quenche, *v. inf.* 66/244; *ind. pres. 3 s.* quenchet, 11/344.  
 Quenching, *s.* 7/207.  
 Quep, 40/111, 120/285, Quap, 86/59, Quad, 105/25, 107/61, *v. ind. pret. 3 s.* quoth, said; *pl.* quepen, 40/97, 146/33; *i. p.* quebinde, saying, 100/4.  
 Queſsipe, *s.* craft, 12/387.  
 Quiddeþ, *v. ind. pres. pl.* say, 85/55.  
 Quik, *adj.* alive, living; *d. s. -e*, 11/341; *pl.* quyke, 60/78.

Quite, 46/310, Quyt, 47/370,  
*adj.* quit, free.

Quiten, *v. inf.* pay for, 190/77.

Quolde. *See* Quelle.

Qwemeč. *See* Queme.

Rabony, *s.* rahboni, 53/579.

Racches, *s. pl.* hounds, 92/71.

Rad, *p.p.* read, 229/241.

Radden. *See* Reden.

Rake, *s.* 180/214.

Raketeye, *s.* chain, 67/277.

Ranegates, *s. pl.* renegades, 212/63.

Rapelike, *adv.* hastily, 8/240,  
15/477.

Račē, *adv.* quickly, soon, 13/419,  
14/435; *comp.* račē, 62/133.

Rauen, *s.* raven, 13/408.

Raueners, *s. pl.* raveners, plunderers, 211/36, 212/63.

Rauht, *p.p.* stretched, 90/5(2).

Rauisschers, 225/80, Rauisschours, 225/80, *s. pl.* ravishers.

Recchen, 82/296, Recche, 75/104, Reche, 23/714, *v. inf.* reck, care; *ind. pres.* 1 *s.* recche, 63/143; 3. rekþ, 62/135; *pret. pl.* rouhte, 81/270.

Red, 46/319, Reid, 123/329, *s.* advice, counsel; *d. s.* -e, 37/18.

Rede, *v. inf.* advise, 160/39; *ind. pret. pl.* redde, 52/539.

Reden, 108/103, Rede, 41/131, *v. inf.* read; *ind. pres. pl.* redeth, 26; *pret. pl.* radden, 50/469.

Redi, *adj.* ready, 6/153, 13/408.

Redliese, *adj. def.* without advice, 193/27.

Refuit, *s.* refuge, 231/282.

Reherse het = rehearsed, *v. pret.* told, 212/60.

Rei, *adj.* rough, fierce, 138/682, 138/693.

Reid. *See* Red.

Reyne, *s.* kingdom, 95/71.

Reyng, *v.* reign, 221/325.

Reisen, *v. inf.* raise, 21/676; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* reiseč, 1/21; *pl.* reisen, 21/671; *pret.* 3 *s.* reiseđe, 22/692.

Reiþe, *s.* þe reiþe = the earth, 111/126.

Rekeni, *v. inf.* reckon, 193/44.

Rekþ. *See* Recchen.

Reles, *v. inf.* relax, 220/306.

Religiun, *s.* 29.

Rem, *s.* cry, 1/22, 21/664.

Reme, *adj.* † roomy, broad, 136/617.

Remen, *v. inf.* cry out, 77/167, 164/22; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* remetč, 21/652; *pret. pl.* remeden, 22/684.

Reming, *s.* crying out, 21/666.

Remmesbury, 145/13.

Rencyan, *s.* a robe of a roan colour, 92/70, 96/106.

Rennen, *v. inf.* run, 11/340; ren, 212/49; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* renneč, 8/240, 15/477; *pret.* 3 *s.* ron, 51/500; *pl.* runnen, 140/53; *i. p.* rennande, 21/667.

Reowe, 59/22, 73/36, Rewen, 18/552, Rewe, 96/95, *v. inf.* rue; *ind. pres. pl.* rewweþ, 196/22; *subj. pres. sg.* rewe, 9/286.

Reowe, *v. inf.* row, 110/145.

Repen, *v. inf.* reap, 59/23.

Repreuyd, *v. ind. pret.* reproved, 214/123.

Rere, *v.* raise, 121/299.

Res, *s.* race, 93/10.

Resayuyd, *v. ind. pret.* received, 216/188.

Resteč, *v.* rests, 8/241.

Reuen, *s. pl.* reeves, 67/252.

Reueres, *s. pl.* robbers, 97/149, 186/27.

Reufulike, *adv.* ruefully, 21/652.



- Reving, *s.* robbery, 67/249.  
 Revly, *adv.* piteously, 152/192.  
 Reusful, *adj.* pitiful, sorrowful, 186/15.  
 Reupe, *s.* sorrow, pity, 46/322, 95/75.  
 Ricchest, *adj. superl.* richest, 96/97.  
 Riche, *s.* kingdom, 23/732, 54/585.  
 Richt, *adj.* right, 33.  
 Richt, 192/9, Rict, 107/79, *adv.* right.  
 Riden, *v.* ride; *ind. pret. sg.* 3. rod, 39/68; *i. p.* rydinde, 39/69.  
 Rigť, *adv.* right, straight, 3/68.  
 Rigť, *adj.* straight; *d. s. -e*, 3/86, 17/550.  
 Rigten, *v. inf.* straighten, set right, 4/117; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* rigťeš, 5/152.  
 Rigťewis, *adj.* righteous, 105/55.  
 Ryzťful, *adj.* righteous, 218/236.  
 Ryzťwyse, *adj.* righteous, 221/339.  
 Ryzťwysly, *adv.* righteously, 221/348.  
 Ryhte, *v. inf.* righten, 52/544.  
 Rihtful, *adj.* righteous, 225/68.  
 Ryhtleche, *v. inf.* set right, 86/57.  
 Rihtwis, *adj.* righteous, 104/55.  
 Rym, *s.* rime, 99/193; *d. s.* rime, 22/695.  
 Rimen, *v. inf.* make room, clear out, depart, 113/170.  
 Rypun, Ripon, 146/31.  
 Risen, *v. inf.* rise, 20/627, 21/653; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* riseš, 24/746; *pret.* 3. ros, 2/45; *i. p.* risinde, 26.  
 Ryst, *s.* rest, 220/290.  
 Ryne, *adj. pl.* frequent, 93/19.  
 Riueš, 156/14, Ryueš, 157/14, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* rends, rives.  
 Ro, *s.* rest, quietness, 93/20.  
 Robberes, *s. pl.* 186/27.  
 Robbinge, *s.* 25/792.  
 Robe, *s.* 39/66; *pl.* robes, 92/70.  
 Roberie, *s.* robbery, 30.  
 Robin, 190/73/83, Robyn, 191/73/83.  
 Roche, *s.* rock, 92/77.  
 Rod. *See* Riden.  
 Rode, *s.* cross, 48/396.  
 Rod-tre, *s.* cross, 221/337.  
 Rof, *s.* roof, 15/465, 178/155.  
 Rogen, *v. inf.* row, 111/145.  
 Ron, *s.* poem, song, 93/2.  
 Ron, *s.* 1 field, 92/71.  
 Ron. *See* Rennen.  
 Ronk, *adj.* rank, strong; *def. -e*, 92/71.  
 Ros. *See* Risen.  
 Rotye, *v. inf.* rot, 92/72; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* rotieš, 13/409.  
 Rou, *s.* peace, quietness, 220/299.  
 Roucestre, Rochester, 145/10.  
 Rouhte. *See* Recchen.  
 Rude, *s.* complexion, 193/20.  
 Rune, *s.* secret, 61/88.  
 Runeš, *v. ind. pres. pl.* whisper, 188/59.  
 Runnen. *See* Rennen.  
 Ruskit, *v. ind. pres. pl.* roam, 92/71.  
 Russet, *s.* 92/70.  
 Ry . . . . *See* Ri . . . .  
 Sablyne, *s.* 1 fur of the sable, 70/358.  
 Sacande. *See* Sakeš.  
 Sacrefise, *s.* 27.  
 Sad, *adj.* sated, satiated, 94/50.  
 Sad, *v. ind. pret.* 3 *s.* shed, 194/15.  
 Sadelbowe, 116/229, Sadilbowe, 117/229, *s.*

Sadue, *s.* shadow, 20/648.  
 Saf, *adj.* safe, 225/67.  
 Sage, *s.* saw, saying, 19/600, 125/361.  
 Sagen, *v. inf.* say, 134/576; *ind. pres.* 1 *s.* saige, 133/524.  
 Sageſ, *v.* 3 *s.* saws, 20/640.  
 Sagin, *p.p.* sown, 111/123.  
 Sainte, 192/1(2).  
 Sake, *s.* fault, blame, 95/62.  
 Sakeſ, *v.* 3 *s.* shakes, jogs, 9/264; *i. p.* sacande, 21/660.  
 Sal. *See* Schal.  
 Salit, *s.* salt, 131/470.  
 Salomon, Solomon, 44/245, 96/114.  
 Salt. *See* Schal.  
 Salt, *adj.* 66/244.  
 Samarie, Samaria, 84/6; *gen.* Samaryes, 85/41.  
 Same, *s.* shame, 9/265, 14/441.  
 Same, ? = samen, *adv.* together, 14/447.  
 Samne, *v. inf.* join, 105/34.  
 Sampnen, *v. ind. pres. pl.* join, copulate, 19/608.  
 Sapien, *p.p.* shapen, fashioned, 23/736.  
 Saphir, *s.* sapphire, 96/115, 98/173.  
 Sardonë, *s.* sardonyx, 98/173.  
 Saresbury, Salisburi, 145/12.  
 Sarmun, *s.* sermon, 31.  
 Sarp, *adj.* sharp, 51/498; *pl.* sarpe, 13/421.  
 Satanas, 4/96, Sathanas, 38/28, 68/281, Satan; *gen.* Sathanases, 79/221.  
 Sathan, Satan, 147/17.  
 Sau, *v. inf.* save, 198/49; *imp. sg.* 2. saue, 32, sauue, 33; *p.p.* issauued, 33.  
 Sauht, *s.* reconciliation, peace, 90/1, 97/134.

Sauhte, *v. imper.* reconcile, make peace, 86/3.  
 Saule, *s.* soul, 71/390; *g. pl.* saulene, 91/41; *a. pl.* saule, 56/692, sa[u]lle, 105/33, sawle, 168/87, saulen, 56/682.  
 Sauue. *See* Sau.  
 Sawe, *v. ind. pres.* 1 *s.* say, 123/326.  
 Sawe, *s.* saw, saying, 124/361; *pl.* sawen, 105/35.  
 Sawin, *v. inf.* say, 136/631.  
 Sayde, Sayden. *See* Seggen.  
 Sayn, 'for sayn,' for certain. A.S. sægen, a saying, affirmation, 91/16.  
 Scab, *s.* 31.  
 Scal. *See* Schal.  
 Scapen, *v. inf.* escape, 111/143.  
 Scarlat, 92/69, Skarlet, 168/10, *s.*  
 Scarned, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* scorns, 117/238.  
 Scaſe, *s.* harm, 18/569.  
 Scene, 196/21, Schene, 70/337, 120/310, *adj.* bright, beautiful.  
 Scep, *s. pl.* sheep, 149/86.  
 Schadewe, *s.* shadow, 94/32.  
 Schaft, *s.* creature; *pl.* schafte, 61/83.  
 Schal, *v. ind. pres. sg.* 1. shall, 41/159, scal, 101/6(3); 2. schalt, 41/142, salt, 7/201, schald, 156/22, schaltu, 44/265; 3. schal, 40/104, scal, 40/93, sal, 2/25; *pl.* sculen, 178/157, scule, 41/134, scullen, 113/176, schulen, 69/324, schullen, 42/187, schule, 59/23, schulle, 55/630, schulep, 82/316, schullep, 61/103, sulen, 9/280, 19/609, sulin, 103/16, sollen, 33, 115/200, sulle, 34, schil, 215/156, sollie = solle ye, 32; *subj. pres. sg.* schulle, 41/144, sule, 107/71; *ind. & subj. pret. sg.* 2. schuldest, 50/472; 3. scolde, 50/447, 121/290, sculde, 52/532, schulde, 67/260, scholde, 59/38, solde, 119/279,

- sulde, 5/149, sold, 119/277; *pl.*  
 scolden, 67/263, scolde, 37/17,  
 schulden, 60/50, schulde, 59/48,  
 scholden, 67/263, scholde, 60/61.  
 Schald, *adj.* cold, 30.  
 Schald, Schalt, Schaltu. *See*  
 Schal.  
 Schapen, *v.* create; *ind. pret. sg.*  
 3. scop, 51/483, 52/535, scheop,  
 184/257, schop, 61/83.  
 Scharp, *adj.* sharp; *d. s.* -e,  
 95/69.  
 Schawedest. *See* Schewen.  
 Schechep. *See* Seche.  
 Scheden, *v. inf.* shed, 47/346,  
 separate, 91/15; schede, ruin, 92/  
 47; *ind. pres. pl.* schedep, separate,  
 70/342; *pret. pl.* schedden, shed,  
 39/64.  
 Schef, *v. pret. sg.* 3. shoved, 51/  
 499.  
 Scheft, *s.* shaft, arrow, 95/72.  
 Schelchene, *s.* maid, servant, 45/  
 279.  
 Scheld, *s.* shield, 87/13.  
 Schench, *s.* cup; *d. s.* -e, 69/329.  
 Schencheſ, *v. ind. pres. sg.* 3.  
 pours out, 174/92.  
 Schenden, *v. inf.* put to shame,  
 disgrace, 79/226; schende, 52/  
 549, schiende, 193/34; *p.p.* schend,  
 222/362.  
 Schendful, *adj.* disgraceful, 120/  
 311.  
 Schendnesse, *s.* shame, 45/275.  
 Schene. *See* Scene.  
 Scheop. *See* Schapen.  
 Schep, *s. pl.* sheep, 37/5.  
 Schere. *See* Sker and Skeren.  
 Schete, *s.* sheet, 120/310.  
 Schewen, *v. inf.* show, 54/620,  
 shown, 91/13; *ind. pres. sg.* 3.  
 schewep, 81/267; *pret. sg.* 2.  
 schawedest, 140/52; 3. schewede,  
 54/610, sewede, 54/618.  
 Schiende. *See* Schenden.  
 Schil. *See* Schal.  
 Schilde, *v. inf.* shield, guard, 69/  
 330.  
 Schinen, *v.* shine; *ind. pres. sg.*  
 3. schinep, 67/273, schynep, 98/  
 184, shinep, 73/46; *i. p.* schyn-  
 ynde, 91/18.  
 Schire, 145/6, Schiren, 146/40,  
*s. pl.* shires.  
 Schireburne, Shirburn, 145/14.  
 Schirreue, *s.* sheriff, 60/51.  
 Scho, *s.* shoe, 156/29; *d. pl.*  
 schon, 193/42.  
 Scholde, Scholden. *See* Schal.  
 Schome, *s.* shame, 45/271, 47/348.  
 Schomeles, *adj.* shameless, 184/8.  
 Schomeliche, *adv.* shamefully,  
 186/9.  
 Schomeuast, *adj.* modest; *pl.* -e,  
 80/240.  
 Schomye, *v. inf.* shame, 41/124,  
 79/231; scomye, 41/130, scumi,  
 198/29, schome, 80/253.  
 Schon. *See* Scho.  
 Schonde. *See* Scond.  
 Schonye, *v. inf.* shun, avoid, 63/  
 158.  
 Schop. *See* Schapen.  
 Schotte, 126/411, ? read *scholde*,  
 should, and for *sotte*, l. 412, read  
*scolde*.  
 Schredeþ, *v. ind. pres. pl.* cut,  
 83/328.  
 Schrifte. *See* Scrift.  
 Schrinke, *v. inf.* shrink, 80/245.  
 Schryue, *v. inf.* shrive, confess,  
 79/229; shryue, 215/138.  
 Schrud, *s.* garment, 168/3, 172/72.  
 Schruden, *v.* clothe; *ind. pret.*  
*pl.* schrudden, 81/283; *p.p.* iscrud,  
 55/646.  
 Schulde, Schuldest, Schulden.  
*See* Schal.

Schuldre, *s.* shoulder, 49/435.  
 Schule, Schulen, Schulep, Schulle, Schullen, Schullep. *See* Schal.  
 Schullich, 92/64, *is probably miswritten for* Schullen.  
 Sclep, *s.* sleep, 131/473.  
 Sclepen, *v. inf.* sleep, 131/468.  
 Scold, 127/412, Scolde, 138/705, *s.*  
 Scolde, Scolden. *See* Schal.  
 Scomye. *See* Schomye.  
 Scond, 151/158, Schonde, 49/432, 166/62, *s.* shame, disgrace.  
 Scop. *See* Schapen.  
 Scotlaund, 146/37.  
 Scrift, 52/549, Scryft, 74/68, *s.* shrift, confession; *d. s.* scrifte, 7/208, schrifte, 80/239.  
 Sculde, Scule, Sculen, Scullen. *See* Schal.  
 Scumes, *s. pl.* ?scum, bubbles, 122/334.  
 Scumi. *See* Schomye.  
 Scurges, *s. pl.* scourges, 140/28.  
 Se, *art.* the, 26, 28.  
 Se, 17/520, Sea, 61/82, *s.* sea; *g. s.* sees, 17/523.  
 Se, *v.* *See* Seon.  
 Seauinge, *s.* showing, vision, 26.  
 Seaweth, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* shows, 33; *pret.* seawede, 27.  
 Seche, *v. inf.* seek, 53/555; *ind. pres. sg.* 3. sekþ, 65/215, sekeþ, 3/62; *pl.* secheþ, 42/185, schecheþ, 66/235, seche, 42/182; *pret. sg.* 3. sohte, 166/54, souhte, 167/54; *pl.* souhte, 42/191; *subj. pres. sg.* seche, 53/568; *imp. pl.* 2. secheþ, 27; *p.p.* isouht, 46/306, 53/572.  
 Sed, *s.* seed, 8/244; *pl.* sedes, 108/93, sedis, 109/93.  
 Sed. *See* Seon.  
 Sede. *See* Seggen.  
 Seeten. *See* Sitten.

Seftes, *s. pl.* creatures, 15/456.  
 Seggen, *v.* say, tell, speak; *inf.* seggen, 45/302, segge, 39/68, siggen, 30, sigge, 28, seien, 117/239; *ind. pres. sg.* 1. segge, 45/294, sigge, 30, sig, 138/706, seie, 21/680; 2. seyst, 40/111, 45/287, seystu = seyst þu, 47/350; 3. seyþ, 39/62, 62/112, seieþ, 14/448, seiet, 123/348, seit, 22/703, seid, 36; *pl.* seggeþ, 41/129; *pret. sg.* 1. seyde, 44/261; 3. seide, 27, seyde, 38/37, sayde, 51/505, sede, 193/43; *pl.* seyden, 39/59, 40/98, sayden, 46/313, seyde, 39/71; *subj. pres. sg.* segge, 51/502; *pl.* seggen, 52/523; *imp.* 2 *s.* seye, 46/331, 53/573, saye, 54/585, sey, 85/39, say, 46/306, seit = sei hit, 117/229; *p.p.* i-seid, 26, iseyd, 40/96, yseyd, 51/483, i-sait, 123/328, seid, 21/673.  
 Seghe, Seghen. *See* Seon.  
 Se-grund, *s.* bottom of the sea, 16/517.  
 Seid, Seien, Seiet. *See* Seggen.  
 Seinte, 26, Seynt, 38/26, Seynte, 41/137, *s.* saint.  
 Seyst, Seystu. *See* Seggen.  
 Seipin, *adv.* afterwards, 136/635.  
 Seywinge, *s.* showing, manifestation, 27.  
 Seyzinge, *i. p.* saying, 229/233.  
 Sek, *adj.* sick, 65/199.  
 Sel, *s.* seal, 52/531, 99/194.  
 Selcup, *s.* wonder, marvel, 90/5; *pl.* selcubes, 18/556.  
 Seld, *s.* shield, 6/161.  
 Selden, 121/301, Selde, 59/47, 69/322, Seldum, 8/241, *adv.* seldom.  
 Sele, *s.* happiness, bliss, 86/3, 121/301.  
 Selþe, 58/16, Selþe, 125/362, *s.* good fortune.  
 Sely, 92/53, 124/378, Seoly, 97/143, *adj.* happy, blessed.

- Selleſ*, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* gives, 16/494.  
*Selliche*, *adv.* wonderfully, 121/300.  
*Seluer*, *Selure*. *See* *Seoluer*.  
*Selues*, *Selwe*, *Selwen*. *See* *Seolf*.  
*Senden*, *v. ind. pres. pl.* are, 3/79, 18/555.  
*Senden*, 55/636, *Sende*, 60/52, *v. inf.* send; *ind. pres. pl.* sendeþ, 59/43; *pret. sg.* 3. sende, 55/652.  
*Sending*, *s.* disgrace, 14/441.  
*Sene*, *adj.* seen, manifest, 15/457.  
*Senne*, *s.* sin, 28; *pl.* sennen, 31.  
*Sennulle*, *adj.* sinful, 31.  
*Seolf*, 40/114, 41/156, *Self*, 51/512, *Seolue*, 38/47, 89/29, *Seluen*, 20/644, *Selwen*, 127/399, *Selwe*, 129/426, *Selues* (? for *seluen*), 107/64, *adj.* self. *Pe seolue pope* = the very pope, or even the pope.  
*Seoly*. *See* *Sely*.  
*Seolk*, *s.* silk, 91/23.  
*Seolken*, *adj.* silken; *d. s.* -e, 77/164.  
*Seollich*, *s.* strange thing, wonder, marvel, 64/181.  
*Seoluer*, 67/261, 89/30, *Seluer*, 188/40, *s.* silver; *d. s.* seolure, 89/19, *selure*, 28.  
*Seon*, *v. see*; *inf.* seon, 63/164, *seo*, 94/31; *ger.* to seonne, 71/380; *ind. pres. sg.* 2. sixst, 184/1; 3. seþ, 3/65, *sed*, 117/236; *pl.* sen, 17/529; *pret. sg.* 3. seyh, 53/561, say3, 225/65, sau3, 225/91; *pl.* seyen, 51/495, seghe, 27, seghe, 30, seize, 230/274, seih, 231/291, se, 210/6; *subj. pres. sg.* se, 5/146; *pret. sg.* sege, 119/273, soqe, 16/502; *p.p.* i-seghe, 32, sezen, 229/236, sen, 8/237.  
*Seonne*, *s. pl.* sins, 192/5(2), 193/37.  
*Seop*, *s.* sheep, 41/134.  
*Seopheorde*, *s.* shepherd, 41/133.  
*Seorhe*, 160/22, *Seorþe*, 192/5, *Seorewe*, 63/146, 65/204, *Serewe*, 92/53, *Sorewe*, 65/194, *Soruge*, 123/333, *Sorwe*, 195/7, *Sorw*, 115/189, *Serwe*, 232/314, *s.* sorrow; *pl.* seorewen, 93/19, *sorghen*, 32.  
*Seoppe*, 37/12, *Seppen*, 62/117, *Seþpe*, 38/47, 41/149, *Sopen*, 190/78, *Soppe*, 89/11, *adv.* afterwards, 43/203, 44/255; *conj.* after, 37/12, since, 58/9, 92/52.  
*Seouene*, 59/29, 75/35, *Seoue*, 63/146, *Seuene*, 3/66, *Seuen*, 74/73, *adj.* seven.  
*Seoueþe*, *adj.* seventh, 145/12.  
*Seowe*. *See* *Sowen*.  
*Sep*, *s. pl.* sheep, 2/49, 19/607.  
*Seppande*, *s.* Creator, 15/456.  
*Sepulchre*, *s.* 51/513, 52/521.  
*Serewe*, *Serwe*. *See* *Seorhe*.  
*Sergant*, *s.* servant, 33; *pl.* ser-ganz, 29.  
*Seris*, 221/347, *Serys*, 222/360, *s. pl.* sirs.  
*Sermouye*, *v. inf.* preach sermons, 77/161.  
*Sermun*, *s.* sermon, 92/53, 186/4.  
*Serui*, 29, *Seruy*, 38/40, *Serue*, 74/63, *v. inf.* serve; *subj. pret. pl.* seruede, 69/317; *p.p.* i-serued, 29.  
*Seruyse*, *s.* service, 142/35.  
*Serw3ful*, *adj.* sorrowful, 228/173.  
*Serwyng*, *s.* sorrowing, 229/223.  
*Se-sond*, *s.* sea-sand, 16/504.  
*Set*, *Sete*. *See* *Sitten*.  
*Sete*, *s.* seat, 88/29; *pl.* sete, 73/52.  
*Seter-day*, 232/328, *Setter-day*, 220/295.  
*Seſ* = *sed*, seed, 9/260.  
*Seþpe*, *Seppen*. *See* *Seoppe*.  
*Sette*, *v. inf.* set, 89/3; *ind. pret. sg.* 3. sette, 88/36; *pl.* setten, 48/385, 51/498; *imp.* 2 *s.* sete, 85/29; *p.p.* set, 10/309.

- Seue, *adj.* seven, 229/228.  
 Seueþe, *adj.* seventh, 224/32.  
 Seuorde, 102/1.  
 Sewede. *See* Schewen.  
 Sexe, *adj.* six, 3/66.  
 Sexte, *adj.* sixth, 145/11.  
 Showen. *See* Schewen.  
 Shryue. *See* Schryue.  
 Shuc, 156/27, *miswritten for* Such.  
 Si, *art.* the, 26, 27, 30.  
 Sib, 89/15, Sibbe, 144/98, *s.* peace.  
 Sibbe, *s.* kinsfolk, 59/35, 150/111.  
 Sibbi, *adj.* related, akin; *pl.* -e, 132/484.  
 Sybnesse, *s.* consent, 92/76.  
 Sibsumnesse, *s.* peace, 54/599.  
 Siche = such, 32.  
 Siche, 75/94, Syche, 50/463, 143/74, *v. inf.* sigh.  
 Syde, *adj.* (†) great, 94/47.  
 Syde, *s.* 51/498, 81/266.  
 Sieð, *v.* 3 *s.* sinks, 192/5.  
 Siforde, 103/1.  
 Sige, Sigge, Siggen. *See* Seggen.  
 Signefiance, *s.* signification, meaning, 28.  
 Signefied, 28, Signefieth, 27, *v.* 3 *s.* signifies.  
 Sihte, 97/141, Syhte, 70/361, Sigte, 4/107, *s.* sight; *pl.* sihtes, 68/280.  
 Sik, 31, Sike, 28, *adj.* sick.  
 Sike, *v. ind. pres.* 1 *s.* sigh, 195/7.  
 Siker, 59/43, 90/3(2), Syker, 59/40, *adj.* safe, sure, certain.  
 Siker, *adv.* certainly, 45/286.  
 Sikerliche, *adv.* safely, surely, 33, 125/375; sikerlike, 4/106, 10/322.  
 Silden, *v. inf.* shield, 2/50; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* sildeð, 6/162.  
 Sille, *adj. pl.* shrill, 18/572.  
 Symon, 42/167, 89/7.  
 Symonye, *s.* simony, 89/7.  
 Simple, *adj.* 25/790.  
 Syndon, 145/5, Syndan, 146/33, *v. ind. pres. pl.* are.  
 Sinen, *p.p.* shined, 1/19.  
 Sinful, *adj.* 4/97; *def.* -e, 7/222.  
 Singen, *v.* sing; *inf.* syngen, 91/43, singe, 124/355, sinken, 125/354; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* singeð, 18/570; *pret. sg.* 2. sunge, 178/174; *pl.* sunge, 56/659; *i. p.* syngynde, 39/70.  
 Siniging, 11/344, Sineginge, *s.* sinning, 7/193.  
 Sinken, *v. inf.* sink, 17/538; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* sinkeð, 18/568.  
 Sinne, *s.* sin, 10/298; *pl.* sinnes, 4/90.  
 Sipes, *s. pl.* ships, 17/527, 18/568.  
 Sipmen, *s. pl.* shipmen, 18/574.  
 Sire, 190/81, Syre, 191/81, *s.* father.  
 Syren, *s. pl.* shires, 145 (heading).  
 Siðen, *adv.* afterwards, 3/86; *conj.* after, 3/57, since, 6/160.  
 Siððe, *adv.* since, 193/30.  
 Sitten, *v. inf.* sit, 190/75, sitte, 79/210, sytte, 46/311; *ind. pres. sg.* 3. sit, 20/644, 22/701; *pl.* sytteþ, 169/9, sittet, 168/9; *pret. sg.* 3. set, 40/106, 53/562, sat, 67/259; *pl.* setin, 103/2, seeten, 229/217, sete, 45/281, 102/2; *subj. pret. sg.* sete, 16/504; *imp. pl.* 2. sitteþ, 186/2, sytteþ, 41/150; *i. p.* sittende, becoming, 193/42; *p.p.* iseten, 154/265, isethe, 40/90.  
 Siwen, *v. inf.* keep silence, 136/623.  
 Sixst. *See* Seon.  
 Sixte, *adj.* sixth, 49/424.

- Skariot, Isariot, 41/125.  
 Skarlet. *See* Scarlet.  
 Skemting, *s.* amusement, 14/434.  
 Sker, 63/159, Skere, 47/372, 73/28, 166/78, Schere, 40/89, *adj.* clear, quit, free.  
 Skeren, *v.* clear, excuse; *inf.* schere, 190/85; *subj. pres. sg.* skere, 101/7.  
 Skies, *s. pl.* 3/66.  
 Skinbon, *s.* shinbone, 12/359.  
 Slakien, *v. inf.* become slack, 59/38; *ind. pres. 3 s.* slakeš, 5/126; *pl.* slakes, 223/14.  
 Sklaundird, *v. ind. pret.* slandered, 213/77.  
 Sklawnder, *s.* slander, 215/139.  
 Sleyh, 88/32, Sleih, 226/125, *adj.* sly, skilful.  
 Slep, *s.* sleep, 192/9; *d. s. -e,* 42/166.  
 Slopen, *v. inf.* sleep, 2/24; *ind. pres. sg.* 2. slepestu = slepest þu, 42/167; 3. slepš, 192/13, slepeš, 20/648; *pl.* slepen, 18/576; *pret.* 3 *s.* slep, 24/771; *subj. pres. sg.* slepe, 40/104.  
 Slikeš, 158/43, Slykeš, 159/43, *v. ind. pres. 3 s.* makes sleek.  
 Slit, *v.* 3 *s.* slides, 138/700.  
 Slo, *s.* sloe, a kind of wild plum, 154/274, 160/28.  
 Slobschire, Shropshire, 146/55.  
 Slon, *v. inf.* slay, 27; *ind. pres. 3 s.* sloš, 14/431; *pret.* 3 *s.* slouh, 43/198, slow = smote, 213/90; *pl.* slowyn, slew, 215/135; *subj. pres. sg.* sla, 200/5; *p.p.* islawe, 52/524.  
 Slouh, 185/5, Slou, 184/5, *adj.* slothful.  
 Slouh. *See* Slon.  
 Slumeren, *v. ind. pres. pl.* slumber, 18/576.  
 Snake, *v. subj. pres. sg.* taste, scent, 1/4.  
 Smal, *adj.* small; *def. -e,* 16/515.  
 Smaragde, *s.* emerald, 98/174.  
 Smech, *s.* smoke, 28, 67/275.  
 Smel, *s.* smell, 1/3, 24/747.  
 Smel, *adj.* small, 151/152.  
 Smelleš, *v. ind. pres. 3 s.* 24/751.  
 Smerte, *v. inf.* smart, 83/336, 95/58; *ind. pres. 3 s.* smeorteš, 62/114; *subj. pres. sg.* smeorte, 116/243.  
 Smyche, *s.* smoke, 75/95.  
 Smiten, *v.* smite; *ind. pres. 3 s.* smit, 16/507; *pret. sg.* 3. smot, 43/198; *pl.* smyten, 45/273, 48/388.  
 Smyš, *s.* smith, workman; *g. s. -es,* 39/59.  
 Smoke, *s.* 58/19.  
 Smot. *See* Smiten.  
 Snaken, *s. pl.* snakes, 67/271, 148/48.  
 Snel, *adj.* swift, 97/150; *pl.* snelle, 73/41.  
 Snode, *s.* piece, morsel, 40/108.  
 Snotingham, Nottingham, 146/45.  
 Snov, *s.* snow, 148/47.  
 Snute, *s.* snout, 21/669.  
 So, *adv.* so, 37/13, as, 37/5, 57/705, as if, 52/542; so—so = as—as, 45/301, 56/661.  
 Sodun, *v. ind. pret. pl.* seethed, boiled, 227/133.  
 Sofyrd, *v. pret.* 3 *s.* suffered, 215/152; *pl.* soffred, 227/166.  
 Soft, *adj.*—*d. s. -e,* 81/284; *pl. -e,* gentle, 25/790.  
 Soge. *See* Seon.  
 Sohte. *See* Seche.  
 Sol, *s.* ?filth, 151/162.  
 Sold, Solde, Sollen, Sollie. *See* Schal.  
 Some, *s.* concord, 89/15, 97/134.  
 Somer, *s.* summer, 197/1.

- Sommen, *v. inf.* join, 104/34.  
 Somoni, *v. inf.* summon, 26.  
 Sonde = schonde, shame, disgrace, 17/546.  
 Sonde, *s.* message, 67/259; *pl.* sonde, dishes, 174/106.  
 Sone, *s.* son, 88/26, 153/214.  
 Sone, *adv.* soon, 41/134, 64/169.  
 Sonenday, 232/318, Sononday, 210/1, *s.* Sunday.  
 Sonenyhtes. *Read* Souenyhtes, *g. s.* a week's, 63/146.  
 Song, *s.* 19/600; *d. pl.* -e, 70/347.  
 Sonne, *s.* sun, 50/479.  
 Sop = schop, created, 15/456.  
 Sope, *s.* sup, 151/169.  
 Sor, *s.* pain, grief, sorrow, 65/203, 71/370; *d. s.* -e, 86/76.  
 Sore, *adj.* 59/37.  
 Sore, *adv.* sore, sorely, 40/95, 41/124, 53/557.  
 Sorewe, Sorghen. *See* Seorhe.  
 Sorgeden, *v. ind. pret. pl.* sorrowed, 22/682.  
 Sori, *adj.* sorrowful, 41/147.  
 Sori-mod, 45/298, Sory-mod, 128/446, *adj.* having a sorrowful mind, sorrowful.  
 Sorinesse, 76/125, Sorynesse, 72/18, *s.* sorrow.  
 Soruge. *See* Seorhe.  
 Sot, *adj.* foolish, 59/31; *s.* fool, 160/31; *g. s.* sottes, 128/421, sot-tis, 129/421.  
 Sot-dede, *s. pl.* foolish deeds, 160/37.  
 Sop, *adj.* true, 70/362; *def.* -e, 80/241.  
 Sopen. *See* Seoppe.  
 Sothfast, *adj.* true, 27.  
 Sopliche, *adv.* truly, 78/175, 78/193.  
 Sopnesse, *s.* truth, 47/365.  
 Soppe. *See* Seoppe.  
 Sottes. *See* Sot.  
 Souhte. *See* Seche.  
 Souin, Souit. *See* Sowen.  
 Soule, 51/482, Sowle, 23/715, *s.* soul; *g. s.* sowles, 4/118; *pl.* soulen, 68/280.  
 Soun, *s.* sound, 231/287.  
 Souwes, *s. pl.* sows, 225/91.  
 Sowen, 108/93, Souin, 109/93, *v. inf.* sow; *ind. pres. sg.* 3. soweþ, 106/82, souit, 107/82; *pret. pl.* seowe, 59/23; *p.p.* isowen, 110/123, isowe, 158/33.  
 Spac. *See* Speken.  
 Spakie, *v. inf.* hasten, 192/14.  
 Sparede, *v. ind. pret. pl.* spared, 48/388.  
 Spatten, *v. pret. pl.* spat, 45/272.  
 Speche, *s.* speech, 44/257, 56/668.  
 Spede, *v. inf.* succeed, 67/258, 218/99.  
 Speken, *v. inf.* speak, 63/151, speke, 38/32; *ind. pres. sg.* 2. spekest, 48/408, spekestu = spekest þu, 98/169, spekestu, 96/113; *pret. sg.* 3. spek, 40/109, 41/128, spac, 27; *pl.* speken, 54/595; *p.p.* ispeke, 45/269, 46/319.  
 Spel, *s.* tale, discourse, 14/437, 24/768; spelle, 232/321.  
 Sper, *s.* spear, 51/497; *pl.* speres, 42/179.  
 Speweð, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* spews, 5/139.  
 Spich, *s.* fat, grease; *d. s.* -e, 151/134.  
 Spille, *v. inf.* destroy, 42/160.  
 Spinnere, *s.* spider, 15/462.  
 Spis, *s.* spice, 98/168.  
 Spoken, *s. pl.* spokes, 149/69.  
 Spottes, *s. pl.* 23/736.  
 Spousebrekers, *s. pl.* adulterers, 212/62.



- Spreddē, *v. ind. pret.* 3 *s.* spread, 31.  
 Springeð, 3/62, Springet, 194/26, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* springs.  
 Spusbreche, *s.* adultery, 30.  
 Spuse, *s.* spouse, 23/717.  
 Spusynge, *s.* marriage, 77/159.  
 Srifte, *s.* confession, 32.  
 Ssip, *s.* ship; *d. s.* -e, 32.  
 Stable, *adj.* 137/673.  
 Stafford schire, 146/57.  
 Stal, *s.* place; *d. s.* stalle, 16/489, 21/663.  
 Stale, *s.* theft, 67/249.  
 Standen, *v. inf.* stand, 21/655; *ind. pres. sg.* 3. stant, 1/1.  
 Starep, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* 182/134.  
 Staues, *s. pl.* 42/179.  
 Stede, *s.* steed, horse, 39/67, 91/19.  
 Stede, *s.* place, 13/404.  
 Stedefast, *adj.* stedfast, firm, 12/374, 17/549.  
 Stedefastliche, *adv.* firmly, 28.  
 Stedefastnesse, *s.* stedfastness, 6/182.  
 Stefne, 51/481, 75/89, Stephne, 90/8, 99/203, *s.* voice; *pl.* stefnes, 18/571.  
 Stefninge, *s.* singing, 18/575.  
 Steg, Steyh. *See* Steo.  
 Stel, *s.* steel, 17/535.  
 Stel, *s.* place, 99/200; him stonde muchel stel, stand him in good stead.  
 Stelen, *v.* steal; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* stoleþ, 77/153; *pret. pl.* stelen, 64/165; *subj. pres. sg.* stele, 95/59; *pl.* stele, 52/522.  
 Stench, *s.* 63/141; *d. s.* -e, 174/96.  
 Stene, *s.* earthen pot, 84/15, 85/29.  
 Steo, *v. inf.* ascend, 158/38; *ind. pret. sg.* 3. steyh, 88/26, steg, 24/775.  
 Steore, *v. imp.* 2 *s.* steer, guide, 196/30.  
 Steorne, *adv.* sternly, 120/302.  
 Steorra, 67/273, Sterre, 26, *s.* star; *pl.* storre, 196/29.  
 Steowe, *s.* place, 145/5.  
 Steowi, *v. inf.* restrain, 193/34.  
 Stephne. *See* Stefne.  
 Stephne, Stephen, 89/22.  
 Steppeð, *v.* 3 *s.* steps, 1/10.  
 Sterch, 156/11, Sterk, 157/11, *adj.* stark, strong.  
 Stereð, *v.* 3 *s.* stirs, 13/404.  
 Sterft, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* dies, 31.  
 Steringe, *s.* steering, 18/574.  
 Stert, *s.* tail, 1/9.  
 Steuene, *s.* voice, 22/684.  
 Sti, *s.* path, 7/198.  
 Stille, *adj.* still, quiet, 44/253, 62/112.  
 Stilliche, *adv.* quietly, 156/30.  
 Stynche, *s.* stink, 216/180.  
 Stiren, *v. inf.* stir, 25/783; *ind. pres. sg.* 3. stireð, 1/18, 17/520; *pl.* stiren, 24/759.  
 Stoc, *s.* stock, 10/313; *d. s.* stokke, 85/52.  
 Stod, Stode, Stoden. *See* Stonden.  
 Stol, *s.* stool, see, 145/13.  
 Stolde, *v. ind. pret.* 3 *s.* (of *stel-*len) set, established, 92/60.  
 Ston, *s.* stone, 41/155; *d. s.* -e, 51/511; *d. pl.* -e, 98/169.  
 Stonde, *s.* tub, 174/110.  
 Stonden, *v. inf.* stand, 20/621; stonde, 69/310, 79/210; *ind. pres. sg.* 1. stonde, 54/606; 3. stont, 97/121, stondeþ, 59/21; *pret. sg.* 3. stod, 42/163, 43/224; *pl.* stoden, 55/643, stode, 54/595; *subj. pret. sg.* (P) stode, 91/40.

- Stor, *s.* incense, 26.  
 Store, *adj.* great, 146/28.  
 Storm, *s.* 17/520.  
 Storre. *See* Steorre.  
 Stoute, *adj.* strong, stiff, 227/144.  
 Strauht, *p.p.* stretched, 90/6(2).  
 Strem, *s.* stream, river, 66/244.  
 Stren. *See* Streon.  
 Strenen, *v. inf.* beget, 19/609.  
 Strenghe, 64/170, 69/311,  
     Strenkhe, 51/499, *s.* strength,  
     force, violence.  
 Strengur. *See* Strong.  
 Streon, 153/217, Stren, 113/184,  
     *s.* acquisition, progeny.  
 Stret, *s.* street, road, 70/335; *d.*  
     *s.* -e, 66/227, 76/139; *a. s.* -e, 70/  
     340.  
 Strong, *adj.* 44/236, hard, 69/  
     310; *pl.* -e, 37/9; *comp.* strengur,  
     more severe, 153/212.  
 Strongé, *adv.* severely, 186/24.  
 Stucche, *s.* piece, 64/189.  
 Stude, *s.* place, 39/78, 43/200.  
 Studeuest, *adj.* stedfast, 93/18.  
 Stunch, *s.* stink; *d. s.* -e, 77/155.  
 Stunde, *s.* stound, portion of  
     time, 42/165, 63/153; stund, 13/  
     405.  
 Stupede, *v. ind. pret.* 3 *s.* stooped,  
     53/559.  
 Sture, Stour, 66/244.  
 Sturne, *adj.* stern, 144/106.  
 Sucche, Such. *See* Swilc.  
 Sucuri, *v. inf.* succour, 32; *ind.*  
     *pret.* 3 *s.* sucuredé, 32; *subj. pres.*  
     *sg.* sucuri, 32.  
 Suffri, *v. inf.* suffer, 27.  
 Sug = such, or sup = true, 137/  
     676.  
 Suggen, *v. inf.* sigh, 164/32;  
     *ind. pret. pl.* suggeden, 22/682.  
 Sugh, (?) sucketh, 131/469.  
 Suhse, *s.* sight, 193/18.  
 Suyich. *See* Swuch.  
 Suinch, (?) a toiler, 111/150.  
 Suipe. *See* Swipe.  
 Suk, *s.* ? = swik, craft, treachery,  
     18/578.  
 Suken, *v.* suck; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.*  
     sukeš, 16/514, suket, 131/471; *pl.*  
     sukep, 151/135.  
 Sule, Sulen. *See* Schal.  
 Sulf, *adj.* self, 55/650; *def.* sulue  
     = same, 55/649.  
 Sulin, Sulle. *See* Schal.  
 Sullen, *v. inf.* sell, 40/115; *ind.*  
     *pret. sg.* 3. solde, 92/63; *p.p.* isold,  
     42/175, sold, 198/23.  
 Sullych, *adv.* marvellously, 140/  
     42.  
 Sum, *adj.* some, 59/28; *a. s. f.*  
     sume, 89/17, summe, 63/153; *pl.*  
     summe, 38/43.  
 Sumer, *s.* summer, 8/236, 17/521.  
 Sumerseth schire, Somersetshire,  
     146/43.  
 Sumping, *adv.* somewhat, 84/7.  
 Sund, *adj.* sound, healthy, 3/75,  
     12/366, 16/518.  
 Sundren, *v. ind. pres. pl.* part,  
     separate, 22/703.  
 Sune, *s.* son, 38/24.  
 Sune-day, *s.* Sunday, 39/65.  
 Sunegie, 78/182, Sunehi, 193/30,  
     *v. inf.* to sin; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* sune-  
     gep, 67/254; *pret. pl.* sunegeden,  
     68/280; *subj. pres. pl.* sunegie, 79/  
     234.  
 Suneging, 87/16, Sunegyngé,  
     141/6, *s.* sinning.  
 Sunehi. *See* Sunegie.  
 Sunen, *v. inf.* shun, 10/293, 12/  
     371; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* sunet, 9/264,  
     10/291.  
 Sune-nigte, *s.* Sunday-night, 162/  
     10.

- Sunful, *adj.* sinful; *pl.* sunfulle, 52/544, sunuulle, 42/172; *def.* sunfulle, 91/25.
- Sunge. *See* Singen.
- Sunne, *s.* sun, 51/483, 67/273.
- Sunne, *s.* sin, 37/12; *pl.* sunnen, 65/204, 66/234, sunnes, 41/154, 52/550.
- Sunnyd, *p.p.* sinned, 211/21.
- Sununday, *s.* Sunday, 220/296.
- Sunuulle. *See* Sunful.
- Suo, *adv.* so, 52/543, 105/56.
- Supere, *s.* supper, 40/90.
- Suppen, *s.* Creator, 72/20.
- Sur, *adj.* sour, 77/154.
- Sures, *s. pl.* ? *stures*, *stours*, afflictions, hardships; or *sures* = sours, 9/281.
- Suster, *s.* sister, 63/154, 64/185.
- Suð, *adv.* 4/114.
- Sup, *s.* south, 96/100.
- Superay, Surrey, 146/41.
- Supfolk, Suffolk, 146/47.
- Suphampton schire, Hampshire, 146/42.
- Supsexe, Sussex, 146/41.
- Swal. *See* Swelle.
- Swart, *adj.* black, dark; *def.* -e, 67/276, 149/77.
- Sweleð, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* swallows, 10/315.
- Swelle, *v. inf.* 80/245; *ind. pret.* 1 *s.* swal, 82/297.
- Swenche, *v. inf.* afflict, distress, 66/246.
- Sweord, 43/200, Sward, 43/197, *s.* sword; *pl.* sweordes, 43/205.
- Sweore, 63/150, Swere, 150/104, *s.* neck.
- Swerie, *v. ind. pres. sg.* 1. swear, 72/19; *pl.* sweren, 19/597; *subj. pres. pl.* swerie, 76/141; *p.p.* isworen, 172/60.
- Swet, 10/320, Swete, 39/64, 71/381, *adj.* sweet; *comp.* swetture, 97/151, 98/168; *superl.* swetteste, 16/508.
- Swete, *v. inf.* sweat, 42/161, 48/378.
- Sweteliche, *adv.* sweetly, 164/44.
- Swetnesse, *s.* sweetness, 24/750.
- Swic, *v. imp.* 2 *s.* cease, 7/193.
- Swid, *s.* quick, 15/462.
- Swideð, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* burns, 3/70.
- Swift, *adj.* 94/29, 118/282.
- Swik, *s.* deceit, 14/445; *d. s.* swike, 16/512.
- Swike, *s.* deceiver, 52/519; *pl.* swiken, 61/103.
- Swikel, *adj.* deceitful, treacherous; *a. s. m. -ne*, 124/356; *d. s. n. -e*, 74/76; *pl. -e*, 66/247.
- Swikelnesse, *s.* deceitfulness, deceit, 74/82, 79/222, 143/88.
- Swiken, *v. inf.* deceive, 20/637; *ind. pres. pl.* 19/601.
- Swiking, *s.* deceit, 19/602.
- Swilc, 11/336, Swilk, 14/440, Swich, 39/56, 117/239, Swych, 116/238, Swuch, 106/83, Suyich, 107/83, Such, 71/387, Shuc, *miswritten for such*, 156/27, *adj.* such; *d. s.* sucche, 77/171; *pl.* sucche, 149/73; such = such as, 60/79.
- Swimmeð, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* swims, 11/355.
- Swin, *s.* swine; *g. s.* swynes, 63/149; *pl.* swin, 151/143.
- Swynde, *v. inf.* vanish, 60/58.
- Swynk, *s.* labour, toil, 60/58, 65/194; *g. s. -es*, 60/65; *d. s. -e*, 65/204, swunke, 120/293.
- Swinkin, 111/147, Swynke, 85/26, 110/147, *v. inf.* toil; *ind. pres. sg.* 3. swinkeð, 8/235, swynkeþ, 77/146; *pret. pl.* swunken, 67/250; *subj. pret. pl.* swunken, 69/315.

- Swipe, 39/81, Swybe, 37/14, Suipe, 103/8, *adv.* greatly, much, very; quickly, 40/121.
- Swo, *adv.* so, 121/292; *conj.* as, 146/33.
- Swift, *s.* sweepings, 176/152.
- Swopen, *v. inf.* sweep, 176/151.
- Swot, *s.* sweat; *d. s.* -e, 120/292.
- Swote, *adj.* sweet, 53/561, 89/35.
- Swunka. *See* Swynk.
- Swunken. *See* Swinkin.
- Tachte, Tagte, Tahte, Taite. *See* Techen.
- Take, *v. inf.* 95/64; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* takeš, takes, 3/87, commits, 4/98, takep, goes, 150/106; *pret. sg.* 3. tok, rebuked (P), 31, 32, tok = took, 54/619.
- Tale, *s.* tale, discourse, 37/1.
- Tanne = Šanne, when, 10/306.
- Targi, *v. inf.* delay, 36.
- Tat = Šat (after *s*), 2/27, 4/110.
- Tauhte. *See* Techen.
- Taunede, *v. ind. pret.* 3 *s.* showed, 24/767.
- Taward = toward, 218/238.
- Te = to, *prep.* 155/284, 193/36.
- Te = pe (after *d*), 60/62, 193/26.
- Te = Še (after *s*), thee, 6/181.
- Techen, *v. inf.* teach, 43/208; theche, 142/50; *ind. pres. sg.* 1. teche, 95/88; *pret. sg.* 3. tahte, 67/266, 156/23, tauhte, 38/45, 157/23, tagte, 129/442, tachte, 35, taite, 136/634; *subj. pres. sg.* tech, 99/198.
- Techinge, *s.* teaching, doctrine, 44/255.
- Te-dai, 26, Te-day, 27, *adv.* to-day.
- Te-for, *prep.* before, 84/5.
- Teye, *s.* tie, 190/68.
- Telep, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* blames, 116/237.
- Tellen, 172/57, Telle, 37/1, 46/309, *v. inf.* tell; *ind. pres. sg.* 3. telp, 27, telleš, 9/257; *p.p.* itold, 28, told, 24/758.
- Teme, *v. inf.* cite, summon, 61/108. A.S. *teáman*.
- Tempeste, *s.* 32.
- Temple, *s.* 39/73, 43/207, 44/244.
- Ten, *adj.* 5/127.
- Ten = pin (P), 117/236.
- Ten. *See* Teš.
- Tenderli, *adv.* tenderly, 231/295.
- Teo, *v. inf.* draw, lead, 143/65.
- Teone, 49/439, Tene, 121/300, *s.* injury, mischief.
- Teonedest, *v. ind. pret.* 2 *s.* mortifiedst, 139/22.
- Teoupe, *adj.* tenth, 146/25.
- Ter = Šer, 14/431.
- Tertre, (P) read *tre* = tree, 121/294.
- Teš, *v. ind. pres. sg.* 3. travels, goes, 3/64, 12/361; *subj. pres. pl.* ten, 11/353.
- Tetireš, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* tears to pieces, 13/420.
- Tetoggeš, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* tuga to pieces, 13/420.
- pa, *adv.* when, 168/20.
- pa. *See* pe.
- pad = pat, *rel. pron.* 103/24.
- pah, 182/217, pag, 186/6, paz, 220/317, payh, 92/73, pech, 192/11, peyh, 39/75, pey, 110/121, poch, 111/136, 121/293, pauc, 121/283, pocke, 121/311, Dog, 2/34, 3/79; *conj.* though, nevertheless.
- pan, pane. *See* pe.
- Đan, *adv.* then, 7/204, when, 16/494.
- pan, 58/1, Đanne, 9/267, *conj.* than.
- Đanne, 1/21, panne, 27, *adv.* then; when, 2/24, 11/339.

- Dar**, *par*, *adv.* there, 8/255, where, 1/14, 97/122.
- par**, *bare*. See *pe*.
- parf**, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* need, 59/44, 113/161, *perfp.* 37/17; *pl.* *purue*, 75/104, 143/68; *used impersonally*; *pres. ind.* *parf*, 142/37; *subj. pres. sg.* *purue*, 85/26; *pres. sg.* *purhte*, 96/95.
- Dar-inne**, *adv.* therein, 13/401.
- harm**, *s.* gut, 151/152.
- par-myde**, *adv.* therewith, 126/392.
- Dar-to**, *adv.* thereto, 17/532.
- par-vte**, *adv.* out of doors, 82/297.
- Dar-wið**, *adv.* therewith, 12/383.
- has**. See *pes*.
- has pe** = the (with comparatives), 129/436.
- bat**, 37/1, *bad*, 103/24, *rel. pron.* that.
- bauc**. See *pah*.
- pe**, *I. pron.* he, that; *n. s. m.* *pe*, 65/215; *g. s. n.* *pes*, on that account, 153/208; *abl. s. n.* *pi*, for that, therefore, 74/61, 155/290, *py*, 74/71; *n. pl.* *peo*, 66/247, 67/251, 150/101; *d. pl.* *pon*, 65/216, 80, 93/741. *II. art.* the; *n. s. m.* *pe*, 37/19; *g. s. m.* *pes*, 33, 108/97; *d. s. m.* *pan*, 49/435, *pon*, 56/689, *pen*, 45/272, *pa*, 29; *a. s. m.* *peue*, 97/124, *pane*, 32, 52/549, *pan*, 187/13, *pen*, 56/672, 125/365, 186/13; *n. s. f.* *peo*, 94/41; *d. s. f.* *pare*, 49/424, 51/513, 55/648, *pere*, 37/19, 39/83, 184/14, *par*, 66/228; *n. s. n.* *pat*, 89/12; *g. s. n.* *pes*, 146/30; *d. s. n.* *pan*, 44/238, *pen*, 46/316, 190/74; *a. s. n.* *pat*, 53/551; *n. pl.* *pa*, 145/16; *g. pl.* *pere*, 47/372; *d. pl.* *pan*, 48/384, *pon*, 49/425. *III. rel. pron.* *pe*, which, that, 39/71, 80, 2/30/39, 9/277; *pat*, properly *neut.*, but used for all genders, 85/35, *pet*, 37/4, 57/703.
- pech**, *pey*. See *pah*.
- pef**, *s.* thief, 200/7; *pl.* *peffys*, 221/344.
- pefte**, *s.* theft, 31.
- peyh**. See *pah*.
- pein**, *s.* thain, servant; *pl.* *peines*, 84/10, 93/13, *peynes*, 102/2, 179/177.
- peine**, *v. subj. pres. sg.* *serve*, 132/499.
- penche**, *v. inf.* think, 63/155; *ind. pres. sg.* 3. *penkeð*, 14/449, *penket*, 107/60; *pres.* 3 *s.* *softe*, 15/455; *subj. pres. sg.* 3. *pochte*, 121/292; *imp.* 2 *s.* *peng*, 133/518.
- pene**. See *pe*.
- pene** = than, 150/121.
- peo**. See *pe* and *pu*.
- peode**, *s.* nation, people, 124/369, 184/14.
- peof**, *s.* thief; *n. s.* *peof*, 48/375; *g. pl.* *peouene*, 39/80; *d. pl.* *peoues*, 48/376.
- peosternesne**, 67/275, *pesternesse*, 82/322, *pusternesne*, 50/477, *s.* darkness.
- peostre**. See *puster*.
- Theope**, *v. inf.* tithe, 77/149.
- Theopinge**, *s.* tithing, tithes, 77/153.
- peouene**. See *peof*.
- peowedom**, *s.* servitude, bondage; *dat. -e*, 89/16.
- Der**, *adv.* there, 2/30, 3/75; where, 1/10; *ðere*, there, 15/480.
- Der-bi**, *adv.* thereby, against it, 20/634.
- pere**. See *pe*.
- Der-fore**, *adv.* therefore, for it, 12/377, 16/509.
- perfp.* See *parf*.
- perylke**. See *pilke*.
- Der-imong**, *adv.* there among, 19/601.
- Der-inne**, *adv.* therein, 15/474.
- Der-mide**, *adv.* therewith, 20/615.
- Derof**, *adv.* thereof, 10/316.

**Der-on**, *adv.* thereon, 3/83.

**Der-ouer**, *adv.* over it, 3/64.

**Derunder**, *adv.* thereunder, 10/314.

**Der-ŭrg**, *adv.* therethrough, 11/331.

**Der-to**, *adv.* thereto, 20/643.

**Der-wile**, *conj.* whilst, 25/784.

**pes**. *See* **pe**.

**pes**, *pron.* this; *n. s. m.* **pes**, 34, 44/244; *d. s. m.* **pisse**, 53/570; *a. s. m.* **pesne**, 46/325, **pisne**, 48/390, **pysne**, 49/419; *n. s. f.* **peos**, 72/1; *d. s. f.* **pisse**, 85/42; *a. s. f.* **pas**, 182/223; *n. pl.* **pos**, 33 (line 28), **peos**, 44/252, 75/85, **pes**, 76/115; *a. pl.* **pas**, 112/170, **pos**, 29, **peos**, 46/316, 74/84, **ŕise**, 16/514.

**pet**. *See* **pe**.

**pet**, *conj.* = that, 26.

**Thep**. *See* **Top**.

**Deŕen**, *adv.* thence, 15/470, 23/727.

**Dewes**, *s. pl.* virtues, 6/183.

**pewit**, *v.* 3 *s.* shouts, calls, † read *pewit*. *Cp.* O.E. *peotan*, to yell, howl, 138/699.

**pi**. *See* **pe**, **I**.

**pieme**, 200/3. *Read* **yieme**, keep.

**pierne**, 200/9. *Read* **yierne**, desire, covet.

**pyes**, *s. pl.* thighs, 51/490.

**pilke** = **pe** + **ilke**, the same; *n. s. m.* **pilke**, 40/110; *d. s. f.* **perylke** = **pere** + **ilke**, 40/108.

**pin**, *adj.* thine; *g. s. f.* **pire** (for **pinre**), 88/49; *d. s. f.* **pire**, 116/242.

**pinchest**. *See* **punchen**.

**Þing**, *s.* thing, 10/317; *pl.* **þing**, 57/703; **þinhes**, 105/48, **þinkes**, 28.

**pire**. *See* **pin**.

**Þirl**, *s.* hole, 5/132, 7/200.

**pisne**, **pisse**. *See* **pes**.

**þo**, **Þo**, *adv.* then, 16/497, 40/92; when, 2/40, 14/453.

**þo**, *pron.* those, 213/75.

**þo** = the, 26.

**þoch**, **þocke**, **Þog**. *See* **þah**.

**Þogt**, *s.* thought, 20/625, care, 22/682.

**þoleburne**, for **þoleburnesse**, *s.* patience, 140/51.

**þolemod**, *adj.* patient; *pl.* -e, 91/33.

**þolyen**, 62/120, **þolie**, 148/55, **Þolen**, 24/770, *v. inf.* suffer, endure, permit; *ind. pret. sg.* 3. **þolede**, 37/4.

**Thomas**, 90/1.

**Þon**, *miswritten* for **Don**, 14/430.

**þon**, *adv.* then, 230/255.

**þon**. *See* **pe**.

**þonkie**, *v. inf.* thank, 81/276.

**Þore**, **þore**, *adv.* there, 4/96, 210/2.

**Þornes**, *s. pl.* thorns, 11/326.

**þral**, *s.* thrall, bondman, 184/10; *pl.* **þrelles**, 64/187.

**þreo**, 158/35, **þrie**, 26, **Þre**, 20/616, *adj.* three.

**þreottene**, *adj.* thirteen, 145/7.

**þreotteþe**, *adj.* thirteenth, 146/26.

**þrete**, *s.* threat, 190/84.

**þreteþ**, *v. ind. pres. pl.* threaten, 190/82.

**þreting**, *s.* threatening, 156/17.

**Þridde**, 2/23, **þridde**, 145/10, *adj.* third.

**þrie**. *See* **þreo**.

**Þries**, 1/20, **þryes**, 41/142, *adv.* thrice.

**þryng**, *s.* press; *d. s.* -e, 86/72.

**þrynge**, *v. inf.* press, squeeze, 42/177; *p.p.* **þprunge**, 178/176.

**Þrist**, *s.* thirst, 10/320.

**þriste**, *adj.* bold, 58/20.

**þrytty**, 37/11, **þrytti**, 145/6, *adj.* thirty.

**Drote**, *s.* throat, 16/507.  
**prote-bolle**, *s.* wind-pipe, throat-pipe, 178/173.  
**browe**, *s.* space of time, 79/209, 85/35.  
**broz**, **bruh**. See **Durg**.  
**bruh**, *s.* grave, 51/511.  
**brust**, *s.* thirst, 215/156.  
**bruwinge**, *s.* suffering, passion, 37/4.  
**Du**, 6/168, **pu**, 38/21, *prom.* thou; *dat.* **pe**, 180/186, **peo**, 41/138.  
**bulke** = **pe ilke**, the same, 226/113.  
**punchen**, *v.* seem; *ind. pres.* 2 *s.* **pinchest**, 84/19; 3. **pincheþ**, 191/80, **punchet**, 190/80; *pret.* 3 *s.* **puhte**, 54/612, 181/186, **puzte**, 180/186.  
**Durg**, 1/3, 3/66, **burh**, 65/198, **purch**, 30, **pureh**, 39/60, 44/250, **Purch**, 115/205, **puru**, 137/671, **Pruh**, 195/8, **proz**, 220/292, *prep.* through.  
**burh-syhh**, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* sees through, 61/89.  
**burh-soht**, 170/54, **pureh-souht**, 171/54, *p.p.* sought through, penetrated, pervaded.  
**burhte**, **burue**. See **parf**.  
**bursday**, *s.* 40/89.  
**burst**, *s.* thirst, 37/9.  
**burste**, *v. inf.* thirst, 85/24.  
**Dus**, *adv.* thus, 4/107.  
**busend**, *s.* thousand, 146/58.  
**buster**, *adj.* dark, 40/112, 194/24; *d. s. m.* **peostre**, 180/203; *comp.* **pustore**, 150/121, **pustrur**, 153/225.  
**puzte**. See **punchen**.  
**py** . . . . See **pi** . . . .  
**Ti** = **pi** (after *d* or *t*), 196/32.  
**Tycede**, *v. ind. pret.* 3 *s.* enticed, 67/266.  
**Tyde**, *s.* hour, 42/168, 63/139.

**Tyden**, *v.* happen; *ind. pres. sg.* 3. **tyt**, 93/20, **tyd**, 149/66; *subj. pres. sg.* **tide**, 20/623.  
**Tydinge**, *s.* tidings, 54/590.  
**Til**, 1/19, **Tyl**, 194/21, *conj.* till; **til ðat**, 3/65, 15/473.  
**Til**, *prep.* to, 194/17.  
**Tylehpe**, *s.* tilth, gain, 60/58.  
**Tilen**, *v. inf.* procure, 3/80, 4/118; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* **tileð**, 8/255.  
**Time**, *s.* 8/256.  
**Tin** = **ðin**, *thy*, 7/212.  
**Tine** = **ðine**, *pl. thy*, 7/209.  
**Tireð**, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* tears, 14/438.  
**Tirgen**, *v. inf.* tire, get tired, 12/362.  
**Tis** = **ðis** (after *s*), 4/88, (after *t*) 13/399.  
**Typing**, *s.* ? reward, wages. *Cp.* O.E. *tyð*, a favour, gift, 101/7.  
**To** = two, 50/448.  
**To** = **þo**, the, 28 (line 14).  
**To-beote**, *v. ind. pret. pl.* did beat 48/385.  
**To-breke**, *v. inf.* break in pieces, break, destroy, 44/244, 54/588; *ind. pret. sg.* 3. **to-brek**, 46/315, 52/536, 53/575; *p.p.* **to-broken**, 51/490.  
**To-chon**, *v. ind. pret. sg.* 3. (of **To-chinen**) split, 92/77.  
**To-delen**, *v.* divide, split, separate, 135/583; *ind. pret.* 3 *s.* **to-delde**, 50/480; *p.p. pl.* **to-delede**, 146/38.  
**To-drawen**, 151/147, **To-drawe**, 149/71, 199/58, **To-drehen** (the scribe's substitute for **To-droren**), 172/62, *p.p.* **drawn asunder**, rent.  
**To-dreosen**, *v. inf.* fall away, decay, perish, 94/48; *p.p.* [**to-droren** evidently the true reading at 172/62] **to-drore**, 152/182, 173/62, fallen apart, dissolved.  
**To-dreued**, *p.p.* scattered, dispersed, 37/5, 41/134.

- To-dreued, *p.p.* troubled, tormented, 140/42.
- To-drore. *See* To-dreosen.
- Todus, *s. pl.* toads, 224/60.
- To-foren, 230/266, To-fore, 98/155, To-for, 26, To-vore, 46/330, *prep.* before.
- To-gadere, *adv.* together, 37/8, 40/113; to-giddre, 12/369; to-gaddre, 19/606.
- To-glide, *v. inf.* pass away, 94/43.
- Tohte, *adj.* bright, 193/20. *A.S. torht.*
- To-janes. *See* To-yeynes.
- Tok. *See* Take.
- Tokned, *p.p.* betokened, 24/763.
- Tokneð, *v. ind. pres. 3 s.* is betokened, 19/587.
- Tokning, 19/588, Tokningge, 31, *s.* signification.
- Tolleð, *v. ind. pres. 3 s.* entices, 17/545.
- To-nyht, *adv.* to-night, 40/104.
- To-party, *v. inf.* depart, 57/702.
- To-styngþ, *v. ind. pres. pl.* sting severely, 152/177.
- To-teone, *v. inf.* injure, 120/303.
- To-teren, *v.* tear in pieces; *ind. pres. pl.* to-terþ, 153/223; *p.p.* to-tore, 192/8.
- Top, *s.* tooth; *pl.* teð, 13/421, theþ, 150/99.
- To-trayen, *v. inf.* torment, 120/303.
- To-vore. *See* To-foren.
- Toward, *prep.* 39/65; to—ward, 28.
- To-wene, towardly, mannerly, 192/7.
- To-wrong, *p.p.* twisted, crooked, 3/58.
- To-yeynes, 39/83, 42/181, To-yenes, 34, To-janes, 26, *prep.* against, toward.
- Trace, *s.* 199/55.
- Trayest, *v. ind. pres. 2 s.* betrayest, 42/194.
- Traytur, *s.* traitor, 218/233.
- Trauil, *s.* labour, 33.
- Trendled, *p.p.* rounded, 23/737.
- Treo, *s.* tree, 91/30, wood, 100/2(2); tre, 20/632; *pl.* treon, 148/33.
- Treow, *adj.* true, faithful; *a. s. f. -e*, 38/45, 55/625.
- Tresten, *v. inf.* trust, 132/505; *imp. 2 pl.* trest, 221/347.
- Tresur, *s.* treasure, 97/145.
- Treupen, *v. inf.* trust, 196/24.
- Trewe, *adj.* true, faithful, 7/215, 23/722.
- Trewliche, *adv.* truly, 57/700.
- Trichur, *s.* traitor; *pl. -s*, 153/207.
- Tristen, *v.* trust; *ind. pres. 3 s.* tristþ, 94/56.
- Triþe, *adj.* faithful, tried, 232/324.
- Trone, *s.* throne, 199/72, 219/272.
- Trostlike, *adv.* confidingly, 20/634.
- Trowen, *v. inf.* trust, believe, 113/164.
- Troyþe, *s.* truth, fidelity, 132/506.
- Truke, *v. inf.* fail, give way, 97/122.
- Trume, *s.* troop, 149/83, 153/213.
- Tu = ʒu (after *t*), 6/166, (after *d*) 7/194.
- Tulleþ, *v. ind. pres. pl.* entice, 188/40.
- Tun, *s.* town, 13/391; *d. s. -e*, 39/70, 48/384.
- Tunder, *s.* tinder, 17/535.
- Tunge, 118/282, Tunke, 119/282, *s.* tongue.
- Tunne, *s.* tun, 174/110.
- Tupace, *s.* topaz, 98/172.
- Tur, *s.* tower, 198/49.
- Turmented, *v. pret. pl.* tormented, 227/142.



- Turmentrē, 215/159, Turmentry, 216/177, *s. torment, torture*.  
 Turmentyng, *s. torment*, 219/262.  
 Turnen, *v. turn*; *ind. pret. sg.* 3, turnde, 37/10; *pl.* turnden, 55/653; *p.p.* iturnd, 170/56.  
 Turtre, *s. turtle-dove*; *g. s.* turtres, 22/694.  
 Tus = ȝus, 4/92, 21/672.  
 Twa, 145/16, Two, 145/6, Tweye, 66/225, Twei, 55/645, Twey, 49/438, Tweyne, 44/243, *adj.* two; *dat.* twam, 85/40.  
 Twelf, *adj.* twelve; *with pl. inflection*, twolue, 38/42.  
 Twelfmoneþ, *s. twelvemonth*, 39/86.  
 Tweolfte, *adj.* twelfth, 146/26.  
 Twyelingē, *s. deceit, wiles*, 141/8.  
 Twifold, *adj.* twofold, double, 14/424, 19/596.  
 Ty . . . . See Ti . . . .  
 Vacchen, *v. inf. fetch*, 82/298.  
 Vader. See Fader.  
 Vayn, glad. See Fagen.  
 Vaire. See Feir.  
 Vale, many. See Fele.  
 Uallen, *v. inf. fall*, 198/54. See Fallen.  
 Vare. See Faren.  
 Vaste, *adv.* fast, 43/196, 89/17.  
 Uastingē, *s. fasting*, 28.  
 Vch, *pron.* each one, 59/28.  
 Vcheon, *pron.* each one, 218/247.  
 Vecche. See Fecchen.  
 Vedere. See Fader.  
 Veyr. See Feir.  
 Vel, Vellen, Veollen. See Fallen.  
 Velaghes, *s. pl. fellows, companions*, 34.  
 Vele. See Fele.  
 Vellen, *v. inf. fell*, 89/19.  
 Vend. See Feond.  
 Uenim, *s. venom*, 5/139, 10/323.  
 Venk, *v. ind. pret.* 3 *s.* began, 84/4.  
 Ueo. See Feo.  
 Veond. See Feond.  
 Vere, *s. companion*, 116/222, 147/8.  
 Uerēē. See Fer.  
 Verēfyd, *v. ind. pret. pl. verified*, 217/211.  
 Verray, *adj.* true, 27.  
 Verren, *adj.* far, distant; *pl. -e*, 27.  
 Verreyment, *adv.* truly, 229/235.  
 Uerste, *adj.* first, 34.  
 Vertu, *s. virtue*, 98/170.  
 Vesityng, *s. visitation*, 222/359.  
 Vēt. See Fot.  
 Vette, *v. ind. pret.* 3 *a.* fetched, 88/34.  
 Uexynde. See Waxen.  
 Vich, 97/125, Vych, 62/120, 151/151, *adj.* every, each; *g. s. n.* vyches, 126/384.  
 Vychon, *adj.* every, 94/45.  
 Vyftene, *adj.* fifteen, 145/8.  
 Vihten, 92/61, Vyhte, 43/204, *v. inf. fight*.  
 Vikel, *adj.* false, 93/12.  
 Uilleth. See Wille.  
 Uin. See Win.  
 Vynde, Vinden. See Finden.  
 Virst, *s. period*, 59/38; *don a virst*, procrastinate.  
 Uisiti, *v. inf. visit*, 28.  
 Visse. See Fis.  
 Vvue, *adj.* five, 52/538.  
 Vlche, *adj.* each, 66/227.  
 Vleys, 54/608, Vleyss, 57/693, *s. flesh*.  
 Umble, *adj.* humble, 30.

- Vnbeten, *adj.* unbeaten, 129/448.
- Vnbinden, *v.* unbind; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* vnbynd, 53/552; *pret.* 3 *s.* vnbonde, 64/188; *p.p.* vnbounden, 55/630.
- Vnblype, *adj.* unblithe, sad, 52/519.
- Vnboren, 129/447, Vnbore, 128/449, *adj.* unborn.
- Vnbouht, *adj.* unpunished, 60/60.
- Vnbuhsom, 128/450, 185/10, Vnbuxsom, 184/10, *adj.* disobedient.
- Unc, *pron. ac. dual*, us two, 135/583.
- Vncost, *s.* ill manner, vice, 7/192.
- Vncristynd, *adj.* unchristened, 216/187.
- Uncuſ, *adj.* unacquainted, 16/512, strange, dissimilar, 19/594.
- Vndarn, *s.* the third hour of the day; *d. s. -e*, 56/657.
- Under-fon, 153/236, Vnder-fo, 82/317, 84/20, 156/28, *v. inf.* receive; *ind. pret.* 2 *s.* vnderuenge, 139/13; 3 *s.* vnderueng, 56/688, vnderfong, 154/248; *imp.* 2 *pl.* vnder-uongeh, 55/628.
- Under-gede, *v. ind. pret.* 3 *s.* went under, succoured, 22/691.
- Vndernyme, *v. inf.* take, capture, 39/82.
- Under-puteſ, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* puts under, 21/669.
- Under-set, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* props, 20/640.
- Vnderstonde, *v. inf.* understand, 48/391; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* understant, 192/14; *pret.* 3 *s.* vnderstod, remembered, 45/297; *subj. pres. sg.* understonde, receive, hearken to, 90/8; *pl.* vnderstonde, receive, 90/3; *p.p.* vnderstonde, reminded, 52/518.
- Vnderuenge. *See* Underfon.
- Underwrote, *v. inf.* undermine, 97/123.
- Undon, *p.p.* undone, 101/10.
- Vndrunkin, *adj.* not drunken, 131/459.
- Vndut, *p.p.* unshut, opened, 153/234.
- Vnhelpe, 108/113, Vnhelpe, 58/17, *s.* ill health.
- Vnhol, *adj.* infirm, sick, 62/114; *pl. -e*, 82/308.
- Vnhold, *adj.* unfaithful; *pl. -e*, 59/37.
- Unie-mete, *adj.* immense, monstrous, 19/585.
- Vnyliche, *adj.* unlike, 70/352.
- Vnylimp, *s.* misfortune; *d. s. -e*, 110/148.
- Vnymete, *adj.* enormous, immense, 73/50, (?) extravagant, 76/140.
- Vnyqueme, *adj.* displeasing, 128/444.
- Vnyselyhpe, *s.* misfortune, 65/198.
- Uni-wrenche, *s. pl.* evil tricks, 174/94.
- Unkuſ, *adj.* unknown, strange, unfamiliar, 4/112; unkepe, 133/535.
- Vnledde, 81/287, Vnlede, 74/72, 122/337, *adj.* wicked, miserable, wretched.
- Vnloke, *p.p.* unlocked, opened, 147/9.
- Vnluden, 'mid *vnluden*' = wickedly, 138/689.
- Vnnepe, *adv.* with difficulty, 70/343.
- Vnneſes, *adv.* with difficulty, 5/134.
- Vnnut, 192/3(2), Vnned, 58/5, *adj.* useless.
- Vnredes, *s. pl.* errors, follies, 82/303.
- Vnride, *adj.* immense, 16/505, 20/631, 20/646.
- Vnrytfully, *adv.* unrightfully, 211/39.

- Vnrytwysly, *adv.* unrighteously, 221/333.
- Vn-schut, *p.p.* opened, 228/198.
- Vnseepe, *s.* mishap, sorrow. Cp. O.E. *unsið*, misfortune, 230/247.
- Vn-sel, *s.* unhappiness, 149/90.
- Vnselid, *v. ind. pret.* unsealed, 216/179.
- Vnsely, *adj.* wretched, 147/7.
- Unskil, *s.* wrong, 14/433, 148/58.
- Vnsleye, *adj. pl.* foolish, 82/302.
- Vnsofte, '*vnsofte to beon*' = to be severely dealt with, 91/25.
- Unstrong, *adj.* weak, 3/59.
- Vnþev, *s.* vice, 120/290; *pl.* vnþewes, 124/368.
- Vnþewed, 185/9, Unþeaud, 184/9, *adj.* ill-behaved.
- Vntrende, *v. subj. pres. sg.* unroll, 99/195.
- Untrewe, *adj.* crooked, 3/77, wrong, 4/111.
- Vntrewnesse, *s.* treachery, 67/262.
- Vnvele, *adj.* unholy, wicked, 73/45.
- Vn-vorgulde, *adj.* unrewarded, 60/60.
- Unwelde, *adj.* unwieldy, 3/57.
- Vnwiht, *s.* enemy, devil; *d. s.* -e, 72/4.
- Vnwreo, *v. inf.* uncover, reveal, 91/32; *p.p.* vawrien, 64/166.
- Vnwreste, *adv.* wickedly, 66/242.
- Vnwunne, *s.* misery, 65/208.
- Vnwurp, *adj.* worthless, 108/120, 121/316; *unwrđ*, 109/120.
- Vode, *s.* food, 38/51.
- Voldep, *v. 3 s.* folds, 101/4.
- Uole. See Wille.
- Volewen, *v. inf.* follow, 91/40; *ind. pret. 3 s.* vulede, 38/49.
- Volk, *s.* folk, people, 37/5; *d. pl.* -e, 85/40.
- Vondi, 38/33, Vondy, 38/39, *v. inf.* tempt; *ind. pret. 3 s.* vondede, 38/34; *p.p.* yuonded, 38/28.
- Vondinge, *s.* temptation, 42/170.
- Vor, *conj.* for, 39/61.
- Vorbeoden, *v. inf.* forbid, 46/325; *ind. pres. 3 s.* vorbeod, 46/329.
- Vorbysne, *s.* example, 140/24.
- Vordrye, *v. inf.* further, 122/326.
- Voryef, *v. imp. 2 s.* forgive, 49/442.
- Vorleost, *v. ind. pres. 3 s.* loses, 39/62; *pret. 3 s.* uor-lea, 186/9.
- Vorme, *adj.* first, 52/526, 186/7.
- Vorsake, *v. inf.* forsake, deny, 41/146.
- Vor-wrouhte, *p.p.* condemned, ruined (on account of sin), 141/14.
- Vouh, *s.* property, 114/192.
- Vouh, *s.* coloured, variegated, 94/28, 96/106.
- Voure, *adj.* four, 52/538.
- Vous, *adj.* ready, eager; *pl.* -e, 46/303.
- Up, *adv.* 3/64.
- Vp-breyde, 118/279, Up-breidin, 119/279, *v. inf.* upbraid.
- Uppe, 114/197, Vppon, 97/121, 196/18, *prep.* upon.
- Uprist, *s.* ascension, 199/79.
- Ur, Ure. See We.
- Uretu = *Neure þu* (see Text I, p. 122, l. 318), 123/318.
- Vryday, *s.* Friday, 49/424.
- Urisun, *s.* prayer, 28.
- Vnnen, *v. ind. pret. pl.* ran, 86/72.
- Urouer, *s.* comfort, 106/62.
- Vrre, *s.* wrath, anger, 114/205.
- Vserē, *s.* usury, 214/112.
- Vsuden, *v. pret. pl.* used, 226/126.
- Ut of, *prep.* 3/56.
- Ute, *adv.* out, without, 134/554.

- Vte, *an hortative particle used with the inf.* = let us, 42/173.  
 Ut standen, *v. inf.* rise up, 21/655.  
 Vttir, *adv. comp.* further out, 216/178.  
 Vuel, *adj.* evil; *a. s. m.* -ne, 122/330.  
 Vuel, *s.* evil, 58/20.  
 Uvemest, highest, 24/775.  
 Vuere, *adj.* upper, 150/98.  
 Uul = ful, 51/481.  
 Vulede. *See* Volewen.  
 Ululelden, *v. pret. pl.* filled, 29.  
 Vunde. *See* Finden.  
 Vurpere, *adv.* further, 111/128.  
 Untyede, *v. ind. pret.* 3 *s.* went out, 33.  
 Wacche, *s.* watching, 139/21. •  
 Wad = what, 111/131.  
 Wadekin, Watkin, 188/65.  
 Wade, *v.* 3 *s.* wades, 12/357.  
 Wai, 178/167, Way, 61/105, *int.* alas.  
 Waymentynge, *i. p.* lamenting, 229/228.  
 Waker, *adj.* watchful, vigilant, 97/150; *comp.* wakerur, 192/12.  
 Wakien, 42/168, Wakie, 28,  
 Wake, 95/60, *v. inf.* wake, watch, keep awake; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* wake, 2/47.  
 Wald. *See* Welden.  
 Walke, *s.* walking, 20/635.  
 Walle, *s.* well, 84/12.  
 Wallen, 198/45, Walle, 198/44, *v. inf.* boil; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* walleb, 66/241; *i. p.* wallinde, 149/75, wallynde, 65/218.  
 Wan, *adv.* when, 16/502.  
 Wanen (?), 111/151.  
 Wankel, *adj.* shifty, unstable, 18/566.  
 Wanne, *adv.* when, 1/16, 16/496.  
 Wapmen, *s. pl.* men (in contrast to women), 151/145.  
 War, *adj.* aware, wary, 6/156, 20/642; *pl.* warre, 18/580.  
 War = where, 27.  
 Warantye, *v. inf.* save, 77/174; *subj. pres. sg.* warantye, 89/9.  
 Waraunt, *s.* safeguard, 94/27.  
 Ware, *s.* 60/69.  
 Ware—al swo, wherever, 195/4.  
 Warewik-schire, Warwickshire, 146/54.  
 Waritreo, *s.* gallows, cross, 51/491.  
 Warlawes, *s. pl.* perfidious ones, traitors, 91/37.  
 Warlyche, *adv.* cautiously, 40/123.  
 Warmen, *v. inf.* warm, 17/537.  
 Warny, *v. inf.* warn, 66/224; *ind. pres.* 1 *s.* warny, 65/222.  
 Warsipe, *s.* prudence, 14/426.  
 Wat, *pron.* what, 4/110; *conj.* until, 30.  
 Watekin, Watkin, 189/65.  
 Water, *s.* 10/320.  
 Water-grund, *s.* bottom of a piece of water, 12/365.  
 Waxen, *v. inf.* grow; *ind. pres. sg.* 3. waxe, 5/151; *i. p.* wexynde, 128/433, nexynde, 112/168; *p. p.* waxen, 18/564.  
 We, *pron. n.* we, 2/49; *g.* ure, 2/40, ur, 12/371; *d.* us, 25/788, ous, 194/15; *ac.* vs, 87/23, ous, 195/42.  
 We = ye, 103/14, 105/27.  
 Web, *s.* 15/467.  
 Wed, *s.* weed, 8/245.  
 Weden, *s. pl.* garments, 46/315.  
 Weder, *s.* weather, 8/236, 17/526.  
 Wedlac, *s.* wedlock, 150/105.  
 Wee, *adv.* why, 33.  
 Weyen, *v. inf.* weigh, 60/64.

- Wein, *s.* wain, carriage; *pl.* -es, 178/177.
- Wel, *s.* wheel, 23/737, 212/48.
- Wel, *adv.* very, quite, 4/112.
- Welden, 114/193, Weldin, 105/32, Welde, 101/4, 120/284, *v. inf.* wield, rule, govern, be master of, possess; *ind. pres. sg.* 1. welde, 58/2; 3. wald, 61/83; *subj. pret. sg.* wolde, 126/389.
- Wele. *See* Wille.
- Welepe, *s.* wealth, 117/220.
- Welle, *adv.* very, 2/27.
- Welle, *s.* spring, well, 3/62, 11/341.
- Welle, Wells, 145/22.
- Wellyng, *i. p.* boiling, 227/134.
- Wemmeles, *adj.* spotless, unblemished, 139/10.
- Wen, *adv.* when, 113/172.
- Wenden, *v. inf.* turn, go, 1/6, 113/172; *ger.* to wendende, 192/7; *ind. pres. pl.* wendeþ, 187/26, wendet, 186/26; *pret.* 3 *s.* wende, 30/6; *pl.* wenten, 27; *p.p.* iwent, turned, changed, 29.
- Wene, *s. pl.* expectations, 108/114; wenes, opinions, 115/215.
- Wene. *See* To-WENE, 192/7.
- Wenen, 113/161, Wene, 156/1, Wený, 122/345, Wenin, 123/345, *v. inf.* think, suppose; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* weneþ, 112/160, wenit, 113/160; *pret.* 3 *s.* wehde, 53/556.
- Wenyng; at wenyng = a twenyng, in doubt, 54/595.
- Wenliche, *adv.* pleasant, good, 108/105.
- Weole, *s.* wealth, 108/120.
- Weoles, *s. pl.* ? wiles, 228/193.
- Weore, Weoren. *See* Wes.
- Weorre, *s.* war, 91/37.
- Weorreþ, *v. pres. ind. pl.* war, 89/26.
- Wepen, 118/267, Wepe, 45/299, *v. inf.* weep; *imp.* 2 *pl.* weputh, 231/280.
- Wepmon, *s.* man; *d. s.* -ne, 85/32.
- Wepnen, *s. pl.* weapons, 70/334.
- Wer = where, 29, 133/522.
- Werbi, *adv.* whereby, 28.
- Werc, *s.* work, 66/239; *pl.* werkes, 28.
- Werd, (?) troops, hosts, 138/697.
- Were, *s.* man, husband, 59/32, 85/30.
- Werefore, *adv.* wherefore, 28.
- Wereld, *s.* world; *d. s.* -e, 105/31.
- Weren, 94/30, Werin, 107/89, Werie, 44/266, 106/89, *v. inf.* defend; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* wereð, keeps off, 4/102.
- Werende, ? *wexende*, growing, 128/438.
- Wereþ, ? fadeth, 92/68.
- Werge, ? *read werfe* = steed, mare. K. suggests *merge*, 121/315.
- Weri, *adj.* weary, 20/635.
- Werien, *v. inf.* wear, 172/71; *ind. pres. pl.* weren, 19/590; *subj. pres. sg.* werie, 94/47.
- Werk, *s.* work, 14/442.
- Werkeð, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* works, does, 16/498, 18/569.
- Werkmen, *s. pl.* labourers, 33.
- Werld, *s.* world, 6/178; *d. s.* -e, 5/120.
- Werm, *s.* worm, 28.
- Wermede, 43/230, Wermð, 43/226, *v. ind. pret.* 3 *s.* warmed.
- Werne, *v. inf.* refuse, deny, forbid, 93/7, 144/112, 195/39; *subj. pres. sg.* werne, 72/14.
- Werpen, *v.* cast; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* werpeð, 11/325, 15/467.
- Wes = we is, we them, 25/786.
- Wes, *v. ind. pret.* 1 *s.* was; 2. were, 45/291; 3. wes, 37/5, 54/592, was, 2/40; *pl.* weren, 4/95, weoren, 224/25, weore, 224/37; *subj. pret. sg.* were, 3/77, 9/265, wore, 22/706; *pl.* weren, 11/338.

- Wes, *v. ind. pret.* 3 *s.* washed, 199/63; *pl.* wesse, 29.  
 Westmara-lond, Westmoreland, 146/35.  
 West-sexene, *s. g. pl.* West Saxons', 146/39.  
 Wet = what, 27.  
 Wete, *adj.* wet, 24/752.  
 Wete, *s.* water, 3/73.  
 Wete, *s.* wheat, 9/258, 10/292.  
 Wete, *v. ind. pres.* 1 *s.* wet, 40/103.  
 Weðer, *conj.* whether, 20/645.  
 Weðer so—er, whether—or, 12/357.  
 Wettanly, 214/114, Wetyngly, 221/336, *adv.* knowingly.  
 Weveð, *v.* weaves, spins, 15/462.  
 Where — alswo, wherever, 196/17.  
 Whos = whoso, 232/337.  
 Whu, *adv.* how, 103/15.  
 Wy. *Read* py, 61/89.  
 Wicches, *s. pl.* witches, 17/542.  
 Wiche, 31, Wyche, 30, *pron.* which.  
 Wid, *s.* ? wight, 136/633.  
 Wid-ale, *adv.* withal, 131/462.  
 Wide, *adv.* 16/506.  
 Widue, *s.* widow, 22/706.  
 Wiede, ? would, 192/8(2).  
 Wif, *s.* wife, 116/248; *pl.* wives, 189/49, wives, 188/49.  
 Wigt, *s.* whit, 10/324, 21/657.  
 Wyht, Isle of Wight, 146/37.  
 Wiht, *s.* wight; *d. s.* -e, 86/66.  
 Wyhte, *s.* weight, 65/212.  
 Wike, *s.* war, 121/316.  
 Wikke, *adj.* bad, wicked, 19/593.  
 Wikked-hede, *s.* wickedness, 224/46.  
 Wil, *s.* 17/541.  
 Wilc—so, whichever, 1/5.  
 Wilde, *adj.* 11/327.  
 Wile, *s.* while, 9/276.  
 Wile, *s.* wile; *pl.* wiles, 12/385.  
 Wylem, *adv.* whilom, formerly, 27.  
 Wiles, *adv.* whilst, 4/103, 8/256.  
 Wilful, *adj.* 184/2.  
 Willam, William; *gen.* -es, 145/23.  
 Wille, *v.*; *ind. pres. sg.* 1. wille, 37/1, wile, 168/12, wule, 186/3, wulle, 81/286; 2. wiltu = wilt þu, 147/17; 3. wile, 40/110, wule, 188/34, wele, 111/140, wole, 176/129, nole, 137/667, welle, 136/631, wille, 1/14, wolle, 170/42, wyl, 195/39; *pl.* willeþ, 44/266, uilleth, 33, wolleð, 174/101, wulleþ, 175/101, wilen, 15/476, wolen, 223/2, wol, 223/7; *pret. ind. or subj. sg.* 2. wuldes, 16/501; 3. wulde, 15/454; *pl.* wolde, 104/27, wulde, 4/89.  
 Wille, *adv.* astray, 2/52.  
 Wille, *s.* will, 2/41; *a. s.* wyllen, 126/399; *pl.* willen, 20/639.  
 Wiltone-schire, Wiltshire, 146/41.  
 Wimmon, 184/8, Wimon, 119/281, Wyman, 29, *s.* woman; *pl.* wimmen, 22/699.  
 Win, *s.* war, strife, 8/225, 11/332.  
 Win, 90/6, Wyn, 91/22, Uin, 174/92, *s.* wine.  
 Wyncestre, Winchester, 145/11.  
 Winden, *v.* wind, twist; *ind. pret.* 3 *s.* wond, 44/234, 51/510.  
 Wyn-drunke, *adj.* wine-drunk, 118/270.  
 Wine, *s.* friend, 12/374.  
 Winnen, *v. inf.* win, gain, 13/411; *ind. pret.* 3 *s.* wan, 24/768.  
 Winnen, *v. ind. pres. pl.* strive, war, 17/521.  
 Winter, *s.* 8/250; *pl.* wintre, 41/132.

- Wynterstal, *s.* a hive for bees to winter in, 148/40.
- Wynyarde, 33, Winyyarde, 36, *s.* vineyard.
- Wirecestre, Worcester, 146/25.
- Wyricestre-schire, Worcester-shire, 146/53.
- Wirm, *s.* worm, reptile, 5/120, 6/158.
- Wis, *adj.* aware, 25/799.
- Wis, *adj.* certain, 88/51, 190/97.
- Wise, *s.* manner, 15/468.
- Wisedom, *s.* 14/426.
- Wisliche, *adj. pl.* sure, certain, 104/30.
- Wyssye, 104/29, Wissin, 105/29, *v.* guide, direct, teach; *subj. pres.* *sg.* wisse, 72/3, wisie, 192/2(2).
- Wissing, *s.* wishing, lust, 11/334.
- Wissing, *s.* guidance, teaching, doctrine, 11/343, 15/461; *wys-synge*, 86/70.
- Wyselych, *adv.* certainly, 141/57.
- Wit, *prep.* with, 6/171, 197/20.
- Wit, *adj.* white, 23/737; *pl.* -e, 23/736.
- Witen, *v. inf.* know, 2/33; *ind. pres. sg.* 1. wot, 46/308; 3. wot, 62/112; *pl.* wyten, 44/261; *pref. sg.* 3. wyste, 42/160, wuste, 48/392; *pl.* wiste, 52/532; *imp.* 2 *s.* wite, 47/356.
- Witen, 95/62, Wyten, 72/4, Wyte, 93/6, *v. inf.* guard, keep, preserve; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* wit, 61/83; *imp.* 2 *s.* wite, 140/48.
- Witerliche, *adv.* certainly, surely, 138/701.
- Wið, *prep.* with, 1/9, 3/86, near, 16/517.
- Wiþ, 108/90, Wyþ, 72/4, *prep.* against.
- Wiperblench, *s.* assault, attack, 156/12.
- Wiðeren, *v. ind. pres. pl.* struggle, 15/475.
- Wiðerwine, *s.* adversary, 25/781.
- Wiðinnen, *adv.* within, 10/318, 19/591.
- Wyþ-seyþ, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* denies, speaks against, 49/422.
- Wiþ þat, provided that, 63/158.
- Wiþ-vtan, 146/34, Wiðuten, 19/590, *adv.* without; *prep.* 13/412; *wiþ-vte*, except, 139/14.
- Wit-suneday, *s.* Whitsunday, 56/657.
- Wiz = with, 194/14
- Wlanc, 121/315, Wlonc, 113/183, Wlonk, 91/19, 112/184, 120/315, Wlong, 197/11, *adj.* proud; splendid, fine.
- Wld = wilt, 138/681.
- Wlite, 92/68, 119/249, Wlyte, 118/249, *s.* beauty; countenance, 135/580.
- Wnd . . . . See Wund . . . .
- Wo = who, 107/59.
- Woc, *adj.* weak, 135/581; *def.* woke, 135/595.
- Wod, *adj.* mad, 11/338.
- Wod, 'for wod' = very fiercely, 148/48.
- Woh, 46/332, 184/261, (*mis-spelt*) Woht, 160/16, Wouh, 94/40, Wo, 161/16, *s.* wrong, woe; *d. s.* wowe, 49/412, 110/142, 158/36; *pl.* wowe, 139/13, 149/73, won, 148/38.
- Wok, *adj.* weak, frail, 93/12.
- Wokeþ, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* weakens, 101/2.
- Wol. See Wille.
- Wold, *s.* wood, weald, 24/757; *d. s.* -e, 19/606, 37/5, 38/27.
- Wold, *s.* power, command, 113/181.
- Wolde = would. See Wille.
- Wolde = wielded. See Welden.
- Wolden, *v. inf.* wield, possess, 6/176.

- Wolen. *See* Wille.  
 Wombe, *s.* belly, 63/151.  
 Won = woes. *See* Woh.  
 Won, *adj.* sad, wretched, 196/13.  
 Won, *s.* dwelling, 92/68.  
 Wonde, *s.* the evil one, 174/112.  
 Wondrawen, *s. pl.* miseries, 148/59.  
 Wone, *adj.* wanting, lacking, 104/57.  
 Wone, *s.* want, 70/351, 70/365.  
 Wone, *s.* habit, custom, 227/145.  
 Wone, *s.* ? thought, 229/207.  
 Woneþ, *v. ind. pres. pl.* lament, 152/187.  
 Wonien, 196/28, Wonin, 138/683, Wone, 232/346, *v. inf.* dwell; *ind. pres. sg.* 3. wonit, 127/390.  
 Woning, 25/797, Wonyng, 66/227, Wonynge, 74/55, *s.* lamentation.  
 Wonynges, *s. pl.* dwellings, 70/352.  
 Wop, *s.* weeping, 66/227, 74/55.  
 Wor, *adv.* where, 20/638.  
 Worch, *v.* work, 220/310.  
 Worchip, *v.* honour, 213/94.  
 Word, *s.* 2/51; *pl.* word, 47/363, worde, 128/418, wordes, 54/591; *d. pl.* worde, 42/188.  
 Word, wroth, fiercely, 138/684.  
 Word = world, 214/128.  
 Wordle, *s.* world, 33.  
 Wordlich, *adj.* worldly; *pl. -e*, 71/378.  
 Word-wod, 119/281, Word-wop, 118/281, *adj.* word-mad.  
 Wore = were, 22/706.  
 Wori, *adj.* dirty; *g. s. n. -e*, 63/148.  
 Work, *s.*; *d. s. -e*, 193/21.  
 World-ayhte, *s.* worldly possessions, 124/382.  
 Worold, *s.* world; *d. s. -e*, 107/59.  
 Wor-so, *adv.* whereso, 23/739, 24/754.  
 Worþen, *v. inf.* become, be, 129/436; *ind. fut.* 3 *s.* worþ = shall be, 144/109; *subj. pres. sg.* worþe, 136/633.  
 Wor-þurg, *adv.* wherethrough, 25/779.  
 Wos = whose, 24/764.  
 Wo so, whoso, whoever, 14/437, 18/553.  
 Wot. *See* Witen.  
 Wouh. *See* Woh.  
 Wowares, *s. pl.* woovers, 150/120.  
 Wowe. *See* Woh.  
 Woxen, 113/166, Woxin, 129/433, *p.p.* grown.  
 Wraged, ? = wrathed or wronged, 119/276.  
 Wrake, *s.* vengeance, 136/647.  
 Wrase, *s.* chain, wreath, 48/383.  
 Wrap, *v.* wrath, anger, 221/336.  
 Wraþe, *adv.* sorrowfully, 75/96.  
 Wraucht, Wrcþeþ. *See* Wurchen.  
 Wrecche, *s.* poor man, 75/103.  
 Wrecchedom, *s.* wretchedness, misery, 152/186; *d. s.* wrechedome, 138/705.  
 Wreche, *s.* vengeance, 65/205, 143/56, 162/45.  
 Wreye, *v. inf.* accuse, 39/84; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* wreyeþ, 150/111.  
 Wrench, *s.* turn, twist, trick, 156/2; *d. pl. -e*, 66/247.  
 Wrengþe, *s.* crookedness, 3/85.  
 Wreþe, *s.* wrath, 33.  
 Wriched, *adj.* wretched; *def. -e*, 28.  
 Wrien, *v. ind. pret. pl.* covered, 64/166.  
 Wrieþ, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* goes, behaves, 192/7.



- Wryt, *s.* writing, 99/210.
- Writen, *v.* write; *ind. pret. sg.* 3. wrot, 50/467; *p.p.* iwryten, 99/210, iwrite, 37/2, iwrithē, 39/79, writen, 22/695, write, 41/131.
- Wrypen, *v. ind. pret. pl.* twisted, plaited, 48/383.
- Wrm. *See* Wurm.
- Wrohte. *See* Wurchen.
- Wrong, *p.p.* wrung, twisted, crooked, 3/78; *def.* wronke, wrong, 135/596; wrong, *s.* 25/798.
- Wrongwis, *adj.* unjust; *d. s. m.* -e, 59/49; *pl. -e*, 67/252.
- Wroþ, *adj.* wroth, 39/76, vexed, 94/52.
- Wrouhta. *See* Wurchen.
- Wrp = wurp, *s.* cast, 41/155.
- Wrsipe. *See* Wurpsype.
- Wrst = wurst, 65/217.
- Wrt. *See* Wurt.
- Wrþ. *See* Wurpien.
- Wu, *adv.* how, 2/31, 3/55.
- Wude, *s.* wood, 8/245, 11/326.
- Wuere = were, 121/292.
- Wulde, Wuldes, Wule. *See* Wille.
- Wulf, *s.* wolf; *g. s.* wulues, 19/590; *pl.* wulues, 19/591.
- Wullen, *miswritten for* billen, 13/414.
- Wunde, 17/540, Wnde, 42/187, *s.* wound; *pl.* wndes, 55/622.
- Wunder, *s.* wonder, 9/266, 13/398, miracle; *pl.* wndres, 39/60.
- Wunderliche, *adv.* wondrously, strangely, 139/21, 156/4.
- Wunderlicheste, *adj.* most wonderful, strangest, 60/69.
- Wundernesse, *s.* marvel, 85/40.
- Wune, *s.* custom, 12/368, 20/638, 87/6.
- Wune, *v. imp.* 2 *s.* accustom, 124/367.
- Wunyen, 83/354, Wunye, 97/144, Wunen, 17/522, *v. inf.* dwell; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* wunyeþ, 126/391; *pl.* wunen, 9/277; *subj. pret. pl.* wuneden, 20/617; *i. p.* wunyinde, 56/666, remaining, 100/5.
- Wunyngē, *s.* abode, 144/90.
- Wunne, *s.* joy, 126/390.
- Wurchen, *v.* work, do, make; *ind. pres. sg.* 3. wrcheþ, 148/29; *pret.* 3 *s.* wrohte, 164/50, wrouhte, 42/189; *subj. pres. sg.* wurche, 93/2; *p.p.* iwrouht, 92/51, wrauh, 90/7(2).
- Wurdeð. *See* Wurpien.
- Wurdi, *miswritten for* Wurði, *adj.* worthy, 6/186.
- Wurken, *s. d. pl.* works, 193/29.
- Wurm, *s.* worm, reptile; wrm, 149/79; *n. pl.* wurmes, 73/53, wrmes, 147/19; *g. pl.* wurmene, 92/68.
- Wurpen, *v. ind. pret. pl.* cast, threw, 151/143.
- Wurse, *adj. comp.* worse, 52/525; *superl.* wrst, 65/217.
- Wurt, 113/166, Wrt, 112/168, *s.* wort, herb.
- Wurð, 160/28, Wrþ, 95/86, Wrþe, 46/320, *adj.* worth, worthy.
- Wurpi, 141/9, Wrpīe, 106/60, Wrpin, 107/60, *v. inf.* honour, worship.
- Wurði, *adj.* worthy, 14/447.
- Wurpien, 127/383, Wurpen, 115/200, *v. inf.* become, turn (to), be; *ind. pres. or fut. sg.* 3. wurp, 120/304, wrþ, 52/525, 70/355, wurdeð, 3/75, wurðeð, 15/482; *pl.* wurðen, 11/338; *pret.* 3 *s.* wurð, 22/689; *subj. pres. sg.* wurðe, 6/156, wrþe, 42/175, 134/571; *imp.* 2 *s.* wurp, 118/269, wurpu = wurp þu, 119/269.
- Wurðlic, *adv.* worthily, 8/233.
- Wurpsype, 89/6, Wurschipe, 89/24, Wrsipe, 105/32, *s.* honour; *pl.* wrpsipes, 104/32.
- Wuste. *See* Witen.

- W<sub>3</sub>on, *adv.* when, 228/198.  
 W<sub>3</sub>uche, *pron.* which, 224/35, 224/47.  
 Yaf. *See* Yeuen.  
 Yare, *s.* ear, 36.  
 Yare, *adv.* yore, long ago, 147/23.  
 Ye, 82/320, Hye, 28, *pron.* ye.  
 Yede, *v. pret.* 3 *s.* went, 26.  
 Yef, *conj.* if, 27.  
 Yef, Yeft. *See* Yeuen.  
 Yefte, *s.* gift, 59/46.  
 Yefp. *See* Yeuen.  
 Yeyn-cherryng, *s.* return, 74/58.  
 Yeynes, *prep.* against, 90/7(2).  
 Yelde (?), *adv.* seldom, 176/129.  
 Yelde, *s.* repayment, 59/46.  
 Yelden, *v.* yield, render, pay; *ind. pret. pl.* yolde, 39/61; *imp.* 2 *s.* yeld, 33.  
 Yelp, *v. ind. pret.* 3 *s.* boasted, 46/330.  
 Yeme, *s.* heed, 40/102.  
 Yemer, *adj.* wretched, 30.  
 Yemernes, *s.* misery, 28.  
 Yeorde, *s.* rod, 130/451.  
 Yeorne, 108/101, Yorne, 72/13, 93/1, *adv.* earnestly, diligently.  
 Yeornful, *adj.* earnest; *pl.* -le, 144/100.  
 Yeorrep, *v. ind. pres. pl.* yell, 83/325.  
 Yeote, *v. inf.* pour, gush, 48/386.  
 Yerd, *s.* rod, 48/382.  
 Yere, *s.* year, 28.  
 Yere, *adv.* yore, 44/245.  
 Yete, *adv.* yet, 53/583.  
 Yeuen, *v. inf.* give, 82/314; yeue, 33; *ind. pres.* 3 *s.* yefp, 36, yuep, 60/70; *pl.* (P) yeft, 27; *pret.* 3 *s.* yef, 45/267, yaf, 33; *pl.* yeuen, 52/533, yeue, 81/292; *subj. pres. sg.* yue = yeue, 141/4; *imp.* 2 *s.* yef, 47/374; *p. p.* yeuen, 70/334, iyue, 49/413, y-yeue, 43/202, i-yue, 31.  
 Yolde. *See* Yelden.  
 Yong, *adj.* young; *comp.* yonger, 145/23.  
 Yonghede, *s.* youth, 71/369.  
 Yongmon, *s.* young man, 110/134.  
 Yorne. *See* Yeorne.  
 Youhpe, *s.* youth, 108/100.  
 Yu = you, 29.  
 Yure, *adj.* your, 28.  
 Yw = You, 32.  
 3af. *See* 3euen.  
 3at, *s.* gate, 213/93; *pl.* 3ates, 199/66, 3atis, 211/14.  
 3e, *pron.* ye, 213/96.  
 3ef. *See* 3euen.  
 3elleden, 230/275, 3elled, 224/39, *v. pret. pl.* yelled; *i. p.* 3ellynge, 228/176.  
 3eonep, *v. ind. pres.* 3 *s.* yawns, gapes, 182/233.  
 3euen, *v. inf.* give, 170/27, 3ieue, 193/26; *ind. pret. sg.* 2. 3eue, 160/14; 3. 3ef, 186/23; *pl.* 3euen, 198/36, 219/280, 3af, 227/157.  
 3if, *conj.* if, 213/90.  
 3iuernes, *s.* gluttony, 186/11.  
 3od, *v. pret.* went, 212/55.  
 3ou, 213/104, 3oue, 213/103, *pron.* you.  
 3our, 213/97, 3or, 231/313, *pron.* your.  
 3unch, *adj.* young, 184/7.



